

# 1501 Let the Glacier Plain Court Vanish Hereafter!

Hearing the words from the middle-aged man before her, the Second Elder was astounded.

“You said that you brought her away? That’s impossible! The Chanting Serenity Hall is shrouded by a 9-star pinnacle formation set up painstakingly by the ancestors of the Glacier Plain Court. Without the token, it’s impossible to enter its premises. Not even the guild leader of the Formation Master Guild headquarters would be able to take her away discreetly!”

She did not believe something like this could be true nor even possible.

The Chanting Serenity Hall was the place where criminals were housed, and its security was so tight that it was impossible for anyone to sneak in discreetly without alarming them!

Putting aside the head of the Formation Master Guild headquarters, even the head of the Luo Clan, who could be considered the leading expert in the field of spatial manipulation, was not capable of achieving this feat.

But... the impossible had indeed happened. Zhao Ya had disappeared, and the middle-aged man before her claimed that he had taken her away. If so, just who could this middle-aged man be?

And how powerful could he be?

“This...”

While You Ruoxin could not help but hold some skepticism toward this matter, she still swiftly composed herself and clasped her fist. “Yang shi, I was unaware that Zhao Ya is your grandstudent, so I ask of you to forgive me if I have offended you in any way. However, I would like to clarify that it wasn’t

my intention to make things hard for her by placing the Heaven Sealing Lock on her!”

While Zhao Ya was a member of their Glacier Plain Court, now that Yang shi was involved, the entire nature of the matter had changed.

Lineage was of the utmost importance on the Master Teacher Continent. If a student was humiliated, it was normal for the teacher to step forward and stand up on their behalf. In fact, as long as the teacher did not go too overboard, the Master Teacher Pavilion would not restrict such behavior.

“Humph! You used the Heaven Sealing Lock to seal her meridians, placing her through great suffering... Do you honestly believe that I’ll let this matter go just because it wasn’t your intention to do so?” Zhang Xuan spat as his voice gradually turned wintry.

“This...” You Ruoxin bit her lips nervously. “To tell you the truth, Yang shi, Zhao Ya’s Pure Yin Body must be awakened as soon as possible because it involves the major affair of the Master Teacher Pavilion, so I had no other choice!”

“The major affair of the Master Teacher Pavilion?” Zhang Xuan repeated questioningly.

“Indeed.” Hearing Zhang Xuan’s doubtful voice, Elder Qu asked with a hint of wariness in his voice, “Yang shi, are you not aware of the matter? Aren’t you from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters?”

While he still did not think that the other party was Grand Elder Yang Xuan, considering that the other party had been able to point out the root of his ailment and treat it swiftly, he felt that it was still very likely that the other party was someone from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. Perhaps, he might be one of the more senior elders who had long gone into seclusion.

Harboring such doubts in his mind, he had decided to take a step back and simply watch things progress by the side so as to figure out the intentions of the middle-aged man before him,

especially since the other party had not really shown any breach of respect or caused any trouble so far.

Furthermore, he had come in order to save his grandstudent, which was a perfectly valid reason.

Just that... that matter was something that had resulted in the mobilization of the entire Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, yet the person before him actually knew nothing about it at all. Could he be not from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters after all?

If he was not a master teacher and yet possessed the ability to cure his affliction and save his grandstudent from the Glacier Plain Court silently... this matter might not be as simple as it seemed!

“Of course I am. I am just not too sure about some matters!” Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted in alarm, but he did not allow it to surface on his face. Maintaining his ever-nonchalant face, he waved his hands casually.

What did Zhao Ya’s unique constitution being awakened have to do with the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters? What was going on?

Serving as the role model for the whole of mankind, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had its reputation to uphold and would not do or allow anything that was too immoral. It was hard to believe that they would condone the First Elder’s act of forcing Zhao Ya to use the art of harvesting to awaken her unique constitution.

“You aren’t too sure? That’s impossible. That matter was decided by Yang shi himself, and he entrusted it to the deputy pavilion master to carry out. There’s no 9-star master teacher in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters who doesn’t know of this matter, so how could you be unsure of it? You... who in the world are you?” Elder Qu said as he took a step toward Zhang Xuan.

Even if the other party had treated his injuries and was his benefactor, as long as the other party was not from the Master Teacher Pavilion, he would have to take the other party down.

That matter was simply too important to allow anything to go wrong. He could not afford to compromise on it, and he could not take responsibility for the consequences if anything went wrong.

“You aren’t Yang shi? Then who are you? What do you mean by coming over to the Glacier Plain Court and kidnapping our young court chief?” Seeing that Elder Qu had turned on the middle-aged man, You Ruoxin’s heart jolted in astonishment as she began assessing the middle-aged man before her with narrowed eyes.

The auras of the two experts pressed down on Zhang Xuan heavily, leaving him short on breath.

“Elder Qu, I’ll explain this matter to you when we return. I need you to remain silent for the time being.”

Not expecting to give himself away in such a manner, Zhang Xuan snapped his fingers.

Padah!

Elder Qu suddenly felt the zhenqi that he had just assimilated coming to life. It dived into the most remote corners of his body and began tearing apart everything.

“Ahhh!”

The sudden assault of pain nearly left his knees crumbling to the floor. Cold sweat rained down his cheeks. He tried to open his mouth, but he found himself unable to say a word at all. Even his zhenqi telepathy was being interrupted.

In an instant, he understood that he had fallen for the other party’s scheme.

Could he be... the newly-appointed hall master of the Poison Hall? Elder Qu thought in alarm.

He tried to move, but as if he was trapped within quicksand, his stiffened body simply would not budge.

Not too long ago, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had received news that the Poison Hall headquarters hidden in the deep mountains had ushered in a new hall master. It was said that she was the reincarnation of their founder, and

despite her young age, she possessed unparalleled affinity with poison, making her a force to behold.

The Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had sent a 9-star master teacher skilled in the art of concealment to sneak into the heart of their base and scout the matter. But before he could even reach the hall master's residence, he had already been afflicted with lethal poison and nearly lost his life.

Unexpectedly, not only did the hall master cure the 9-star master teacher of his poison, she even told him that her teacher was a master teacher, and she had no intention of going against the Master Teacher Pavilion, so there was no need for them to be so tense.

Further investigations on the matter had shown that the Poison Hall had truly toned down significantly after the inauguration of the new hall master, and only then did the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters' heart finally rest easy.

Could all of that actually have been a facade? They had toned down on the surface, but in truth, they were moving in the shadows, preparing to launch a devastating blow on the Master Teacher Pavilion, starting with the Glacier Plain Court—was that it?

Otherwise, who else in the world could be capable of planting poison into a 9-star master teacher like him without incurring his notice?

Possessing such formidable means, if that fellow truly intended the Glacier Plain Court harm, he could easily start a massacre!

Alarmed, Elder Qu drove his zhenqi anxiously in hopes of gathering the strength required to move his body. However, the more he tried to drive his zhenqi, the stiffer his body became. The pain engulfing his body intensified, and he felt as if he would be torn to pieces.

How can this be? How did he manage to get the poison into me?

The poison had originated from the surges of zhenqi that the middle-aged man had given him previously. However, he had

checked on the surges of zhenqi beforehand and ensured that there was nothing wrong with them. Had the Poison Hall really grown so powerful?

Damn it!

Knowing that it was futile to get anxious, Elder Qu took a deep breath and forcefully calmed himself. He began driving his zhenqi with greater intensity, hoping to suppress those surges of zhenqi that he had just taken in.

While that would not resolve the poison, with his strength, it should not be too much of a problem for him to suppress it temporarily.

“Elder Qu!”

On the other hand, seeing that her pillar of support had fallen silent, You Ruoxin’s heart leaped in trepidation.

She knew just how powerful Elder Qu was, and yet, by some kind of sorcery, he had really fallen silent with just a few words from the middle-aged man before her.

Was the middle-aged man before her really that powerful?

“There’s no need to turn to him for support. Qu Buping has been suppressed by my will, and he can’t even fend for himself anymore. Since it has already come to the point, I don’t think there’s any need for me to maintain my act. Indeed, I’m not Yang shi. However, not even the Yang shi whom all of you look up to so much will be able to hold a candle to me!”

Raising his eyelids to look at You Ruoxin directly, Zhang Xuan took a step forward, and an indomitable aura flowed forth from his body. It was almost as if he was a deity from the heavens. Every single move that he made represented the will of the heavens, and at that very moment, the will of the heavens bore malevolent intent, seeking to bring divine retribution to the world.

“Just because I haven’t made a move yet doesn’t mean that I won’t. Tell me how the Heaven Sealing Lock can be resolved, and I’ll spare you and your Glacier Plain Court. Otherwise, I don’t mind...”

“... letting the Glacier Plain Court vanish hereafter!”

# 1502 Severely Wounded

“Vanish?”

The First Elder’s face paled as she staggered backward fearfully.

Given how the other party was able to render Elder Qu completely silent and immobile with a word, as well as enter the depths of the Glacier Plain Court without drawing anyone’s attention and take Zhao Ya away... In terms of strength, there was indeed no one in the world whom she could think of that would stand a chance against the middle-aged man before her. If a fight broke out, would the Glacier Plain Court stand a chance against him?

As this notion came into the First Elder’s mind, she felt as if her heart had been plunged into icy water.

This was meaningless postulation. There was no way that they stood a chance.

In terms of strength, she was beneath that of Elder Qu. Given how the other party was able to subdue Elder Qu with ease, killing her would pose even less of a problem!

“Indeed.” Placing his hands behind his back, Zhang Xuan took another step forward. “Doubt my strength if you want to, but just be prepared to face the consequences if so. The only reason I haven’t made a move yet is to avoid meaningless bloodshed. My motive here is to save, not to kill.”

Even though it was impossible to see the depths of his cultivation, the pressure he exerted was more than enough to sink anyone into the abyss of despair.

He flicked his wrist, and Zhao Ya appeared beside him.

Gazing intently at You Ruoxin, Zhang Xuan said, “All you have to do is free her from the Heaven Sealing Lock. As for the final awakening of her unique constitution, I’ll handle it myself. You don’t need to interfere in this matter anymore!”



Zhao Ya's unique constitution would definitely have to be awakened, but there was plenty of time in the future to figure out a solution. The important matter at hand was to remove the Heaven Sealing Lock and free her from pain.

"You are able to help her accomplish a full awakening?" You Ruoxin was stunned.

"Indeed!" Zhang Xuan tilted his head upward confidently. "If there's something in this world I can't accomplish, no one else will be able to!"

It was a bold claim, but Zhang Xuan meant every last word he said.

With the Library of Heaven's Path in his possession, his existence embodied the possibilities of the world.

If there was something in this world that he was incapable of, no one else would be able to accomplish it, and this was including the legendary Yang shi!

"But..." You Ruoxin's face paled further upon hearing those words, and her body began trembling slightly. "The Heaven Sealing Lock of the Glacier Plain Court is created by the Icy Silkworm. Once it enters a host's body, it will swiftly freeze all of its host's meridians. There's only one known way to resolve the issue... and that is to absorb the pure yang energy. Other than that, there's no other solution."

"What did you say?" A furious bellow escaped from Zhang Xuan's lips.

At the same time, cracks swiftly crawled through the surrounding ground, covering the entire conference room in an instant.

Zhao Ya's body also stiffened upon hearing those words.

She had thought that with her grandteacher making a move on her behalf, the problem that she was facing would be resolved easily. Yet, after all was said and done, they were still back to square one.

"After what happened with her mother, I had no other choice but to make this move. I thought that after undergoing a few

days of suffering, she would give in and cultivate in accordance to our cultivation technique. The past generations of court chiefs have all undergone this process, so I didn't think much about it," You Ruoxin explained fearfully.

"In fact, the very reason our Glacier Plain Court bred the Icy Silkworm as the Heaven Sealing Lock is to force the court chiefs to cultivate the final level of the cultivation technique and fully awaken their Pure Yin Body. It's not meant to be curable..."

"You..." Zhang Xuan clenched his fists tightly as he glared at You Ruoxin with an inferno burning in his eyes.

As someone who possessed the Eye of Insight, he could tell that You Ruoxin was not lying to him.

In other words, other than harvesting the pure yang energy of young men, there was no other way to resolve the Heaven Sealing Lock!

This was really the worst-case scenario!

Pu!

All of a sudden, Elder Qu's face reddened, and he spurted a mouthful of blood.

Due to the massive fluctuations in Zhang Xuan's emotions, he was unable to control his zhenqi as finely as he usually could. Making use of this opening, Elder Qu used a secret art to fuse the other party's zhenqi into his blood and forced it out of his body!

"How dare you try to poison me! Even if I'm not a match for you, I'm going to drag you down to hell with me!" With a furious bellow, Elder Qu flicked his palm up and thrust it toward the middle-aged man before him.

A furious tempest whipped up in the area, and in that moment, it felt as if the world was spinning around them.

The full might of a 9-star master teacher was more than enough to rip apart the spatial fabric of the Master Teacher Continent. Under Elder Qu's raging might, the formations in

the conference hall groaned in protest before being torn apart, raising up a massive dust storm.

“Elder Qu, don’t...” Not expecting Elder Qu to suddenly go on a rampage when she had barely placated the supreme expert before her, You Ruoxin cried in horror.

If they provoked the other party and the other party decided to start a massacre, would the Glacier Plain Court not vanish from the face of the world?

Hong long!

However, there was already no stopping Elder Qu. His poisoning and the other party’s impersonation of Yang Xuan had already gone beyond what he could tolerate.

“Who do you think you are making a move on...”

Despite the bravado that he was putting on, Zhang Xuan really had not expected Elder Qu to be so hot-tempered as to make a move all of a sudden. Knowing that he would not stand a chance in a direct encounter, he hurriedly flicked his wrist and placed the Sanctum Head Token before him as a shield.

Peng!

The might of Elder Qu’s palm strike rippled through the Sanctum Head Token and gushed right toward Zhang Xuan like an unstoppable storm.

Pu!

Blood spewed frenziedly from Zhang Xuan’s mouth as he felt the bones throughout his body shattering. The sheer might of the force nearly struck the final breath out of his body.

Elder Qu had thought that Zhang Xuan was an unparalleled expert, so when he made his move, he had been prepared to meet his end. As such, he drew all the strength that he could muster in his attack, and the might behind his offense far surpassed what Zhang Xuan could withstand in his current state.

If not for the Sanctum Head Token cushioning most of the blow, he would have turned into meat paste.

Nevertheless, just the shockwave from the palm strike was enough to incapacitate him.

Following which, Elder Qu's shocked exclamation sounded in the air. "How could he be so weak?"

He had already resolved himself for death when he made the move. He had thought that even if he lost his life, the least he could do was inflict an irrecoverable wound on the other party. But never in his wildest dreams had he expected the middle-aged man before him to be so weak!

"Preposterous... Preposterous! How dare a weakling like you threaten me! Disciples of the Glacier Plain Court, take him down!"

You Ruoxin clearly had not expected the middle-aged man before her to be so weak. He had appeared before her as a formidable expert wielding peerless strength, but his true strength turned out to be so meager that it was not even worth her batting an eyelid over. Her face flushed crimson as she bellowed furiously for the disciples of the Glacier Plain Court to apprehend him.

As the First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court, she could also be considered a distinguished figure of the Master Teacher Continent. Yet, a Phantasmal Space realm cultivator actually managed to scare her into submission. If others learnt of this matter, how was she to uphold the Glacier Plain Court's dignity before the world?

While the First Elder was barking out orders, Zhao Ya was staring in horror at the helpless young man twirling in the air from the shockwave of Elder Qu's attack. Her body trembled in shock as tears trickled down her pale cheeks.

He... isn't grandteacher but... teacher!

Elder Qu's attack had only been directed toward Zhang Xuan, so despite Zhao Ya being so close to Zhang Xuan, she was not affected by the shockwave at all. Otherwise, given the frail state that she was in, she would have lost her life in a breath. However, watching as the retreating middle-aged man's

disguise faded due to his severe injuries, she swiftly understood what was going on.

The abrupt appearance of her grandteacher and the striking similarity between their zhenqi... All of a sudden, the miniscule doubts that had surfaced at the back of her mind were answered.

So, it had really been her teacher all along.

Of course, it could not have been anyone else. Only her teacher would rush over regardless of the cost after receiving her message. Only her teacher would risk his life regardless of how hopeless the situation seemed just to clutch onto the faint ray of hope for her.

Only her teacher would dote her so much as to put his life on the line just so that she would not have to do something against her will!

Teacher, you have done far too much for me.

How can I let anything happen to you?

Feeling an irrepressible pain tearing her heart apart, Zhao Ya clenched her teeth tightly together and drove her zhenqi furiously.

You Ruoxin narrowed her eyes at the sight and bellowed anxiously, "Don't move your zhenqi, you'll really die!"

# 1503 A Master Teacher I Shan't Be Anymore!

The Heaven Sealing Lock formed out of the Icy Silkworm had already frozen her meridians into ice. Just the very attempt to move her zhenqi would cause unbearable pain to engulf her body, causing strength to swiftly recede from her body. If she forcefully continued after that, her meridians would swiftly collapse, and the damage that she sustained would really be irrecoverable. In the worst-case scenario, she might even lose her life.

The reason You Ruoxin had planted something so vile in Zhao Ya in the first place was to strip her of her choices. As long as she refused to succumb and awaken her unique constitution, she would be constantly placed in a state of suffering. On the other hand, as long as she chose to submit, she would be able to become a top expert in an instant!

Which the better option was, surely any rational person would be able to tell.

But... this lass would rather take the suffering than choose what would have been better for her and the entire Glacier Plain Court! This had left her feeling extremely enraged. She had intended to lock her up for just a few days to make her change her mind, but she never would have thought that someone would actually break her out.

Who in the world is that person?

Is he so important to you that you would even give up even your life for him?

At this point, You Ruoxin did not pay any attention to the person impersonating Yang shi. She quickly rushed forward to strike down on Zhao Ya with her palm.

“Stop it!”

A powerful surge of energy swiftly covered Zhao Ya's body, suppressing her flow of zhenqi entirely.

Hong long!

However, Zhao Ya had already resolved herself for death, such that even You Ruoxin found herself unable to suppress her zhenqi. The latter swiftly suffered a rebound, causing blood to trickle down the corner of her lips.

“Are you insane!” You Ruoxin's head nearly exploded.

She had known this young lady for half a year now, and the latter had always treated her earnestly and respectfully. No matter what she demanded of the young lady, the young lady would always follow her instructions without any hesitation. Just what in the world happened for the young lady to defy her even at the expense of her life?

She raised her head to the sky, and when she saw Zhang Xuan's true face, she could not help but jolt in astonishment.

“He's actually this young! Could he be...” You Ruoxin narrowed her eyes as something clutched her heart tightly.

“Could he be... Zhang Xuan?”

Over the past half a year, she had managed to understand Zhao Ya's character, and she knew that the young lady's teacher was her breaking point. She would allow no harm to come to her teacher, and she would make anyone who dared touch him pay dearly!

Considering the current situation, there was no doubt that the young man was indeed her teacher!

“Scram!”

While You Ruoxin's mind was wandering, she heard the young lady's furious shriek exploding in her ears. The next moment, her chest caved in, and a powerful might sent her flying.

She tumbled in the air as fresh blood spurted forth from her lips.

Suppressing the jolted zhenqi, You Ruoxin forcefully stabilized her body as she howled at the young lady from a

distance away. “Your meridians will shatter, don’t!”

To use her strength in her current state was no different from suicide!

Pu!

As expected, as soon as the First Elder was sent flying, Zhao Ya seemed to have reached the limits of her body as well. Her face reddened, and blood spewed out from her mouth. Her body trembled weakly, and it seemed as if she would collapse to the ground at any moment.

Yet, she remained firmly standing. She walked over toward Zhang Xuan’s body, placed her palm on his body, and sent her zhenqi into his body to help him recover. Gazing at the young man lying in front of her with gentle eyes, she muttered with a voice filled with worry, “Teacher, nothing can happen to you. I’ll protect you, so you have to be fine...”

“Y-y-you... Do you want to die!” You Ruoxin roared as she rushed forward to stop her, only to be impeded by the powerful bursts of energy that the young lady was emanating.

Finding that she was unable to get close, she could not help but feel even more anxious.

In the first place, the young lady’s act of forcefully using her zhenqi had already caused her meridians to collapse, but despite that, she was still expending her zhenqi to help another. This was tantamount to suicide!

“She’s planning on burning herself dry to save her teacher...” Elder Qu walked to You Ruoxin’s side as he looked at the sight with clenched fists.

He had thought that the other party was the head of the Poison Hall or perhaps even an Otherworldly Demon pretending to be a human. However, contrary to his expectations, the other party was only a weak cultivator putting on a disguise!

If he had known that the other party was that weak, he never would have launched such a powerful attack.

...



In his semi-conscious state, Zhang Xuan could vaguely feel Zhao Ya pumping her strength into his body. Shocked, he was jolted awake. He opened his eyes and saw the pale-faced Zhao Ya looking down on him with a satisfied smile on her lips.

“Teacher, you have finally awakened. I’m... relieved...” After saying those words, her drooping eyelids finally shut as she fell to the ground.

She had always stood tall and valiant, but at that moment, she appeared so frail and helpless.

“Zhao Ya!” Understanding what was going on, Zhang Xuan screamed in horror.

He hurriedly got up and placed his palm on her hands.

Hong long!

Without any reservation, he furiously drove all of the Heaven’s Path zhenqi that he could muster into her body.

But the moment his zhenqi entered her body, his body stiffened as if someone had poured a pail of cold water over him.

The young lady’s previously frozen meridians had all shattered into nothingness. In other words, even if she could be treated, she would remain a cripple for life!

She would no longer be a cultivator anymore.

“Nooo!” Zhang Xuan roared.

She had spent her entire life cultivating, taking a step at a time toward the top. If she really became a cripple, her reason for living would be completely destroyed. There was no way that she would be able to accept such an outcome.

Without Zhao Ya’s zhenqi forcing them back anymore, You Ruoxin stepped forward, and upon seeing the state Zhao Ya was in, she shouted furiously, “Let go of Zhao Ya!”

“You... You are the culprit... The entire Glacier Plain Court is the culprit!”

Hugging the young lady’s body tightly in his embrace, Zhang Xuan slowly got to his feet as he stared at You Ruoxin and

Elder Qu with crimson eyes filled with hatred.

The reason he had sent Zhao Ya to the Glacier Plain Court was so that she could awaken her unique bloodline swiftly and come to be independent. If he had known that the Glacier Plain Court would treat his beloved student in such a manner, resorting to such callous means to force her to do something against her will, he never would have agreed to it, even at the expense of his life!

When he first saw Zhao Ya's frozen meridians and the suffering that she was in, he should have just toughened his heart and taught the Glacier Plain Court a lesson. It was his hesitation that had led to this tragedy.

"I have always said that if anything happened to my student, I would eradicate the Glacier Plain Court," Zhang Xuan said with an utterly cold voice, almost as if a demon that had walked out of the depths of hell.

Back then, when Liu Xuan took Zhao Ya away, he had said that if he ever found that Zhao Ya had suffered any grievances due to them, he would eradicate the entire Glacier Plain Court.

Since you view Zhao Ya as nothing more than a tool to further your Glacier Plain Court, not hesitating in the least to put her through great suffering so as to achieve your own goals, what else do I have to hesitate over?

Seeing the deranged state that the young man before him was in, Elder Qu howled out a threat. "You are Zhang Xuan, right? As a talented master teacher who has successfully overcome the Tower of Master Teachers, you have a bright future ahead of you. You'd better not act recklessly. Since the Master Teacher Pavilion is able to bestow you with prestige and honor, it's also able to take it away and turn you into a sinner wanted throughout the Master Teacher Continent..."

He had a rough idea about the situation concerning Zhao Ya, and since You Ruoxin was able to figure out the identity of the young man, there was no reason he would not be able to do so.

Zhang Xuan was indeed tremendously talented; master teachers of his caliber were rarely seen even in the entire

history of the Sanctum of Sages. Was he really going to give up on the bright future ahead of him just like that?

“Master teacher? Hah! Hahaha! Well said, Qu Buping! A master teacher should follow rules, isn't that so? Very well then! Today, I am not a master teacher but her teacher! I'm going to redress her grievances and avenge her!”

Zhang Xuan grabbed the master teacher robe on him and ripped it apart as he sneered maniacally.

All along, he had tried his best to remain in line due to the many rules of the Master Teacher Pavilion, but from that day... that would not be the case anymore!

Regardless of what happened, he would avenge Zhao Ya!

# 1504 Let Lightning Strike on the Glacier Plain Court!

“You... Audacious!”

Seeing the young man before him ripping his master teacher robe apart and saying that he was not a master teacher, Elder Qu nearly exploded on the spot.

Do you think that you are able to choose when you want to be a master teacher, as if it is just a robe you wear?

If everyone took it so lightly, what would become of the dignity of the Master Teacher Pavilion?

How could the number one occupation of the world possibly be so ruleless?

“Me, audacious? My audacity can’t even begin to compare to the likes of yours! The Master Teacher Pavilion should be the most concerned about the rules, but just to fulfill your own interests, you turned a blind eye to the Glacier Plain Court using depraved means to awaken a unique constitution.

“Why? Do the lives of those young men mean nothing to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters? Not only so, the First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court even shackled a disciple of the Glacier Plain Court with the Heaven Sealing Lock in order to force her to commit atrocities... I must have been blind to have handed my student over to you!”

Hugging the young lady tightly in his embrace, Zhang Xuan slowly flew into the air as his voice grew louder and louder.

“Such a filthy organization... I don’t think there’s any reason the Glacier Plain Court should exist in this world!”

Hearing how the young man was getting more and more overboard with his words, You Ruoxin sneered coldly as she raised her palm, prepared to make a move. “A mere Phantasmal Space realm brat like you doesn’t have any right

to determine whether or not the Glacier Plain Court has the right to exist in the world!”

The next moment, however, her face suddenly distorted in horror. “What is going on?”

The clear sky, filled with innumerable stars a moment ago, was suddenly filled with ominous clouds. Lightning crackled furiously within them, seemingly ready to bring devastation down upon the world at any moment.

“This is... the Dimension Sundering Ordeal? That fellow is going to push for a breakthrough to Dimension Sundering realm now?” Elder Qu was taken aback.

The fellow in the sky claimed that he wanted to exact vengeance for Zhao Ya by reducing the Glacier Plain Court to ruins, but why would he end up summoning his Dimension Sundering Ordeal instead?

During an ordeal, he would not even be able to guarantee his own safety, let alone deal with them.

Seeing how that fellow was not showing the slightest hint of remorse, even attempting to push for a breakthrough to Dimension Sundering realm in order to deal with them, You Ruoxin sneered coldly.

“It’s too late to be sharpening your edge at this moment. So what if you achieve a breakthrough to Dimension Sundering realm right now? As one of the top powers on the Master Teacher Continent, the Glacier Plain Court won’t stand for a brat like you besmirching our reputation!”

Raising her palm, she bellowed with a voice that jolted even the storm clouds, “Disciples of the Glacier Plain Court, heed my words! Someone dared humiliate the Glacier Plain Court; it’s time for you to stand up for your home!”

“Yes, First Elder!”

Huala!

Shortly after those words were spoken, the disciples and elders of the Glacier Plain Court flew into the sky, swiftly filling the

area. They positioned themselves in a certain pattern, seemingly forming a massive formation.

As a Tier-1 organization on the Master Teacher Continent, second only to Premier Clans like the Zhang Clan and Luo Clan, the sheer number of experts they had among their ranks would leave any ordinary powers trembling in fear. Just the number of Saint 8-dan experts that they had numbered a few thousand!

“To spout arrogant words when you haven’t even reached the Dimension Sundering realm, it seems like you are really oblivious to the strength that the Glacier Plain Court wields!” You Ruoxin scoffed as she stood above the massive formation formed by the army of elders and disciples.

So what if Zhang Xuan wielded strength far beyond his realm? Before absolute strength, he was nothing at all!

Just as You Ruoxin was just about to issue the command for the elders and disciples to apprehend that audacious young man, Elder Qu’s anxious voice suddenly sounded in her ears.

“No, something is wrong. First Elder, there’s something abnormal about that Dimension Sundering Ordeal!”

“Hmm?” You Ruoxin glanced at Elder Qu doubtfully.

An event that would be able to make even a 9-star master teacher panic was bound to be something major.

Thus, she quickly looked upward to uncover what was wrong with the summoned Dimension Sundering Ordeal, and with just a glance, her eyes had already widened in horror.

The congregation of storm clouds above had reached a density that she had never seen before, and not only so, it was still swelling up at a frightening rate. In just a few moments, it had already covered tens of thousands of mu, and it still was not showing any signs of calming down. It was almost as if it would only rest when it had brought down the entire City of Glacier.

“A lightning tribulation that’s tens of thousands of mu large? Not even the Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal can begin to

compare to this...” You Ruoxin shuddered in fear.

Even the strongest Macrocosm Ascendancy realm that she had seen was several thousand mu large, yet the young man’s Dimension Sundering realm actually formed a lightning tribulation at least ten times larger! Just what was going on?

To draw in such a powerful lightning tribulation, surely even Zhang Xuan would lose his life!

Holding Zhao Ya tightly in his embrace, Zhang Xuan coldly bellowed, “Lightning tribulation, heed my order! Lay waste to everything beneath!”

A deafening roar sounded from the storm clouds, as if responding to his command. The next moment, countless lightning bolts descended from the storm clouds, ravaging the surroundings.

Hong long! Hong long hong long!

It was an absolute cataclysm. Wherever the eyes could see, buildings were being torn down, collapsing onto the ground as rubble. A massive storm of dust swirled around the area.

“Protect the Glacier Plain Court! Protect the Glacier Plain Court!”

You Ruoxin never could have imagined that the Dimension Sundering Ordeal summoned by that fellow would actually follow his orders. Completely thrown off guard by the abrupt situation, her face paled in fright as she desperately barked out orders.

Sou sou sou sou!

The elders and disciples quickly flew to the key buildings of the Glacier Plain Court, intending to use their strength to protect its long lineage and history.

Kacha! Kacha!

However, the lightning tribulation was the very manifestation of the rage of the heavens—how could mere mortals like them possibly be able to withstand it?

Perhaps it was due to Zhang Xuan's command, but the lightning strikes did not land a fatal blow on any of the disciples or elders. Nevertheless, the lightning strikes still paralyzed their bodies, incapacitating them for the time being.

"No... No..." You Ruoxin shook her head in disbelief as she staggered backward weakly. She could not accept what she was seeing.

Standing beside her, Elder Qu was looking at the sight of absolute devastation with narrowed eyes.

The sheer scale of the lightning tribulation was already more than enough to leave their eyes widened in shock, and yet, to actually follow the young man's orders to attack the Glacier Plain Court... how in the world did he do it?

It was no wonder he dared to make the bold claim of eradicating the Glacier Plain Court... who could possibly stand against the wrath of the heavens?

Watching as the majestic buildings that had once towered being reduced to rubble and the formations that had protected the Glacier Plain Court dissipating, leaving nothing behind at all, You Ruoxin fell into a state of frenzy.

"I'll kill you!"

Roaring furiously, she charged right toward Zhang Xuan.

This was her sect, her home! How could she accept its destruction? There was no way she could!

"Return to the dirt. That's where you belong!" Zhang Xuan sneered as he waved his hand.

Hong long!

A thick bolt of lightning streaked down toward You Ruoxin, and before she could do anything, she had already been struck. Just like the disciples and elders of the Glacier Plain Court, her charred body plummeted back to the dust-covered ground.

Hong long! Hong long! Hong long!

A hundred more lightning bolts fell down one after another, striking down on You Ruoxin's body. Before long, the awe-



inspiring First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court was convulsing helplessly on the ground. With each strike of lightning, a spurt of blood would escape from her mouth.

Even at the end of the lightning strikes, her body was still twitching non-stop, making it impossible to tell whether she was still alive or not.

Even the Phantasmal Space Ordeal that he had summoned was enough to render the Zhang Clan's First Elder, Zhang Wuheng, completely helpless. Naturally, the Dimension Sundering Ordeal that he summoned was bound to be far beyond what even someone of You Ruoxin's caliber was able to deal with.

“As a 9-star master teacher, you condoned the evil deed committed by the Glacier Plain Court for your own interests. You should be punished as well...” After striking You Ruoxin, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze to Elder Qu and waved his hand.

Kacha! Kacha!

The next moment, countless bolts of lightning descended from the storm clouds, drowning Elder Qu in devastating lightning energy.

Soon, there was no one left standing in the Glacier Plain Court. Zhang Xuan took a look at the storm clouds and noted that the lightning energy harnessed within them was about to run dry as well.

He gazed down at the young lady in his embrace, and a pained look appeared on his face. He muttered softly beneath his breath, “Zhao Ya, don't worry. I'll heal you back to how you were and return your strength to you. I'll awaken your Pure Yin Body and make you one of the strongest experts on the Master Teacher Continent so that you'll never have to suffer such injustice ever again!”

Holding Zhao Ya tightly, he headed into the distance, and in the blink of an eye, their silhouettes vanished into the darkness of the night. 10,000 mu is roughly 6,666,666m<sup>2</sup>, which is basically already the size of a large country in our world.

# 1505 Reporting to the Master Teacher Pavilion Headquarters

Time ticked by. A crack of light appeared over the eastern horizon, and the brilliant sun slowly rose into the sky. Gradually, You Ruoxin regained consciousness. She struggled to her feet, and when she saw the endless waste that extended as far as she could see, her body staggered a little.

The Glacier Plain Court had existed on the Master Teacher Continent for many millenniums, and it had been through its fair share of tragedies. There were even a few battles that had resulted in more than half of their disciples dying, but despite all those crises, the City of Glacier had always survived and continued standing firm. While some buildings might be destroyed by the enemies from time to time, it would only be a small portion of the entire city. Yet, at that moment, everything had been torn to the ground, reduced to debris...

While none of the disciples and elders had lost their lives, they were all severely wounded. From the looks of it, it seemed like none of them would be able to recover without at least half a month of recuperation.

“For an individual to be able to summon lightning and wield such immense strength...” You Ruoxin could not help but shudder when she recalled the sight that she had seen the previous night.

In all honesty, she had never really thought of Zhang Xuan as a threat. After all, a Phantasmal Space realm cultivator should have been nothing more than an ant compared to her. With her strength, she could crush dozens of them with just a flick of her finger, but the other party turned out to possess a trump card far stronger than her wildest imagination!

With just a Dimension Sundering Ordeal, he had reduced the Glacier Plain Court to such a state... If he underwent his Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal, would the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters be torn down as well?

“First Elder... the Glacier Plain Court has been completely destroyed!” Struggling to You Ruoxin’s side, the Second Elder shook her head with a look of desolation.

“Indeed, it’s all destroyed,” You Ruoxin replied in a daze.

Having served as the de facto leader of the Glacier Plain Court for so many years, she had thought that she would be able to bring it to greater heights under her leadership. Yet, as if fate was playing tricks on her, her attempts to achieve her ambition had ended up reducing it to ruins instead.

“As long as our disciples remain, we’ll have a chance to rise back up. From this day onward, Zhang Xuan shall be the greatest enemy of our Glacier Plain Court. Any disciple who spots him is to kill him on sight!” You Ruoxin spat with gritted teeth.

“Yes!” the elders and disciples who had just awoken replied resoundingly.

You Ruoxin turned to the awoken Elder Qu and said, “Elder Qu, you witnessed what happened with your own eyes. That Zhang Xuan has kidnapped our young court chief and destroyed the entire Glacier Plain Court. I hope that you can report his heinous sins to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters so as to put a bounty on his head!”

“Rest assured, I’ll report this matter as I have seen and have him brought to justice!” Elder Qu nodded as he rubbed his glabella.

Despite being a master teacher, Zhang Xuan had disregarded the rules and acted as he pleased.

A person like him had to be punished severely. Otherwise, if everyone wreaked havoc just because they possessed a bit of strength, the entire Master Teacher Continent would swiftly be reduced to chaos!

...

Peng!

After flying for some time, Zhang Xuan finally reached the limits of his strength and plummeted to the ground.

While the Sanctum Head Token had blocked off some of Elder Qu's desperate attack, a portion of the shockwave had seeped into his body, and even at that moment, it was still tearing apart the vitality in his body, worsening his injuries.

If not for the energy that Zhao Ya had infused into his body, putting aside summoning the Dimension Sundering Ordeal, he might have simply died on the spot.

Even so, he still found himself coming to the limits of his body after just flying for a night.

Of course, he could have chosen to ride on the Inferno Qilin as well, but the problem with that was that the latter's fire aura was simply too conspicuous. While it did fly fast, it would also make it easier for them to be tracked down.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan was different. Possessing the Heaven's Path zhenqi, he was to perfectly conceal his aura. On top of that, through the Eye of Insight, he was able to check if he had accidentally left behind any tracks and erase them in advance, thus making it difficult for even real 9-star master teachers to find him.

Struggling to his feet once more, he found that he was standing in the midst of a primitive jungle. Seeing that there was no one in sight, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Zhang Xuan lowered his head to gaze at the young lady in his embrace. Her eyes were still tightly shut, and even though she was breathing, it was extremely frail, almost as if she would stop breathing at the slightest trauma.

“Zhao Ya, since I have said that I'll save you, I'll definitely do it!”

If not for Zhang Xuan holding her throughout the entire journey, sustaining her vitals with his Heaven's Path zhenqi, she might have already departed from the world.

Placing her lightly on the ground, Zhang Xuan placed his finger on her meridians and willed, “Flaws!”

Weng!

A book materialized in the Library of Heaven’s Path, and Zhang Xuan quickly browsed through it.

“Her injuries are too severe. Every last one of her meridians had crumbled...” Zhang Xuan shook his head hopelessly.

Zhao Ya’s condition was worse than he had thought. Due to her forcefully driving her zhenqi, her frozen meridians had ended up shattering into countless fragments. If there was anything fortunate about the situation, it would be that the effects of the Heaven Sealing Lock had vanished as well.

In other words, while shattering her meridians, she had succeeded in shattering the Heaven Sealing Lock with her strength, resolving its threat.

“If it’s a cut or a tear, the Heaven’s Path zhenqi would still be able to repair it, but her meridians have shattered completely, ceasing to exist,” Zhang Xuan murmured with an awful complexion.

The Heaven’s Path zhenqi’s restorative property far surpassed that of any medicinal herbs or pills... but despite its seemingly miraculous effects, it did not have the ability to recreate meridians out of nothing.

Even the most skilled of blacksmith would be unable to forge a weapon without tools and ores.

This was exactly what was going on with Zhao Ya.

Given that her meridians had been completely destroyed, how could the Heaven’s Path zhenqi heal something that was no longer there?

“Without meridians, I won’t be able to drive my zhenqi through her body effectively, and that’ll make it much more difficult to treat her...”

In a sense, meridians were like the capillaries of the body; they could be found everywhere so that the bloodstream could transport oxygen to every cell in the body. The destruction of

the meridians was somewhat similar to the collapse of the roads. The Heaven's Path zhenqi would not be able to get around her body easily, thus slowing down the treatment significantly.

“Let's try using the silver needles!”

Flicking his wrist, Zhang Xuan took out a couple of silver needles and infused a surge of his zhenqi on each of them before flicking them away.

Weng weng weng weng!

Several hundred silver needles immediately pierced into the acupoints of the young lady.

“Cough cough...” Zhang Xuan swayed on the spot before falling back down onto the ground.

His injuries were not light, and he was in no state to expend too much energy. While attempting to save Zhao Ya, he had also nearly depleted himself dry.

Knowing that he could not afford to collapse at this moment, he swiftly took out a pill and swallowed it. A while later, when he felt that some strength had returned to his body, he quickly turned his sight to the young lady once more.

After infusing several hundred surges of zhenqi into Zhao Ya's body via the silver needles, her complexion alleviated significantly. However, due to the severity of her injuries, she was still a long way off from regaining consciousness.

“The trauma to her body as a result of the collapse of her meridians is simply too great. If she ever wants to recover her strength as a cultivator, her meridians will have to be reconstructed...”

A deep frown surfaced between Zhang Xuan's brows.

As formidable as his medical skills were, this was his first time meeting with such a situation. There was nothing like this detailed in the medical books, so he was also at a complete loss as to what he could do.

At this point, it was not a matter of whether he knew how to reconstruct meridians or not—such a matter was completely

unheard of in the Master Teacher Continent in the very first place!

A glint flashed across Zhang Xuan's eyes. "But just because it's unheard of doesn't mean that it's impossible. All I have to do is be the first one to achieve it!"

So what if no one had achieved it in the past?

If no one had done it before, he would just have to be the one to break new grounds then!

"But... what can I use to replace her meridians? The material must allow zhenqi to pass through it without any obstruction, be sufficiently flexible and resilient, and be able to store energy."

Meridians were similar to expressways tailored for zhenqi. In order to reconstruct them, the first thing that Zhang Xuan had to do was find a material suitable to replace it.

But what in the world had the properties necessary to replace meridians and yet not harm a person's body?

After some contemplation, Zhang Xuan was unable to come up with anything good, so he could only shake his head helplessly.

"It seems like I should drop by the Blacksmith Guild or Physician Guild to take a look..."

If it were to come down to it, he might have to try fusing several materials together and forge out a new set of meridians for her. However, the problem was that his forging abilities were simply too unremarkable! Forging a brick was already the limits of his ability, let alone forging something that had to be small, delicate, precise, and allow zhenqi to pass through without any obstruction. That was really asking the impossible of him!

Besides, it was not even certain yet if meridians could be replaced by other materials. So, he would have to hit the books to determine his next course of action.

# 1506 Zhao Ya Regains Consciousness

After coming up with a rough idea as to how he could treat Zhao Ya, Zhang Xuan felt the burden in his heart alleviating slightly. He continued his acupuncture treatment, infusing tens of thousands of zhenqi surges into Zhao Ya's body before her condition finally stabilized.

It had been said time and time again, but Zhao Ya was truly in a horrible condition. Had it been any other physician in Zhang Xuan's place, even if the person was a 9-star pinnacle physician, they would still have found themselves utterly lost as to how to help Zhao Ya. Pills would not work as there were no meridians to diffuse the medicinal energy, and the usual zhenqi circulation methods would not work for the same reason.

Even with the miraculous Heaven's Path zhenqi, Zhang Xuan could only infuse it bit by bit through the silver needles into the injured parts of her body to slowly induce her recovery.

By the time he was done, a day had already passed.

Other than occasionally going around to find some wild fruits, mashing them up, and feeding them to Zhao Ya to alleviate her hunger, he spent most of his time treating Zhao Ya and himself and recovering his cultivation.

Fortunately, his hard work paid off. He finally managed to expel the ravaging might from Elder Qu's attack that had seeped into his body and successfully healed his injuries. At the same time, he also managed to accustom himself to his Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm primary stage cultivation as well.

“The last round of acupuncture! As long as I succeed, Zhao Ya should be able to regain consciousness!”

Seeing that the sun was rising once more, Zhang Xuan quickly conditioned his own state before taking his silver needles out.



Gazing down on the peaceful face of the young lady lying not too far away, he flicked his wrist.

Huala!

Several hundred silver needles immediately floated before him, and he stroked each of them lightly as if playing the zither.

As Zhao Ya's meridians had been completely destroyed, making it impossible for her body to transport zhenqi around, Zhang Xuan had no choice but to infuse his Heaven's Path zhenqi directly into the wounded areas of her body. After a day of hard work, she had mostly recovered from her injuries. As long as nothing went wrong, he would be able to stimulate her nerves after this final round of acupuncture and rouse her from her deep slumber.

“Go!”

The silver needles infused with unique energy surged forth and pierced into Zhao Ya's body. Not daring to loosen up in the slightest, Zhang Xuan raised his hands and clapped them together.

Pah pah pah!

A series of resounding claps timed impeccably to produce a certain beat sounded in the air. It was a simple but strangely intoxicating melody, reminiscent of demonic tunes. As it echoed in the forest, the fingers of the unconscious young lady twitched a little. Following which, her curled eyelashes fluttered a little before her eyes gradually opened.

“Teacher...” Struggling to sit up, Zhao Ya looked at the young man before her with a hint of wonder in her eyes. “I'm... alive?”

With her meridians completely destroyed, she had thought that she would die without fail. However, it seemed like the merciful heavens had given her another chance to meet with her teacher.

“Don't worry. I'm around—I won't let death claim you so easily!” Zhang Xuan replied with a gentle smile.

Wei Ruyan's condition had been much worse than this back then, but he had still successfully treated her.

With the Library of Heaven's Path to uncover all flaws and the Heaven's Path zhenqi to heal all wounds, given sufficient time, Zhang Xuan would surely be able to bring anyone back from death's embrace!

“Un!”

Heaving a sigh of relief, Zhao Ya managed to wobble up to her feet, but due to the feeble state she was in, she was still unable to maintain her balance too well.

Zhang Xuan quickly stretched his hand out to support her before sighing deeply. “I have managed to stabilize your condition for the time being, but due to the collapse of your meridians, the zhenqi you have cultivated so far has ended up dissipating. However, you don't have to worry. I'll find a way for you to recover your strength as soon as possible!”

“Thank you, Teacher,” Zhao Ya replied with a faint smile.

She was already very thankful to the world for allowing her to remain in this world and see her teacher once more.

Whether she could recover her cultivation or not was no longer important to her; she was already satisfied with what she had received. Whatever else fate had in store for her, she would accept it graciously.

Zhang Xuan quickly took out the spring water and wild fruits that he had harvested and passed them over for Zhao Ya to consume, and only then did the young lady regain some strength. She scanned her surroundings doubtfully and asked, “Teacher, where are we? Aren't we in the Glacier Plain Court? How did we get here?”

She remembered seeing the First Elder and Elder Qu closing in on her teacher menacingly... Given how disadvantageous the situation had been for her teacher back then, how did he manage to get away?

“I'm not too sure where we are at the moment, but as for how we managed to get here, I'll fill you in on the details later. For the time being, we have to move.”

After saying those words, Zhang Xuan lifted the young lady up and wrapped her amid a layer of zhenqi before flying into the distance.

Not too long later, they arrived in a small city.

While Zhao Ya was unable to tap into her cultivation anymore, after mostly recovering from her injuries, she was still able to move around without much trouble, just like an ordinary human.

“We are in Longyuan City...”

After asking some passers-by, they managed to figure out their current location.

“I have seen Longyuan City on the map before,” Zhao Ya said. “It’s roughly thirty thousand li away from the Glacier Plain Court and several thousand li away from the Empire Alliance.”

“Oh? So, this city is in close proximity to the Empire Alliance.” Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

That night, he had fled in a fluster, and he had even changed directions eight times midway in order to ensure that any trackers sent after him would not be able to find him easily. As a result of that, even he had no idea which direction he had headed in.

Perhaps it was due to the breakthrough in his cultivation to the Dimension Sundering realm that resulted in a significant boost in his speed, but despite the detours that he had taken, he had still managed to fly thirty thousand li away in a single night.

“That’s right.” Zhao Ya nodded.

Zhang Xuan pondered for a brief moment before saying, “Since the Empire Alliance is in the vicinity, let’s head over there!”

The problem regarding Zhao Ya’s collapsed meridians had to be treated as soon as possible, and a city as small as Longyuan City was unlikely to have the necessary resources required for her treatment. On the other hand, the Empire Alliance was the very center of the Conferred Empires, and in terms of its

overall development, be it in terms of military might or economic prowess, it could be said to almost be on par with the current Sanctum of Sages.

Perhaps, he might just be able to find the materials and books necessary to reconstruct Zhao Ya's meridians there.

Zhao Ya nodded in agreement.

She would follow wherever her teacher went. After all that she had been through, she no longer wanted to be apart from her teacher anymore.

Knowing that he had gotten into a fair bit of trouble recently, and it would simply be asking for trouble to appear before others in their original appearance, Zhang Xuan proposed, "But before we make our way over, we'll have to alter our appearances a bit..."

Zhao Ya gave a nod of agreement.

Zhang Xuan's disguise was relatively easy. Having cultivated the Heaven's Path Golden Body, he was able to move his muscles freely to alter his appearance. On the other hand, due to Zhao Ya's lack of cultivation, it was slightly more troublesome for her. Nevertheless, by using a couple of unique artifacts, they still managed to conceal her ravishing looks.

...

While the duo was heading toward the Empire Alliance, the Teleportation Formation in the Sanctum of Sages suddenly shook, and several figures materialized on the spot.

They were the group that had taken to detour from the Zhang Clan to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters before teleporting over—Yang Xuan, Sword Saint Xing, Sword Saint Meng, and First Elder Zhang Wuheng.

"What happened? Why is it so messy around here?" Walking out from the portal, Yang shi assessed his surroundings with a deep furrow on his forehead.

The Sanctum of Sages was the number one academy on the Master Teacher Continent, and it was one of the two major subsidiaries of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters,

placed on equal footing with the Combat Master Hall. But at that moment, its buildings had been torn down, and pillars of smoke could be seen here and there. It was almost as if the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had just been there!

“Zhan Tiancheng pays respect to Yang shi!” Zhan shi quickly rushed forward and lowered his head in embarrassment. He had no idea how he should explain this matter to the other party. “Regarding this...”

He had already mostly recovered from his injuries, but the very thought of a mere Phantasmal Space realm student being able to corner him so far was enough to leave him so stifled that he could have spurted several liters of blood out.

More importantly, that fellow was actually Yang shi’s direct disciple!

How was he supposed to explain this matter to Yang shi?

“Zhan shi, I requested you to hold Zhang Xuan here by hook or by crook. May I know where he is at the moment?” Zhang Wuheng asked anxiously.

“Zhang Xuan...” Upon hearing that name, Zhan shi’s face twitched, and unquenchable fury surfaced in the depths of his eyes. “He slipped past our defenses and fled!”

“He fled?” Zhang Wuheng was taken aback. “This is the Sanctum of Sages! How did he manage to get away right beneath your nose?”

“He constructed a Teleportation Formation and teleported right through our defenses, how was I supposed to stop him? The current state of the Sanctum of Sages is also all his doing!” Zhan Shi spat through gritted teeth.

“You said that Zhang Xuan constructed a Teleportation Formation? Tell me more,” Yang shi requested with a deep frown.

“Yang shi, I know that Zhang Xuan is your direct disciple, but that man really has no regard for the rules of the Master Teacher Pavilion at all. I wouldn’t have wanted it to come to this if I had a choice, but this is already far beyond what I can tolerate. I have already reported this matter to the Master

Teacher Pavilion headquarters, and I seek your understanding for this matter!” Zhan shi clasped his fist and bowed slightly.

Yang shi shook his head and clarified, “You have misunderstood. Zhang Xuan isn’t my student!”

# 1507 Yang shi Meets Sun Qiang

“He isn’t your student?” Zhan shi was taken aback.

The other elders in the area were dumbstruck as well.

The news that Zhang Xuan was Yang shi’s direct disciple had caused a huge stir a while back, such that there was probably no one else in the Sanctum of Sages who did not know of the matter. Why would Yang shi deny it?

“It’s been less than a day since I first heard that name. I only have one student—Feng Ziyi!” Yang shi clarified with a shake of his head.

It seemed like Zhang Xuan’s disguise was really impeccable. To think that even a master teacher of Zhan shi’s caliber had been fooled by his words!

This made Yang shi even more curious about the young man.

Just what kind of capabilities did that fellow who had barely achieved a breakthrough to the Phantasmal Space realm possess that he could leave the Zhang Clan and the Sanctum of Sages in a state of unrest? Not only so, he had even managed to utterly convince everyone that he was his direct disciple!

Seeing that Yang shi was not joking, Zhan shi swiftly realized that he had been fooled, and he furiously bellowed, “That would explain everything... Who would have thought that the fellow would actually be so bold as to impersonate as Yang shi’s student and go around fooling others! That’s another heinous crime that he has committed! He must be severely punished so as to send out a stern warning to the others!”

All this while, he had been conflicted about Zhang Xuan’s identity, which had put him at a loss as to how he should deal with that fellow. However, since it had been clarified that the fellow was actually not Yang shi’s student, there was no need for him to hesitate anymore.

“You said that he should be severely punished?” Hearing those words, Yang shi looked at Zhan shi with a bizarre expression on his face as he asked, “Do you not know who he is?”

“Who he is? Who could he possibly be?” Zhan shi flung his sleeves furiously. “No matter who he is, as long as he isn’t your student, I’ll make sure that he pays the price for daring to wreak havoc in the Sanctum of Sages!”

“Whatever pleases you... I just hope that you don’t regret your decision later on!” Yang shi shook his head before falling silent.

He had only heard of the appearance of the token from the First Elder’s description, so there was no way that he could say for sure whether it was truly the Sanctum Head Token or not. In other words, everything was still his speculation at that point.

He did not think that it would be appropriate for him to make claims that were yet to be verified.

“Yang shi, what do you mean by that?” Hearing the words of the other party, Zhan shi could not help but look at him doubtfully.

“Forget it, there’s no point talking about it for now.” Not wanting to linger on this topic, Yang shi swiftly scanned the surroundings before asking, “You said earlier that Zhang Xuan constructed a Teleportation Formation and fled through it. How did it happen?”

“It’s like this...” With an embarrassed look on his face, Zhan shi swiftly went through the events that had occurred.

“You say that he borrowed your formation flags and made use of the energy from the attack from your Formation of the Sages in order to construct and activate a Teleportation Formation, and he fled through it...” Yang shi, the First Elder, and the others looked at one another in astonishment.

They could understand the words individually, but when those words were strung together, they formed gibberish that they simply could not comprehend.



With their level of cultivation and comprehension of the spatial laws, they were well aware of how difficult it was to set up a Teleportation Formation.

It was still a minor matter if one failed to construct it within a short period of time, but more importantly, if one made the slightest error in its construction, one could very well be torn to shreds by the flow of space!

The combined might of the elders enhanced by the Formation of the Sages was already a perilous danger to deal with, and yet, he was still able to turn this threat into a supporting force to help him construct the Teleportation Formation and flee. Not only so, he even had the leisure to set up a self-destruction sequence in the formation...

Was that still humanely possible?

Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng turned toward Yang shi, and understanding the intention behind their gazes, Yang shi shook his head and replied, "I'm incapable of doing that!"

He did wield incredible might, worthy as being dubbed the strongest man of the new generation, but despite that, he was still incapable of setting a formation impeccably within a short period of time in the face of danger.

"Then, do you know where he teleported off to?" Sword Saint Meng asked anxiously.

The more outstanding Zhang Xuan proved himself to be, the more convinced she was that the young man was her child. Hearing that she had missed him once more, she could not help but feel deeply anxious inside.

"He destroyed the Teleportation Formation utterly, leaving no trace at all. I have no way of knowing where he went," Zhan shi replied with a shake of his head.

"Bring me to where the Teleportation Formation was," Yang shi instructed.

"Yes. This way, please!"

Zhan shi led the way, and very soon, they arrived before a massive pit. The explosion of the formation had left behind

charred marks on the walls of the pit.

Floating in the air above, Yang shi examined the pit for quite a while before saying, “I can only roughly estimate the distance of the formation from the lingering energy in the area. He has teleported several million li away, but as for the direction and destination of where he’s heading to, I’m afraid that’s beyond my current capabilities to determine!”

“He teleported several million li away? He couldn’t have returned back to the Zhang Clan, could he?” the First Elder exclaimed with a face pale in horror.

While that fellow was by no means strong, he had too many mysterious means up his sleeves that made him a difficult opponent to deal with. Given that they had come all the way to the Sanctum of Sages, the Zhang Clan was somewhat vulnerable at the moment. If that fellow returned to the Zhang Clan and wreaked havoc, it would be hard to say whether those remaining in the clan would be able to stop him or not!

“Since he has left the Zhang Clan, I don’t think that the possibility of him returning is too high,” Yang shi said.

Since Zhang Xuan had already teleported from the Zhang Clan to the Sanctum of Sages, it made little sense for him to teleport right back. After all, that would be too risky.

And more important than that... given the state that the Zhang Clan was in, was there anything else that he could destroy?

Sword Saint Meng pondered for a moment before asking, “Does Zhang Xuan... have any kin, or perhaps, people that he’s close with? Judging from what you’ve all said, it seems likely that he’s heading to find someone whom he’s close with.”

“He doesn’t have any kin as far as I know... Oh right, he does have a subordinate right here in the Sanctum of Sages. I’ll have him apprehended right now!” Zhan shi’s eyes lit up upon stumbling across a potential clue, and he hurriedly issued some instructions.

He had thought that Sun Qiang was Yang shi’s butler, so despite the mess that Zhang Xuan had caused earlier, he still

did not dare apprehend the latter. However, since Yang shi had already clarified that he had no relationship with Zhang Xuan, there was no longer any need for him to hold back.

“Yes, Zhan shi!”

Without any hesitation, Elder Ge and the others swiftly flew into the distance.

“Since Sun Qiang is Zhang Xuan’s subordinate, can you bring him here? I would like to hear some things from him,” Sword Saint Meng said.

She wanted to verify whether Zhang Xuan was her son or not, and as Zhang Xuan’s butler, that Sun Qiang person should know a lot about him.

It did not take too long for Elder Ge and the others to bring a rather plump man back with them.

The plump man had his strength completely sealed, and his bulging cheeks flew around the place as he struggled to break free of his restraints. As soon as the plump man caught sight of Zhan shi, he shouted furiously, “Little Zhan, what do you mean by this?”

“Audacious!”

Previously, it was because Sun Qiang was Yang shi’s butler that Zhan shi had overlooked the other party addressing him in such a rude manner. However, having learned that it was all a lie, he could not help but feel rage seething through his body when he heard the plump man’s words.

“Indeed, how dare you so audaciously apprehend me? Let me go right now, and I might still be able to overlook your insolence. Otherwise, once our Old Master learns of this matter, not even Zhan shi will be able to save you anymore!” Sun Qiang roared in anger.

Are these fellows insane?

Don’t they know who I am? How dare they make a move on me? Unforgivable!

“Old Master? Hahaha!” Seeing how the plump man was still sticking to his act, trying to scare them with lies built upon

thin air, Zhan shi could not help but burst into laughter. He gazed down on Sun Qiang with a scornful look and sneered, “Tell me then, who is the Old Master whom you speak of?”

“Our Old Master is Yang shi, Yang Xuan, a grand elder of the Master Teacher Pavilion, as well as one of the strongest experts on the Master Teacher Continent! Just who in the world gave you the guts to lay your filthy hands on me, Yang shi’s butler? Do you want your head to roll? Hurry up and let me go!” Sun Qiang harrumphed coldly.

“Hahaha, hahahaha!” Thinking about how he had actually been scared by those ridiculous words in the past, Zhan shi could not help but laugh in fury.

Yang shi was standing right before him, and yet, that fellow still dared to continue impersonating his butler. Were there no limits to that fellow’s arrogance?

Hearing the conversation between the two of them, Yang shi finally came to the limits of his tolerance. He walked forward and asked, “You said that you are Yang shi’s butler? Do you know what Yang shi looks like?”

“You want to know our Old Master looks like? Our Old Master is one of the top experts in the world, and his appearance is the greatest secret of the Master Teacher Pavilion! You want to know how he looks like...”

At that point, Sun Qiang’s lips curled up into a sneer, and with a voice filled with derision, he continued.

“Are you worthy of knowing?”

# 1508 Sun Qiang's Breakdown

While Sun Qiang was not a master teacher, having spent a long period of time with Zhang Xuan, he was still aware of most of the rules concerning master teachers.

Their Old Master, Yang Xuan, was one of the top experts of the continent, but even the strongest of experts would have their own weaknesses that others could exploit. In order to prevent the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe from designing a trap to deal with them, the appearance, strength, cultivation techniques, battle techniques, and other private information of those experts were made classified secrets that only the top echelon of the Master Teacher Pavilion was privy to.

Yet, an old fogey who came out of nowhere actually had the cheek to ask him for those details! Was he unaware of the rules?

“You are asking if I am worthy?” Yang Xuan could not help but chuckle softly upon hearing those words.

He had never thought the day would come when someone would ask him if he was worthy of knowing his own appearance.

“What are you laughing at? Now that you know that I’m Yang shi’s butler, you should hurry up and release me! Otherwise, if the Old Master hears of this, none of you will get off the hook easily!” Sun Qiang bellowed angrily.

“I’m afraid it’s impossible for what you have said to occur.” Yang shi shook his head as he looked at Sun Qiang with a pitiful gaze. “There’s no point letting this farce run any longer than this. Sun Qiang, I am the Old Master whom you have speaking of all this while, Yang Xuan!”

Sun Qiang was taken aback for a moment before he finally understood what Yang shi was saying. In an instant, he

exploded. “Yang Xuan? How dare you impersonate the Old Master in front of me? Don’t you know that it’s a heinous crime to pretend to be a high-ranked master teacher?”

He had been with the Old Master for almost a year now, so he was familiar with the latter’s looks and habits. Yet, this old fogey who had popped out of nowhere actually dared claim to be the Old Master.

Hu!

Barely after Sun Qiang stopped roaring, a token appeared right before his face.

“This is the master teacher token that represents my identity. You may have a look at it,” Yang shi replied calmly.

Usually, he would have gotten angry at seeing another person using his name and acting all self-important, but he did not. This was because he could hear the conviction in the plump man’s words.

In other words, the plump man was not putting on an act at all. He truly believed in what he was saying, and that meant that he was also a victim of the entire deception.

If that was the case, could it be that someone had impersonated him and accepted Zhang Xuan as his student... and the both of them were victims of the lies another person had cooked up?

Yang shi suddenly felt more determined than ever to uncover the truth.

Sun Qiang shot a wary glance at Yang Xuan before slowly turning his attention to the token. On the token, he saw two huge characters, ‘Yang Xuan’, inscribed on it. These two characters had an imposing aura to them that it seemed to pierce right into one’s soul.

“I am Yang Xuan, a grand elder of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. Your Old Master is the one who has impersonated me!”

“This...” Sun Qiang suddenly fell silent as a frightening realization crept into his mind.

Slowly, his body began to shudder uncontrollably.

The reason he had dared to throw his weight around was in view of the fact that they were in the Sanctum of Sages, and the persons-in-charge were master teachers. As long as they were master teachers, they would have no choice but to defer to his identity as Yang Xuan's butler. On top of that, even though the Young Master did cause a huge fuss, he had not made any mistakes. In view of his identity, they would not dare do anything to him. So, the Sanctum of Sages was paradoxically the safest place for him to be.

He had never thought that the foreign-looking old man before him would actually be Yang Shi. If that was the case, who was the fellow whom he had met previously?

The shock at having been told such a huge lie made his body turn completely cold, and he could not help but doubt everything that he had held faith in.

Ever since the Old Master had chosen him back in the Tianxuan Kingdom, he had followed him all the way up the ranks. Many things had happened along the journey, but every single time, the Old Master would appear at the most crucial of moments and save them from the crises that they were in. It did not take long for the Old Master to take on an indomitable image in his mind, becoming his faith and hope. In fact, when he first heard of Yang Xuan's title as one of the strongest cultivators on the Master Teacher Continent, he had never, even for a single moment, doubted that the Old Master would be a fake.

Yet, the old man before him was telling him that the Old Master was the impersonator. In an instant, it was as if his entire world had collapsed.

"Impossible... This can't be true... You are lying to me!" Sun Qiang's face paled, and he nearly collapsed to the ground.

"What is so impossible about this? It's time for you to open your eyes to reality! Someone as esteemed as Yang Shi would only take in top-notch experts like Hu Yiwei as his butler! Just think about it, what right does a weakling like you have to become Yang Shi's butler?" Elder Ge sneered coldly.

“But...” Sun Qiang tried to refute, but he could not find the words to say.

Noticing the traumatized state that Sun Qiang was in, Sword Saint Meng swiftly realized that if she did not pose her question now, she might no longer get a chance to do so. So, she quickly interjected and asked, “Sun Qiang, how old is your Young Master, Zhang Xuan, this year? Do you know his birthday?”

“Impossible... How could someone as formidable as our Old Master possibly be an impersonator?” However, Sun Qiang simply shook his head non-stop, as if he could not hear Sword Saint Meng’s words at all.

“Alright, there’s no point asking him anymore. He has always believed himself to be my butler, and the revelation that the person whom he has been following all this time is a fake has caused his world to shatter into pieces. Given his current state, he won’t be able to respond coherently to any of your questions!” Yang shi shook his head and sighed.

In the days that he had spent roaming around the Master Teacher Continent, he had seen many such cases. There were some individuals who had hypnotized themselves into believing that they were something that they were not, to the extent that they had even adjusted their behavior and actions to correspond with their beliefs as well. Clearly, the plump man before him was also one such person.

Given that his Old Master had introduced himself as Yang Xuan right from the start, it was inevitable that the other party would simply take that for granted. Lies weaved upon a lie, he eventually placed himself into a non-existent identity, playing a character that he believed to be his own calling. As time went by, it became harder and harder for him to jump out of that identity, to the point where the truth was no longer something that he could accept.

“But...” Sword Saint Meng began to protest anxiously.

“There’s no need to panic. I understand how you feel, but no matter how many rumors you hear, there’s no way you can be certain whether Zhang Xuan is your son or not. The only



effective way for you to verify it is to meet him in person!”  
Yang shi said.

No matter how many rumors one heard, the only way to verify if something was true was to check it with one’s own eyes.

Since that was the case, it did not really matter whether Sword Saint Meng was able to question Sun Qiang or not. Eventually, she would still have to meet Zhang Xuan personally in order to confirm his identity.

“But... where did he go?” Sword Saint Meng exclaimed anxiously.

“I don’t know either, but as long as we continue looking, I believe that we’ll be able to find some traces of him,” Yang shi said.

It was impossible for anything to appear or vanish without leaving any traces. As long as they investigated carefully, they would be able to find some clues to where Zhang Xuan was heading.

“Hmm?” All of a sudden, while Yang shi was clarifying some details regarding the incident with Zhan shi, his eyebrows shot up. He flicked his wrist, and a Communication Jade Token appeared in his hands.

His Communication Jade Token was different from the ones held by other master teachers. It was made out of a crystalline material, giving it a transparent exterior. Vaguely, one could sense a powerful formation harnessing great energy embedded within the token.

The Communication Jade Token of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was a tool that was powerful enough to allow one to communicate with others no matter where one was on the Master Teacher Continent!

However, it was a pity that an exorbitant price had to be paid to forge even a single one of these tokens, so only the highest-ranking master teachers were qualified to hold one.

“What’s wrong?” Noticing the anomaly in Yang shi’s complexion, the First Elder Zhang Wuheng quickly turned his gaze over.

“There’s news on Zhang Xuan...” After reading through the information on the Communication Jade Token, Yang shi exhaled deeply before stowing the token back into his storage ring.

“Where is he?” Sword Saint Meng asked anxiously.

“The Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters have just received news that he has used my name to wreak havoc in the Glacier Plain Court and kidnapped their young court chief,” Yang shi said.

“Used Yang shi’s name? Kidnapped the Glacier Plain Court’s young court chief?”

Everyone was stunned by the scale of what they had just heard.

Just what was that fellow up to?

Was he unaware of the extent of the influence that the Master Teacher Pavilion had over the Master Teacher Continent?

To be causing trouble everywhere he went, was he tired of living?

“That’s right. From the looks of it, it appears that the Teleportation Formation leads right toward the Glacier Plain Court. I’m going over to take a look personally. Who’s going to follow me? I’m afraid that if the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters get ahead of us, we might just lose the chance to meet him!” Yang shi said.

At this point, his curiosity toward Zhang Xuan was starting to become a little unbearable.

To think that that fellow would head to the Glacier Plain Court disguised as him... just what was his goal?

Hearing that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was likely to make a move, Sword Saint Meng pleaded anxiously, “Yang shi, may I ask you get the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to hold back on this matter for now? Zhang Xuan... h-he’s still young... it might just have been a moment of folly!”

The Master Teacher Pavilion was not the strongest power on the Master Teacher Continent for nothing. Once they made a move, not even the deities would be able to save Zhang Xuan.

“I’m afraid that even I am helpless before this matter. Unless your Zhang Clan, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court let this matter drop, the Master Teacher Pavilion is compelled to step in and resolve this conflict.

“Most likely, the news should have reached the top echelons of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters now, and the deputy pavilion master will be the one to make the final call. It’s been a long time since I participated in the matters of the Master Teacher Pavilion, so I fear that I no longer possess the authority to overwrite his decision!” Yang shi shook his head.

# 1509 Empire Alliance

“But...” Sword Saint Meng exclaimed in agitation

If Zhang Xuan was truly their son, would they still be able to protect him now that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had chosen to officially intervene in this matter?

“Calm down, dear. For the time being, we should try to find Zhang Xuan as quickly as possible. As long as we can get to him before the Master Teacher Pavilion, in deference of our standing, there might still be some room for reconciliation,” Sword Saint Xing said as he grabbed his wife’s hand and squeezed it to reassure her.

“Un, you’re right.” Sword Saint Meng took in a deep breath and forced herself to calm down. Reverting back to her usual decisive and valiant self, she nodded. “If he’s really my son, even if the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters get involved, they will have to step over my dead body to get to him!”

“Of course!” Sword Saint Xing replied with a smile. “It has been quite some time since the two of us last fought alongside one another. I think it’s about time to remind the world of our prowess lest they forget! We shall let them know that anyone who tries to trifle with the son of the Xingmeng Sword Saints will have hell to pay for!”

By the side, the First Elder Zhang Wuheng and Zhan shi looked at the spirited couple before them, and their lips could not help but twitch slightly.

Was destruction actually a trait that was coded in the genes and could be inherited?

“There’s a Teleportation Formation in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters that leads straight to the Glacier Plain Court. Let’s go!” Yang shi waved his hand.

Just as he was about to leave, he suddenly recalled something and turned his gaze to Zhan shi. “Spare Sun Qiang for the time

being. Wait for me to clarify the situation before deciding on how he should be dealt with!”

No matter what, Sun Qiang was also a victim of this incident, and the many uncertainties tied into the matter made Yang shi reluctant to pass judgement for the time being. Besides, there might be some use in keeping Sun Qiang alive.

“I understand!” Zhan shi clasped fist.

Seeing that the other party had agreed to it, Yang shi nodded silently. The group returned back to the Teleportation Formation that they had come from, and with a brilliant flicker of light, they vanished from the spot.

...

Looking at the majestic city in front of him and the towering buildings that rose into the sky, Zhang Xuan muttered beneath his breath, “This is the Empire Alliance?”

In the forest just outside of Longyuan City, he had tamed a random aerial saint beast that he had caught and had it fly them to the Empire Alliance.

At this moment, the two of them had already altered their appearances, allowing them to bypass the checks along the way. Before long, they had already successfully entered the city.

“Teacher, where shall we go now?” Zhao Ya asked.

With the nourishment of the Heaven’s Path zhenqi, most of her wounds had healed. Her complexion looked a lot better than before, and she no longer appeared as frail as she previously did. It was just that there was still not a shred of power in her body.

“We’ll first head over to the Blacksmith Guild to take a look,” Zhang Xuan said.

After much thought, he felt that there were only two places that would aid him in reconstructing Zhao Ya’s meridians—the Blacksmith Guild and the Physician Guild.

For the time being, he felt that it would be better for him to head over to the Blacksmith Guild to find the materials

required for forging the meridians. It would be best if he could find something useful there.

Otherwise, he would just have to go to the Physician Guild to search for another method to reconstruct meridians.

The two of them began making their way over to the Blacksmith Guild, but on their journey there, they could not help but notice that the crowd were converging toward a certain location. They shot perplexed glances in that direction, and coincidentally, a resounding voice also echoed at the same moment.

“Citizens of the Empire Alliance, please gather in the square in front of the Alliance Atrium...”

Hualala!

Barely after those words were said, many armored soldiers swiftly emerged from the alleys and sealed the area. They ushered the crowd to move in a single direction, presumably toward the square in front of the Alliance Atrium that the voice had just spoken of.

“What happened?”

“I don’t know either, but I think it’s likely that the alliance head has some important news to announce!”

“I don’t think that’s the case. While the alliance head wields the greatest authority in the Empire Alliance, even he doesn’t have the right to get the entire city to gather together in a single location. It’s more likely that the Master Teacher Pavilion has something to announce!”

“That makes sense. Oh well, we’ll know once we get there...”

Such discussion could be heard in the surroundings.

“Teacher...” Zhao Ya glanced at Zhang Xuan with a slightly worried expression.

“We mustn’t stand out too much. Let’s head there as well!” Zhang Xuan said.

With all of the citizens in the area heading toward the Alliance Atrium, they would surely catch the attention of the guards if

they turned around to leave now. While they were confident in their disguises, there was no need to stand out excessively and bring themselves needless risk.

In any case, it would be good for them to find out what was going on.

“Un!” Zhao Ya also swiftly came to realize the same logic, and nodding her head, she stuck close to Zhang Xuan and moved alongside him.

One thing that was worth noting was that there were really many experts in the Empire Alliance. As soon as the command was issued, powerful zhenqi pulsations swiftly suffused the area.

Mankind is indeed growing stronger collectively by the day under the leadership of the Master Teacher Pavilion! Zhang Xuan thought.

Most powers carried some level of apprehension toward the Master Teacher Pavilion, but it had to be said that wherever the Master Teacher Pavilion existed, the humans in the area would grow stronger and stronger, such that the powerful Otherworldly Demons would not dare to make a reckless move.

While the Empire Alliance was officially viewed as an individual governing entity, everyone was aware that the power that really held the final say was the Master Teacher Pavilion.

A command from the Master Teacher Pavilion would easily rally millions, such that even the authority and influence of the royal clans paled far in comparison.

Master teachers devoted their time and effort to grooming the later generations, passing down invaluable knowledge and lineages without any reservations. It was due to their selfless giving that the later generations were able to build on the knowledge of the previous generation and further the legacy of mankind.

At this point, Zhang Xuan suddenly recalled a renowned saying left behind by an ancient historian.

Had the heavens not sent Kong shi, the days would have been as bleak as eternal night!

The system of master teachers and the rules and regulations governing it had all been designed by Kong shi. Had it not been for his leadership, no one could have fathomed the plight that mankind would be in right now.

Perhaps, mankind might still have been living under the tyranny of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, living from day to day in bleak hopelessness.

With his own strength, Kong shi had managed to alter the course of history and changed the entire fate of mankind. Without a doubt, he had been a true sage through and through.

I was still thinking that I would be able to resolve my Innate Fetal Poison once I became a 9-star master teacher, but now... Zhang Xuan could not help but shake his head.

Based on the information that he had previously received, the Innate Fetal Poison in his body could be resolved once he became a 9-star master teacher. However, given that he had abandoned his identity as a master teacher... it seemed like he might just be unable to live past his thirties.

Even so, he had no regrets.

If he could not even protect his own students as a teacher, there was no point even if he could live forever!

“Teacher...”

While Zhang Xuan was deep in thought, he suddenly heard a voice in his ears. Turning his head over, he saw Zhao Ya looking at him with a deeply worried look.

“I’m fine,” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile as he turned his gaze forward.

Unknowingly, the two of them had arrived at the square in front of the Alliance Atrium.

The square was not supposed to be so big, but it seemed like some kind of expert had set up a Spatial Formation that expanded the square to be large enough to house the entire city without it being too cramped.



Similar to a folded space, but considerably cruder... Zhang Xuan thought as he assessed the Spatial Formation before him.

He could tell that it was likely the work for a 9-star formation master. It would appear to be an incredible feat to any other cultivator, but to Zhang Xuan, the spatial manipulation looked incredibly unrefined.

“Citizens of the Empire Alliance!”

A short moment after they found a position within the square, a resounding voice suddenly echoed in the air, traveling into the ears of every single person standing around.

“The reason I had everyone gather here today is because the Master Teacher Pavilion has an important announcement to make. Now, allow me to invite a master teacher from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters up here!”

Everyone turned to the center of the square, and very soon, they saw an old man wearing a master teacher robe floating in midair. There was a deep frown on his face, and he exuded a powerful aura.

He was a half 9-star master teacher. While he had yet to become a full-fledged 9-star master teacher, he was more than enough to be considered one of the top experts in the Empire Alliance.

Huala!

The old man flicked his wrist and took out a scroll. He unrolled it gently, and a brilliant light immediately burst into the sky. Following which, a heavy, authoritative aura weighed down on the crowd in the square.

“That’s a Master Teacher Decree... What are they planning to do?” Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up.

He recognized the scroll that the old man had unrolled—it was a Master Teacher Decree. It was the most authoritative command from the Master Teacher Pavilion, so it would never be used easily. He had never thought that he would see it just after entering the Empire Alliance City.

Furthermore, for it to be personally relayed by a half 9-star master teacher... what was going on?

# 1510 Fifth Acknowledgement of Celestial Master Teacher

Huala!

Amid Zhang Xuan's doubt, two massive characters floated up from the opened scroll, and they covered the entire sky with an air of valiance.

“Arrest Warrant?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

Those two characters were the words ‘Arrest Warrant’ written in an ancient script. What could that mean?

While Zhang Xuan was still in shock, he heard an exclamation from the crowd around him. “Could the Master Teacher Pavilion be placing an arrest warrant on someone?”

Zhang Xuan could not help but ask, “What does that mean?”

“Based on what I know, if someone who has committed a heinous crime is on the run, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters can release an arrest warrant to have that person apprehended. Usually, once the arrest warrant is released, that person is done for because there's no way to escape from it! Any locations that have a Master Teacher Pavilion will surely receive the arrest warrant, so there's absolutely no way the wanted person could escape arrest! But ever since the founding of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, the arrest warrant has been issued less than ten times...”

This...

Hearing the explanation, Zhang Xuan's eyelids twitched a little as an ominous premonition surfaced in his mind.

Could it be...

Before he could finish formulating his thoughts, a deep voice boomed across the air

“8-star Master Teacher Zhang Xuan has disrespected his seniors by disguising as a high-rank master teacher. He has

willfully caused great destruction in the Zhang Clan, wreaked havoc in the Sanctum of Sages, and kidnapped the young court chief and leveled countless buildings of the Glacier Plain Court. In view of the atrocities that he has committed, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters has decided to place an arrest warrant on him. This is his soul aura and his appearance. Anyone who finds him can report him to the local Master Teacher Pavilion, and once the news is verified, the informant will be awarded one hundred pinnacle spirit stones!”

“100 pinnacle spirit stones?”

“Just how desperate is the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to capture him?”

“Destroying the Zhang Clan, wreaking havoc in the Sanctum of Sages, and kidnapping the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court... Has he lost his mind?”

“Wait, doesn’t that mean that the Zhang Clan, Sanctum of Sages, and Glacier Plain Court all failed to capture him?”

“Just who is that Zhang Xuan to wield such formidable capabilities...”

...

A huge commotion broke out amid the crowd as looks of belief surfaced all around.

Those three powers symbolized the top echelons of the Master Teacher Continent, and yet, an 8-star master teacher had actually managed to cause trouble in their home turf and get away scot-free, forcing the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to put out an arrest warrant on him.

Just what kind of formidable capabilities did Zhang Xuan wield to be able to pull off something like that?

“Teacher...” Standing beside Zhang Xuan, Zhao Ya’s face turned ghastly pale upon hearing those words, and she hurriedly turned to look at him with concern.

She knew that her teacher had rushed over from afar in order to save her, but she did not think that he would actually cause such a huge commotion for her.

Zhang Xuan's lips also twitched a little upon hearing the decree.

To be honest, while he did cause quite a bit of destruction, those three powers, the Zhang Clan, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court, also held irrefutable blame.

The First Elder of the Zhang Clan, Zhang Wuheng, had tried to kill him, which eventually resulted in the ensuing tragedy.

Zhan shi of the Sanctum of Sages had forcefully attempted to stop him and hand him over to the Zhang Clan, and it had been in retaliation to their hostility that a huge part of the Sanctum of Sages had ended up being destroyed.

As for the Glacier Plain Court, they had actually forced their young court chief to resort to depraved arts, and not to mention, Zhao Ya was his student, so how could his actions be considered kidnapping.

Yet, to think that they would be so shameless as to report this matter to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters and push for the issuing of such a decree...

All he wanted to do was to resolve his Innate Fetal Poison and live a peaceful life as a teacher.

Why was this simple wish of his just so difficult to achieve?

With the issuing of this decree, the entire Master Teacher Continent would swiftly know of him, and he would no longer be able to live quietly.

This was something that he absolutely did not wish to see.

“Teacher, they said that you... destroyed the Zhang Clan and wreaked havoc in the Sanctum of Sages... What's going on?”

At this point, Zhao Ya could not keep her cool any longer.

Ever since she regained consciousness, her teacher had made sure to steer clear from mentioning what had happened earlier, so till now, she had still been unsure of what the exact circumstances were.

She had willingly left with her teacher, so how did it become her teacher kidnapping her instead?

Furthermore, the leveling of countless buildings of the Glacier Plain Court... Considering the limited cultivation of her teacher, surely there was no way he could have pulled something like that off.

Knowing that he could not hide this matter from Zhao Ya anymore, Zhang Xuan shook his head helplessly. "This isn't the place to speak. I'll tell you everything after we find a quiet place later on..."

There were experts all around them, so zhenqi telepathy and the sort were not too safe. It would be better for them to find a safe location, where he would set up an isolation barrier, before explaining everything.

Otherwise, he would only put this student of his in greater unease if he continued keeping silent about everything.

"Alright!" Knowing that they were not in an appropriate place for them to speak as well, Zhao Ya nodded.

Soon, after the old man was done announcing the Master Teacher Decree, the crowd in the square dispersed. Suppressing his cultivation, Zhang Xuan brought Zhao Ya toward the suburbs of the Empire Alliance City.

He had been thinking of entering the Blacksmith Guild, but from the looks of it, it was fortunate that he had not.

Otherwise, he would have been caught as soon as he walked in.

The two of them quickly left the Empire Alliance City and entered a relatively peaceful valley. Zhang Xuan set up an isolation barrier around the area and checked once more that there was no one around before he began explaining everything to Zhao Ya.

From the conflict in the Zhang Clan, the teleportation at the Sanctum of Sages, to the lightning tribulation at the Glacier Plain Court, before Zhang Xuan could finish his story, Zhao Ya's eyes were already widened to the brim. She was completely dumbfounded by what she had just heard.

She had thought that she was already very bold, but compared to her teacher, it seemed like her boldness was only child's

play.

Those were three major powers on the Master Teacher Continent! Just getting on the bad side of any one of them was enough to render any cultivator so uneasy that they would not be able to eat well or rest well. Yet, her teacher actually still had the guts to bring her into the Empire Alliance City and even listen to the Master Teacher Decree in person.

“Teacher, it’s all my fault. I shouldn’t have sent that message to you...” Zhao Ya could not help but bite her lips in regret.

It was for her that her teacher had ended up offending so many powers at once. Otherwise, given his capabilities, he surely would have been highly regarded by the Master Teacher Pavilion, and he would not have ended up in such a position.

“It’s fine!” Zhang Xuan waved his hand.

He had intended to wreak havoc in the Zhang Clan anyway, so he did not mind souring his relationship with them.

As for the Sanctum of Sages, that was even less of a problem. He was the sanctum head candidate, and he had already unlocked two seals on the Sanctum Head Token so far. As long as he could find suitable optic art manuals to perfect the Divine Eyes of the Ninth Netherworld, he would be able to unlock the final seal. By then, he would be able to reveal his identity, and the problem would be resolved by itself.

Regarding the Glacier Plain Court, given what they had done to his student, putting aside destroying them once, he would have no qualms with destroying them a second time or even a third!

So, the matters that had left the crowd lowering their jaws in shock were actually nothing much to him at all!

It was just that with his ‘notoriety’ spreading far and wide, it would be hard for him to maintain a low profile.

“Teacher, with the arrest warrant put on you, the master teacher rank that you have earned with great difficulty will be completely put to waste,” Zhao Ya exclaimed anxiously.

Given that even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had gotten involved, there was no doubt that her teacher would be stripped of his master teacher rank. She had seen with her own eyes how her teacher had advanced from an ordinary teacher to a master teacher and the painstaking effort that he had put in so as to scale the master teacher ladder. For it all to be ruined just like that...

Putting aside her teacher, even she felt indignant on his behalf!

“What’s the point of remaining as a master teacher if I had to abandon what I stand for? As long as I stand by my values as a teacher, what does losing a mere title matter?” Zhang Xuan shook his head as he reassured his student.

A moment later, he suddenly froze on the spot.

The words that he had said to Zhao Ya had made him realize something.

All along, he had thought that his Innate Fetal Poison would not be resolved if he lost his title as a master teacher.

But back in Kong shi’s earlier years, the master teacher occupation still had not come into existence.

If so, how did he resolve the Innate Fetal Poison?

What was it that defined one as a master teacher? If one acted and behaved as a master teacher but lacked the recognition from the Master Teacher Pavilion, would that mean that they were not a master teacher anymore?

Ultimately, the Master Teacher Pavilion was just a formality. As long as one embraced the values of a teacher, why should they care about how others view them?

Did it really matter that much whether a master teacher wore a master teacher emblem or not?

As long as anyone saw themselves as a teacher and conducted themselves as one, even if they did not don the master teacher robe or have the recognition of the Master Teacher Pavilion, they would still be a true teacher!

Hong long!



As soon as this thought emerged in Zhang Xuan's mind, his body suddenly stiffened. A unique surge of power descended from the heavens and shrouded his body.

The fifth acknowledgement of Celestial Master Teacher had begun!

# 1511 The Frenzied Master Teacher Pavilion Headquarters 1

The Elder Assembly of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

The deputy pavilion master, Ren Qingyuan, was sitting at the main seat, browsing through the information that had just been sent over before directing a sweeping gaze over the room.

“Has the arrest warrant been announced in all of the major cities yet?”

A 9-star master teacher stood up, clasped his fist, and replied, “Reporting to Pavilion Master Ren, it has been all been announced. The news should spread all around the Master Teacher Continent within a single day. As soon as Zhang Xuan appears, the headquarters will receive the news immediately, and we will be able to mobilize our men to apprehend him!”

He was Elder Qu, the same 9-star master teacher whom Zhang Xuan had encountered in the Glacier Plain Court.

As soon as he returned to the headquarters from the Glacier Plain Court, he had reported everything to Ren Qingyuan. Otherwise, the Master Teacher Decree would not have been issued so quickly.

“Pavilion Master Ren, the Master Teacher Arrest Warrant is no small matter,” an elder remarked with a frown. “Ever since the founding of the Master Teacher Pavilion, it has only been used nine times to date. Zhang Xuan might be a little willful, but he’s still a master teacher. Furthermore, we haven’t gotten to the bottom of this matter yet. Isn’t it making a mountain out of a molehill to issue an arrest warrant so recklessly? I fear that such a course of action might diminish the authority and prestige of our Master Teacher Pavilion!”

“How is this making a mountain out of a molehill?” Upon hearing those words, Elder Qu flung his sleeves furiously and harrumphed. “Despite being an 8-star master teacher, Zhang Xuan has shown no respect for his elders at all. Not only did he cause great destruction at the Zhang Clan, Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court, he even had the audacity to attempt to pass off as Grand Elder Yang Xuan!

“On top of that, he has shown no remorse for his actions at all! He knew that I am from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, but he still dared to lay his hands on me! It would truly be diminishing the authority and prestige of our Master Teacher Pavilion if we let a person like him off the hook!”

Zhang Xuan possessed the ability to turn his zhenqi into lethal poison, command the power of lightning to unleash great destruction, and impeccably disguise himself as another person, and more importantly, his eye of discernment far surpassed that of any 9-star master teacher whom he had ever seen. If a person like him strayed from the path and devoted his strength to evil, even the Master Teacher Pavilion would have trouble controlling him!

It was necessary for them to deal with him as soon as possible, or else if he was left to his own devices, who knew how many more major powers would fall prey to his tyranny?

While Zhang Xuan did treat his injuries, for the sake of the greater good, they had to eliminate this unstable factor in the world!

“I understand where you are coming from, but I have looked into his records and found that he has progressed up from the Tianxuan Kingdom to where he is now within just the short span of a year. During this period of time, he has successfully crashed two Master Teacher Pavilions and cleared the Tower of Master Teachers. Not only so, he even pulled off an Empire Building, successfully raising the Xuanyuan Kingdom to an Unranked Empire. When he was in the Qingyuan Empire, he eliminated the Qingtian Emperor, saving the locals from an impending crisis. If we capture him just because of the Zhang Clan, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court

reporting him and even issue the most authoritative Master Teacher Arrest Warrant after him, isn't that going overboard?" the elder from before replied with a deep frown.

Zhang Xuan's achievements were all recorded within the archive of the Master Teacher Pavilion, so it was not too difficult for the headquarters to look into them.

"I agree with Elder Wu's viewpoint," another elder added. "The Master Teacher Pavilion values young talents, and those who wield great capabilities do have a tendency to be candid and eccentric. While Zhang Xuan often contravenes the laws of the Master Teacher Pavilion and causes trouble, it's an undeniable fact that he has contributed greatly to mankind. In fact, he has countless students throughout the world, especially in the Qingyuan Empire. I don't think that it's appropriate to place an arrest warrant on him just like that!

"Also, we shouldn't forget that he's the teacher of the Progeny of Combat, Zheng Yang. I think that such a course of action could cause disharmony within the ranks of the Master Teacher Pavilion!"

"So what if he's the teacher of the Progeny of Combat?" Elder Qu sneered coldly. "The Combat Master Hall has provided him with a vast amount of resources, and the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters even lent him the 'Hall of Spring and Autumn' for his use. Does he intend to turn against us over a mere teacher who brought him around while he was younger?"

"You know what that's not what I mean. Zheng Yang is unlikely to turn against us over that matter, but that doesn't mean that he wouldn't take this matter to heart. The Progeny of Combat is the greatest fighting prowess of the Master Teacher Pavilion, and this incident could very well come back to bite us in the future," the elder from before replied.

"Bite us? Humph! Everything that he has was bestowed to him by the Master Teacher Pavilion! If he's going to take a matter as minor at this to heart, what do we need him for?" Elder Qu sneered. "We can't allow such a twisted culture to seep into the Master Teacher Pavilion, or else it could lead to severe consequences in the future!"

“You are distorting the facts to your convenience!” Elder Wu argued. “As the person who discovered him in the Tianxuan Kingdom, Zhang Xuan surely means a great deal to Zheng Yang. If he could remain nonchalant after hearing of Zhang Xuan’s plight, who would dare leave the Combat Master Hall in the hands of a heartless man?”

“Since he can’t be trusted, just find another person to replace him then!” Elder Qu exclaimed. “Elder Wu, you are an elder of the Master Teacher Pavilion, not the Combat Master Hall. Don’t lose sight of your own allegiance...”

“Enough!” Frustrated by the squabbling duo, Deputy Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan shook his head and interjected.

“I have considered both your points of view. It’s indeed the blessing of mankind for such a talented individual to emerge from the younger generation, but... we can’t just ignore the complaints from the Zhang Clan, the Glacier Plain Court, and the Sanctum of Sages. Zhang Xuan’s actions have clearly breached the bottom line of the Master Teacher Pavilion. If we don’t deal with him sternly, we might set a bad precedent. Other powers might learn from his example and exploit their strength as well to commit undesirable deeds!

“You should also know of the crisis that we are facing. This is the most perilous era mankind has been in for several dozen millennia. Humanity must stay united as one in order to face the ordeal ahead of us, or else it could really mean the end of us...”

“This...” Hearing Ren Qingyuan’s words, the crowd fell silent.

A worried expression surfaced on Elder Wu’s face as he asked, “Pavilion Master Ren, regarding that news... is it really true?”

“Indubitably so!” Ren Qingyuan nodded.

Recalling the intelligence that he had received, Elder Wu could not help but shake his head in disbelief. “As leaders of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, the Otherworldly Demon Emperors wouldn’t easily put themselves in a risky position. What does he intend to do by sneaking into the Master Teacher

Continent? Is he not afraid of being surrounded and hunted down by us?”

“It isn’t just him; there are also a couple others who came here along with him. Is there even a need to guess their intentions?” Ren Qingyuan shook his head.

“I know that there has been some movement from that place recently; there have already been two disturbances so far. However, it’s still uncertain at this point whether that place will surface or not. Furthermore, we have gone to great lengths to keep the news confidential, but even so, how did they still manage to catch wind of it?” Elder Wu asked doubtfully.

Ren Qingyuan sighed. “At this rate, it’s just a matter of time before the Master Teacher Continent is embroiled in bloodshed. During a time like this, it’s more important than ever for us to placate the major powers so as to ensure that our forces remain united!

“I believe all of you should understand what the matrimony between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan represents, so I won’t waste your time talking about that. However, you all should be aware that the Sanctum of Sages contains the wills of the old sages, and they would be able to point out a direction for us.

“Not too long ago, I got into contact with Sage Kui’s will, and he informed me that he has found a new sanctum head who is incredibly talented, and he assured me that the new sanctum head will be able to mature and become a strong ally to us before that matter occurs. I have liaised with Zhan shi over that matter as well, and he has informed me that the new sanctum head is likely Yang shi’s direct disciple, Feng Ziyi!

“So, we can’t afford to fall into disharmony with those two powers at this point in time. As for the Glacier Plain Court, all of you here should know how important the Pure Yin Body is in establishing connections with the Firmament.

“Given how Zhang Xuan has gotten on the bad side of all three powers at once, if we don’t deal with this matter promptly, how can we appease them? In the first place, as a deputy pavilion master, I am already lacking in legitimacy and

authority. If something happens at this point, putting aside me, even Yang shi won't be able to resolve the conflict! Unless..."

At this point, Ren Qingyuan's gaze suddenly became a little distant as admiration rippled in the depths of his eyes. "... the legendary Celestial Master Teacher, as well as the legitimate head of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, appears!"

"Celestial Master Teacher? How could it be that easy to receive the acknowledgement of the heavens? For several dozen millenniums, Kong shi has been the only one to be able to do so!"

"Indeed. It doesn't seem too likely for a Celestial Master Teacher to suddenly appear at this point in time..."

Many of the elders shook their heads wryly.

"If a Celestial Master Teacher appears right now, I will kneel down and kowtow to him right away, acknowledging him as my teacher!" Elder Qu harrumphed.

"Acknowledge him as your teacher? If there's really a Celestial Master Teacher among us right now, I doubt that you are qualified to be his student!" Elder Wu shot a disdainful glance at Elder Qu.

"Humph! Even if I'm unqualified to become his disciple, I will be more than content to serve as his subordinate!" Elder Qu replied.

# 1512 The Frenzied Master Teacher Pavilion Headquarters 2

Celestial Master Teacher, a person who had received the acknowledgement of the heavens and was qualified to stand on equal grounds as Kong shi. The appearance of such a person would surely be a turning point in history. That person would become the new leader of the Master Teacher Pavilion, and there would be no master teacher who would dare disobey their commands.

Who would not want to acknowledge such a great figure as their teacher?

9-star master teachers might seem to be in an incredibly prestigious position in the eyes of outsiders, but to a Celestial Master Teacher, they would not mean anything at all!

Back then, of Kong shi's three thousand students, which of them had not reached a proficiency of 9-star in their occupation? Even his listening-in students were of 9-star proficiency.

Elder Qu might want to become the student of such a person, but whether the other party would be willing to take him in or not was questionable!

“However, it seems like the Celestial Master Teacher is just a legend!” Hearing Elder Qu's remark, Ren Qingyuan shook his head and sighed. “If a Celestial Master Teacher could emerge among us now, with their prestige and power, they would surely be able to swiftly unite the entire human race, such that even if the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe rose once more, they would not dare provoke us!”

The other master teachers in the room swiftly nodded in agreement.



The ancient era had contained the darkest times of the human race. Back then, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had wielded absolute power, and they had dominated all other races. The powers that they formed had all been as strong as the current Master Teacher Pavilion, and yet, with his strength, Kong shi had been able to vanquish the darkness and bring the light of hope back to mankind.

For this reason, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was extremely fearful of Kong shi. Just the mention of his name was enough to leave them in a state of unease.

If another Kong shi rose among them once more, mankind would surely be able to rise to new heights, reaching an unprecedented altitude!

“Forget it, that’s just wishful thinking; there’s no point holding onto such thoughts. The reason I was able to become the deputy pavilion master is just because I am slightly stronger than the rest. I also know that my influence is still far from enough. The Master Teacher Pavilion might be able to tower above the Zhang Clan, the Glacier Plain Court, and the other major powers for the time being, but if we fail to deal with this matter appropriately, we could stand to lose their trust. By then, even if they still dare not defy us openly, they could still pull some strings in the shadows to make things hard for us, and that could easily culminate into a tragedy for mankind!”

Ren Qingyuan swept his gaze across the faces in the room before continuing on. “Kong shi once said that a person should make it a habit to reflect on their actions, and I have always kept his teachings in mind, not daring to forget them. While Zhang Xuan did achieve quite a number of contributions for mankind, his deeds are nothing compared to what the Zhang Clan, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court have done. In this situation, the only thing that I can do is pick the lesser evil.

“Alright, there’s no need to argue over this matter anymore; I have already made up my mind. About the matter concerning Zhang Xuan, many of you have spoken up on his behalf, and I am also of the view that he should be given a second chance, so if any of you notice him, don’t harm him for the time being.

We'll try to convince the three powers to lay down their grudges with him and settle the matter peacefully, and if that works out, that will be for the best. Otherwise... we'll just have to see!"

"You're right, Pavilion Master Ren. That's probably the best that we can do for now..."

Many of the elders in the room nodded in agreement.

They had only considered from their perspectives as master teachers, but they had failed to think of the implications that could arise out of the decision. Fortunately, the deputy pavilion master had taken the bigger picture into consideration, thus avoiding a potential tragedy. Otherwise, if the Master Teacher Pavilion worked as it wished, without caring about the other parties involved, the others might deem their actions to be willful and unjust, and that would cause them to lose the support of the other powers.

Given how powerful and influential the Master Teacher Pavilion was, that would not have mattered much under normal circumstances. However, with the looming crisis, it would be foolish to allow a fallout to occur.

"It's Zhang Xuan's fortune that Pavilion Master Ren is willing to show such magnanimity to him. However, judging from Zhang Wuheng, Zhan shi, and You Ruoxin's attitude toward him... it doesn't seem like reconciliation is too likely!" Elder Qu shook his head.

"Once Zhang Xuan is found, even if we don't make a move, those three powers will surely swallow him whole..."

Boom!

Before Elder Qu could finish his words, a mysterious power suddenly surged into the room, and the entire hall began trembling intensely, as if it would collapse at any moment.

"What's happening?" Alarmed, Pavilion Master Ren jolted to his feet.

Wu shi and the others also swiftly looked in the direction that the surge of power had originated from.

A thought arose in Elder Qu's mind, and his face twitched in horror. It can't be that Zhang Xuan has managed to make his way over to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, can it?

Surely, he could not have the audacity to do something as insolent as that, right?

But if it was not him, who else could it be?

Due to the great power shrouding the Master Teacher Pavilion, it had stood firmly for the past several dozen millenniums. It was hard to think of any other culprit.

"It's coming from the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall. Let's head over to take a look!" Ren Qingyuan swiftly determined the direction of the tremors' source and headed out.

The other elders followed behind him.

As 9-star master teachers, it took them just the blink of an eye to arrive before the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall. They pushed the door open and headed in.

Hualalalala!

As soon as they entered, they saw countless ancestral tablets all around the room trembling nonstop, as if they were being attacked by some tremendous force.

The energy that had caused the entire Master Teacher Pavilion to tremble uncontrollably had originated from there.

"The predecessors are trembling in fear? What's going on?" Elder Qu's lips quivered as he nearly fainted in fright from the sight.

Wu shi and the others also hurriedly scanned their surroundings to check if they had been attacked by enemies.

"It isn't an enemy attack, but..." As realization of what the trembling ancestral tablets could possibly signify struck Ren Qingyuan, his eyes widened in utter shock as his words trailed to a halt, seemingly unable to continue on anymore.

Hearing Ren Qingyuan's words, Wu shi was the first to realize what the other party was thinking, and his body began trembling in disbelief. "If it isn't an enemy attack, the

trembling of the ancestral tablets would mean that... C-could it be..."

Hong long long!

Before he could finish his words, the tablets in the room finally reached their limits and collapsed to the ground simultaneously, as if they were bowing earnestly to pay their respects to an esteemed figure.

"That's the Salutation of the Sages..." Elder Qu also swiftly comprehended what was going on, and his eyebrows began twitching wildly.

Those who were honored in the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters were all outstanding predecessors who had wielded great power in their era and contributed immensely to mankind. The fact that even Ren Qingyuan was unqualified to have his tablet erected within the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall after his death was sufficient to show just what kind of legacies those figures had left on the Master Teacher Continent.

There was only one type of person in the world who could make master teachers of their standing simultaneously bow respectfully to offer their salutations.

Kacha!

While the crowd was still trying to come to terms with what was going on, at the very center of the room, Kong shi's sculpture suddenly floated up and clasped his fist respectfully in a certain direction. A slight smile slowly emerged onto his face, but at the same time, a hint of a crack suddenly appeared at the bottom of the sculpture. It swiftly engulfed the entire sculpture, and eventually...

Huala!

It collapsed into rubble.

"Salutations of the Sages, Kong shi's Greeting... That's the mark of a Celestial Master Teacher!"

At this point, the truth had already become apparent to all of the master teachers in the room. It was hard to tell whether it

was out of agitation or shock, but every single one of their faces was ghastly pale.

As 9-star master teachers, they were aware of the significance of the various phenomena that would occur in the Master Teacher Pavilion.

It was just a moment ago that they had lamented over the lack of a Celestial Master Teacher to lead them through the crisis that they were in, but the next moment, they learned that there was actually a Celestial Master Teacher among them. Could there be a bigger fluctuation of highs and lows than this in the world?

Boom!

After the collapse of Kong shi's sculpture, it seemed like the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall had reached the limits of its tolerance, and it swiftly collapsed inward. However, too overwhelmed by shock, the elders simply stood motionless on the spot, allowing the roof to collapse freely on their heads.

With their level of cultivation, the bricks falling on their heads felt no different from mere cotton.

Ren Qingyuan's eyes lit up as he clenched his fists tightly together.

"There's hope for mankind! With the emergence of a Celestial Master Teacher, the Master Teacher Pavilion will rise to the top of the world once more!" Ren Qingyuan burst into laughter as tears of agitation streamed down his cheeks.

As the deputy pavilion master, despite lacking in prestige, he still had the responsibility to unite the world to defend against threats. As such, the stress that he had been put under over the years was truly unimaginable. With the emergence of a Celestial Master Teacher, he would finally be relieved of the pressure that he had been placed under!

Ren Qingyuan turned around and commanded, "Master teachers, hear my command! Find the source of the power, locate the whereabouts of the Celestial Master Teacher, and bring him back right away to inherit the position as the head of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters!"

“Yes!”

The 9-star master teachers clasped their fists simultaneously, acknowledging the order. The exact saying from Kong shi goes, “A person should always reflect on their actions from three aspects: Have I tried my best when helping others? Have I treated others earnestly? Have I reviewed on the knowledge that others have taken the effort to impart to me?” But over time, the phrase has evolved to a more general meaning to prompt a person to often reflect on their actions.

# 1513 The Return of the Progeny of Combat 1

“Wait a moment...”

Right after issuing the previous command, Ren Qingyuan suddenly thought of something, and he hurriedly raised his hand and clenched his fist.

Huala!

The surrounding space immediately solidified to form an isolation barrier.

The Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters were protected by a powerful formation, making it difficult for any outsiders to listen in on what was happening within. Yet, despite the defensive measures, Ren Qingyuan was still prompted to form an isolation barrier to further ensure the confidentiality of the matter, which went to show how seriously he took this matter.

“The Celestial Master Teacher concerns the ultimate fate of mankind, so this matter must be kept absolutely confidential. I suspect that the sudden arrival of that person in the Master Teacher Continent might be tied to this matter; he might have noticed something, which prompted him to make this move. That fellow has always been skilled in disguise, so our scouts haven’t been able to find any traces of him yet. If news concerning the emergence of a Celestial Master Teacher reaches his ears, and he manages to find the Celestial Master Teacher ahead of us, things could really get troublesome!” Ren Qingyuan said with a grim look on his face.

“So, I want all of you to head out under the pretext of looking for Zhang Xuan. Make sure to put on a sufficiently convincing act to show the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court that we are determined to bring them justice. At the same time, however, you are to discreetly search for the Celestial Master Teacher, and once you find him, don’t rush into acknowledging him. Instead, protect him from the shadows.

While he might be the Celestial Master Teacher, it is unlikely for him to have grown to Kong shi's level yet, or else we would have already heard of him!"

Celestial Master Teacher only represented an individual who had received the acknowledgement of the heavens. It was a symbol of character and talent rather than a gauge of one's absolute strength.

Even Kong shi had not been born strong; he had advanced a step at a time before maturing to become the great man he had been.

If the Celestial Master Teacher had already matured into a formidable expert, he would have already made a name for himself in the world, and there was no way that Ren Qingyuan, as the deputy pavilion master, would not have heard of him.

"We understand!" The master teachers nodded in acknowledgement.

"Un, I'll repeat it once more. The most important thing now is finding the Celestial Master Teacher and protecting him!" Ren Qingyuan emphasized with a wave of his hand. "Also, regarding the matter concerning the Celestial Master Teacher, I want all of you to maintain a silent restraint on it. Don't even mention it in passing among yourselves! I won't hesitate to strip you of your master teacher license and banish you to the Subterranean Gallery for life should you dare contravene this silent restraint!"

"We understand, Pavilion Master Ren!" the master teachers replied resoundingly.

Hula!

After the orders had been relayed, the master teachers swiftly scattered into the surroundings from the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall, leaving only Ren Qingyuan behind.

Ren Qingyuan hesitated for a moment before flicking his wrist, and a couple of puppets appeared before him. These puppets were of short stature, and they did not wield too much



strength. However, their extraordinary long arms and their ten-fingered hands were particularly eye-catching.

As soon as the puppets materialized, without the slightest word of delay, they immediately scattered around the Teacher Acknowledgement Hall and got to work. In less than an hour, the collapsed rubble was restored to its original glory. Even the ancestral tablets had been placed neatly back onto their respective positions, as if nothing had happened at all.

After collecting all of his puppets, Ren Qingyuan gazed into the distance with a deep look in his eyes. Some time later, he exhaled deeply and muttered, "Celestial Master Teacher... it seems like the heavens are looking after us!"

...

This time, the unique surge of energy lingered around Zhang Xuan for a longer time than before.

Zhao Ya knew that a sudden epiphany must have struck her teacher, so she chose not to interrupt him. She took a seat not too far away and looked at him silently.

During that period, Zhang Xuan remained completely motionless on the spot.

Unlike previous times, he did not pass out, and there was not any peculiar phenomenon either. He felt as if he was swimming in the ocean of time, unable to accurately discern the flow of time around him.

Under the tempering of the unique aura, his Soul Depth soared furiously. His advancement this time around was far greater than any of the previous times, surging from the initial 25.1 to 29.1.

For master teachers, Soul Depth was usually separated in intervals of three. With a Soul Depth of 29.1, Zhang Xuan was already at the level of the most pinnacle 9-star master teacher!

With the rise in his Soul Depth, his analytical capabilities were further enhanced, allowing him to peer deeper into an issue and look further ahead.

Many things that he had been unable to make sense of or unable to draw connections with suddenly cleared up in his mind. At the same time, his analysis of the many cultivation techniques and battle techniques in his mind also became much more thorough, as if he was suddenly able to look right into their crux.

Even though I have never cultivated any Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm cultivation techniques before, I was still able to roughly figure my way forward from the cultivation techniques I have gathered in the past. Furthermore, Zhao Ya is my student, and her energy stems from the same origin as mine, so I was able to gather the momentum required for a breakthrough under her infusion of energy, thus reaching my current level.

Previously, Zhang Xuan had still been a little perplexed as to how he was able to abruptly push for a breakthrough back when he was still at the Glacier Plain Court. Back then, he did not think too much into it, and the impetus to breakthrough simply came perfectly naturally to him. However, with the rise in his Soul Depth, the veil on this mystery was finally removed.

Zhang Xuan shook his head and sighed. It's a pity that I'm still unable to think of a feasible way to reconstruct Zhao Ya's meridians.

Even though he had managed to form mental connections between the many fields of knowledge that he had learned, he was still completely clueless as to how he could help Zhao Ya reconstruct her meridians.

From the looks of it, he only had his current plan to rely on—heading to the Blacksmith Guild and seeing if there was any suitable material that could be used to replace her meridians.

Hu!

Exhaling a mouthful of turbid air, Zhang Xuan opened his eyes.

“Teacher, are you done cultivating?” Zhao Ya asked with a hint of doubt in her voice.

She had thought that her teacher's cultivation would surge after this round of cultivation, but nothing had happened at all. There was not the slightest change in his cultivation that she could perceive. If she had to point out something that was different about him, it would be that he appeared more spirited than before, and his eyes had grown deeper and more unreadable.

"Yes." Zhang Xuan nodded.

"I see!" Zhao Ya heaved a sigh of relief.

"We'll be heading back to the Empire Alliance City. This time, we're going to resolve the problem concerning your meridians!" said Zhang Xuan as he stood up.

"Teacher, the entire continent is looking to capture you. It's too dangerous, so let's not head there anymore..." Zhao Ya spoke up worriedly.

It had not been easy for them to leave the Empire Alliance City, yet her teacher actually wanted to head back there.

"Don't worry, even 9-star pinnacle master teachers would have trouble seeing through my disguise. I won't be in any danger," Zhang Xuan reassured with a smile.

With his fifth acknowledgement of Celestial Master Teacher, his Soul Depth had surged from 25.1 to 29.1, putting him amid the top even among 9-star pinnacle master teachers. Even if an expert of Elder Qu's caliber came over, the other party would still be unable to find the slightest discrepancy in his disguise, let alone figure out his true identity!

"However, your disguise is still a little lacking at the moment. Alright, I'll impart a physical body cultivation technique to you!"

While Zhang Xuan was able to disguise himself even from the discerning eyes of 9-star master teachers, due to Zhao Ya's lack of cultivation, while her disguise might still be able to fool the eyes of ordinary cultivators, the same could not be said about high-rank master teachers.

Due to the awakening of her Pure Yin Body, her appearance was simply too striking. Once her disguise was seen through,

it would not be too difficult for others to figure out their true identity.

“Physical body cultivation technique? Teacher, my meridians have collapsed completely. Will I... still be able to practice it?” Zhao Ya asked apprehensively.

Despite the term, physical body cultivation technique usually required the infusion of zhenqi in order to temper one’s body into a state that no ordinary mortal would be able to achieve. Given that Zhao Ya had already lost all of her meridians, she did not think that she would be able to practice a physical body cultivation technique.

“I have altered the cultivation technique so that you will be able to practice it even without using your meridians. However, you’ll have to practice it in accompaniment with my silver needles... Here is the cultivation technique manual!” Zhang Xuan raised his finger and tapped it lightly on Zhao Ya’s head, and knowledge swiftly surged into the latter’s mind.

Zhao Ya spent roughly two hours looking through the cultivation technique manual before she was finally able to grasp it, and her eyes lit up in excitement.

Her teacher’s physical body cultivation technique was truly formidable. Compared to that, all of the Glacier Plain Court’s physical body cultivation techniques seemed like trash picked right off the street.

“Alright, let’s begin!” Seeing that Zhao Ya was done going through the manual, Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist, and innumerable silver needles flew out from his hands, piercing all over Zhao Ya’s body.

The surges of Heaven’s Path zhenqi infused in each of the silver needles nourished her body, enhancing her strength.

...

While Zhang Xuan was in the midst of helping Zhao Ya cultivate the Heaven’s Path Golden Art, at the entrance of a sealed chamber of the Combat Master Hall, a large group of anxious-looking combat masters were gathered.

Today was the very day that the Progeny of Combat would finally come out of seclusion!

# 1514 The Return of the Progeny of Combat 2

“The Progeny of Combat is about to come out. Have you thought about how you are going to report that matter to him?”

An elder broke the silence in the surroundings.

“Let’s just report it straight to him as it is. What’s there to hesitate over?” a valiant middle-aged man dressed in a full armor said with a wave of his hand.

“Report it straight to him as it is? It’s not as if you don’t know the personality of our Progeny of Combat! Back then, despite the heavy injuries that he had sustained after clearing the Dragon Gate Formation, he still gritted his teeth tenaciously and held on just so that he could issue his first Progeny of Combat Decree to command all of the combat masters to treat his teacher with the utmost respect,” the elder replied with a frown. “Just think about the mess that has occurred! If we report the matter as it is to him, given how highly he regards his teacher, do you think that he’ll be able to remain rational? If he kicks up a fuss, it could end up utter chaos!”

“The Sanctum of Sages is a subsidiary of the Master Teacher Pavilion, so there’s no need for us to worry about them. The problem lies mainly with the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court. Those two might be major powers on the Master Teacher Continent, but our Combat Master Hall hasn’t grown so weak that we have to defer and explain our actions to them yet!” The armored middle-aged man harrumphed coldly.

“Those powers have grown too accustomed to the peace, and they are already starting to rot on the inside. If not for the sweat and blood of our combat masters, do you think that they would be able to enjoy the prosperity and peace that they have today?”

“Elder Meng is right! When has our Combat Master Hall needed to explain our actions to others?” another middle-aged

man remarked with a fling of his sleeves. “We have always used our strength to speak! Back then, the Soul Oracle Guild commanded countless Soulless Metal Humanoid, but they still ended up being completely eradicated by our forces! If I have to say, the Master Teacher Pavilion has simply been too soft on them. It’s because we give them so much leeway that they had the guts to question the judgement of the Master Teacher Pavilion... If it was me, I would have just ordered them to back down, and should they dare to refute my words, I would force them into submission!”

The elder shook his head and replied, “They are master teachers, not punks or tyrants. The reason the Master Teacher Pavilion has remained standing even after several dozen millenniums is by the virtue of its actions and not through forceful subjugation. If we force everyone into submission using brute force, how can we truly gain the respect of others?”

A middle-aged man standing not too far away sneered coldly. “Respect? Do you think we really need to win their respect? The people nowadays are so accustomed to peace that they have already lost their sense of danger and the valiance in their blood. They have already forgotten the wretched suffering of our predecessors under the despotism of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

“All they are interested in doing now is scrutinizing every last action committed by the master teachers so as to find lapses in their virtues. The moment they dig up the smallest of things, they cook up the largest of storms, as if a small lapse in one’s virtue will bring about the end of the world. Similarly, once the Master Teacher Pavilion makes a decision that is unpopular among them, they claim that the Master Teacher Pavilion has lost the virtue that it once embraced and is descending into corruption and nepotism.

“Just take the matter with Zhang Shi for example—it’s actually not a big deal at all. However, just because it was committed by a master teacher, people will question the credibility and the principles of the Master Teacher Pavilion if he isn’t severely punished, and rumors about how the Master Teacher

Pavilion is no longer the noble organization it used to be will start spreading around. But have they forgotten about the contributions that Zhang Shi has made for mankind? For one, he single-handedly destroyed an entire Otherworldly Demon Emperor's lineage, and that in itself should be more than enough to make up for all of his faults!"

This was simply how the world worked. The common populace was ignorant and cared not about how much one had contributed to the world. All they were interested in were the faults one had committed, and they would exaggerate it just to fulfill their desire for drama.

For example, based on what they knew, despite the huge fuss caused by the three powers, all Zhang Xuan had done was destroy a couple of buildings and formations. In truth, he had not claimed a single person's life yet.

However, for some reason, the news that had been announced came across in a very different manner. It was shaped in a way that made it seem as if he had exploited his strength to willfully wreak havoc and destroyed everything in his path.

And if the Master Teacher Pavilion could not inflict severe punishment on that black sheep among them, then perhaps they might be unworthy of remaining as the leaders of the Master Teacher Continent.

The elder cut into the middle-aged man's words and said, "I understand what you have said, but the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters have already announced their decision. Whatever decision they choose to make, it's not our place to question it. All we have to think about is how we should report this matter to the Progeny of Combat!"

He also knew that much, but what could he do?

The purpose of the Master Teacher Pavilion was to protect mankind, so even if they were not understood by the rest of the world, they still could not watch as the entire world was reduced to ruins!

That was the inescapable responsibility and burden that they shouldered.



The crowd fell silent.

Despite the short time that they had spent together, they had come to know of the feelings that the Progeny of Combat had for his teacher. If he learned that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had issued an arrest warrant on him, he would surely fly into a state of fury!

By then, none of them would be able to predict what he would do in response to that!

It was not easy for a Progeny of Combat to emerge from their Combat Master Hall, so they could not bear to allow anything to happen to him!

“Elder Cheng, didn’t you say that you have thought of a solution to that?” another middle-aged man asked the elder.

The crowd swiftly gathered their eyes upon the elder.

“The solution that I have isn’t perfect either. Since the news concerning Zhang shi is already everywhere, there’s no way we’ll be able to hide the matter from the Progeny of Combat for too long. Since that’s the case, we should take the initiative to report it instead so that we can at least shape his perspective of the issue!” Elder Cheng said.

The Master Teacher Arrest Warrant had already made its way to the corners of the Master Teacher Continent. While the Progeny of Combat was still unaware of the issue because he was in seclusion, it would not take too long for him to find out about the matter once he was out.

Instead of having the Progeny of Combat blame them for hiding such an important issue from him later on, it would be much better for them to take the initiative to report the matter to him. This way, they would at least be able to hold some influence over how he viewed the issue.

Understanding this logic, the other combat masters nodded in agreement.

Honestly, if they felt that they were able to hide the matter from the Progeny of Combat, they would have definitely done it so as to spare themselves the headache that they were suffering from.

Elder Cheng hesitated for a moment before continuing on.  
“While we are relaying the matter to him, we should focus on the conflicts that Zhang Shi has caused, and as for the arrest warrant and the others, we’ll just brush through it swiftly. I believe that the Progeny of Combat should also understand the severe implications of this matter and not act too rashly!”

Since they had no choice but to report the matter to the Progeny of Combat, the only thing that they could change was the manner in which they relayed the information to him.

“I think that’s the best we can do at the moment!”

The others nodded in agreement.

Jiya!

Barely after deciding on their general strategy, the doors to the chamber ahead of them suddenly creaked open, and a young man holding a spear walked out.

Despite his young age, he commanded an aura that felt so sharp that it almost seemed as if he would pierce right through the heavens. One could vaguely feel the overwhelming zhenqi churning within his body, ready to unleash devastating might upon his enemies at any moment.

“Congratulations on completing your cultivation!”

The crowd quickly clasped their fists and congratulated the young man.

“Un.” The young man waved his hand and walked up to the crowd. Even without any particular actions, he exuded a natural air of authority that prevented others from daring to speak loudly before him.

“For all of you to come over at once, what’s happened?” The young man scanned the huge crowd before him, and his eyebrows shot up.

“Reporting to the Progeny of Combat, you instructed us to keep an eye on Zhang Shi a while back, and just last night, we received news that he wreaked havoc in the Zhang Clan and injured dozens of elders. Following which, he headed to the Sanctum of Sages and injured the deputy sanctum head, Zhan

shi, and many other elders. As if that wasn't enough, he went to the Glacier Plain Court right after, destroyed their buildings, and even kidnapped their young court chief..." Elder Cheng swiftly stepped forward and gave the speech that he had carefully strung together beforehand.

He had made sure to first speak of the deeds that Zhang Xuan had committed so that the Progeny of Combat would not get too worked up after hearing the verdict made by the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

However, before he could finish his words, the Progeny of Combat interrupted his speech with a cold sneer. "Did you come up with those words yourself, or is that the news you have received from the Master Teacher Pavilion?"

"This..." Elder Cheng was taken aback by the Progeny of Combat's abrupt question. "That is the news I have received from the Master Teacher Pavilion!"

"Pinning false accusations on others; is this how the Master Teacher Pavilion conducts its business?" the young man muttered beneath his breath before directing a cold gaze toward Elder Cheng. "You said that my teacher kidnapped the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court, but do you know whom the young court chief is to dare spread such falsehood?"

"I-I... Please pardon my ignorance!" Elder Cheng heart skipped a beat as he hurriedly lowered his head and apologized.

"All my teacher has to do is say a word, and the young court chief would willingly abandon her identity and leave with him. Yet, you dare describe his actions with a word as vile as 'kidnap'? Preposterous!" The young man waved his hand furiously.

"This... Pardon me for asking, but how would the Progeny of Combat know?" Elder Cheng asked carefully.

"That's because the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court..."

Holding his spear with a hand and placing his other hand behind his back, the young man raised his head proudly and

said, "... is my senior!"

# 1515 Zhang Shi's Students 1

Of course, the Progeny of Combat was none other than Zhang Xuan's student, Zheng Yang!

His previous hot-bloodedness had been replaced with composure, and his cultivation had reached an unfathomable level. His face had become more distinct and masculine, and his words and gestures carried a dignified disposition.

Within this short period of time, the reckless and naïve young man of the past had matured.

“Senior?” Upon hearing Zheng Yang's words, the elders of the Combat Master Hall widened their eyes in disbelief.

If he addressed the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court as his senior... did that not mean that she was Zhang Xuan's student as well?

Since that was the case, how did the matter with the Glacier Plain Court blow up so big in the first place?

“Indeed!” Zheng Yang harrumphed coldly. He turned to Elder Cheng and said, “Bring me the report sent in by the Master Teacher Pavilion. I want to see with my own eyes what they have written!”

“This...” Elder Cheng never could have imagined that the young chief of the Glacier Plain Court would actually be the Progeny of Combat's senior. In an instant, all of the words that he had prepared were rendered meaningless. He hesitated for a moment before fearfully handing a jade token over. “The Master Teacher Pavilion didn't send over a report but... a Master Teacher Arrest Warrant!”

“Arrest warrant? For who? My teacher?” Alarmed to hear those words, Zheng Yang hurriedly grabbed the jade token from Elder Cheng's eyes to look through it.

Slowly, his face turned as cold as the night of the winter solstice.

“Ridiculous! This is utterly ridiculous! Relay my orders, all combat masters are to keep a close eye on the movements of the Zhang Clan, the Glacier Plain Court, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Master Teacher Pavilion. As soon as any sign of my teacher is found, they are to report to me right away... How dare they dream of laying their hands on my teacher? Very well, let me see who has the guts to do so!”

“But...” Hearing the order, Elder Cheng’s lips twitched in horror. “Progeny of Combat, I understand your feelings, but our Combat Master Hall is ultimately still a subsidiary of the Master Teacher Pavilion...”

Considering that the Master Teacher Pavilion had released an arrest warrant for Zhang Xuan, issuing such an order could be taken as insubordination and blatant defiance of the Master Teacher Pavilion.

“Subsidiary? Has our Combat Master Hall fallen so low as to simply watch helplessly as an innocent man is being framed? You don’t have to worry about the Master Teacher Pavilion. Just rescue my teacher and bring him safely back here; I’ll talk to the Master Teacher Pavilion about this!” Zheng Yang said as he swung his spear to the side, producing a sharp and menacing reverberation in the air.

“For many years, the Combat Master Hall has shed its blood to protecting mankind. It’s about time we show the other powers our edge and dampen their arrogance! I’ll let the entire Master Teacher Continent know that anyone who dares lay their hands on my teacher will have hell to pay!”

“Yes, Progeny of Combat!”

The elders clasped their fists, acknowledging Zheng Yang’s orders.

Some of the faces were marked with bitterness while others were glowing in excitement.

But regardless of their own personal views, once the Progeny of Combat Decree was passed, no combat master would dare act in defiance against it.

...

In the Poison Hall...

“The Master Teacher Pavilion issued an arrest warrant on my teacher? Humph! I was still thinking of existing peacefully with them in view of the fact that my teacher is a master teacher, but it seems like there’s no need for that anymore!”

At the very center of the hall, a young lady abruptly got to her feet as she gazed down at the people standing beneath her with ice-cold eyes.

Contrary to what most would think, the young lady’s figure was not imposing in the least. Her young age and slightly emaciated figure made her look less authoritative than she would have hoped. However, there was a slight greenish mist drifting around her body that would send any cultivator instinctively trembling in fear. It felt as if even a 9-star master teacher would easily lose their life should they come into the range of the green mist.

The master of the Poison Hall, Wei Ruyan!

With the help of countless poison masters, she had successfully awoken her Innate Poison Body, bringing her prowess with poison to an unprecedented height. While she might still have been lacking compared to the founder of the Poison Hall, her means were definitely far above any of the current elders of the Poison Hall.

If she made a move, not even 9-star master teachers would be a match for her.

Lin Jianghai, one of the Four Eminences of the Poison Hall, clasped his fist and said, “The Master Teacher Pavilion has been on their high horse for too long; I think it’s high time for us to tear down their ivory tower! Hall Master, feel free to command us!”

Due to his contribution in Wei Ruyan’s succession as the new hall master, he was granted a position second only to Wei Ruyan herself in the Poison Hall. On top of that, Wei Ruyan had also offered him pointers on his poison arts, thus bringing his command of poison to a level where even the two

Guardians of the Poison Hall would not be a match for him anymore.

“I want all members of the Poison Hall to set out and search for my teacher. As soon as the whereabouts of my teacher are confirmed, you are to report the news to me right away while protecting him from the shadows. If anyone dares make a move on him, eliminate that person right away... It’s high time for our Poison Hall made a move lest the continent forgets that we are still alive and kicking!” Wei Ruyan harrumphed coldly.

Despite her young age, she had already gone through numerous life and death situations. Perhaps due to those experiences, authority and power did not hold much significance to her.

If there was anything that she truly valued, it would be her teacher. Her teacher had done simply too much for her. Without her teacher, there would not be the current her. So, if anyone dared to lay their filthy hands on her teacher, well...

If I don’t wipe out your entire clan, I shan’t be called Wei Ruyan!

The elders excitedly clasped their fist and bowed. “We’ll listen to the hall master’s orders!”

As prosperous as the Poison Hall headquarters was, they were aware that it was a prison that they had created for themselves so as to appease the Master Teacher Pavilion. Never had a day gone by where they had not dreamed of breaking out of their self-exile, and since there was an opportunity to do so right ahead of them, what did they have to hesitate for?

...

In a faraway, remote corner of the Master Teacher Pavilion, there was a crepuscular ancient domain where no light existed.

A massive figure slowly floated up from the ground as a powerful shockwave raged around the area, tearing the surroundings apart.

“Why did you wake me up?” a thunderous voice echoed from the massive figure.



Not too far away, a floating soul clasped its fist and reported, “Young Master... the Master Teacher Pavilion has issued an arrest warrant on Master!”

Agitated by the news, the figure swiftly rose up and questioned, “The Master Teacher Pavilion is intending to make a move on my teacher? Why?”

As the figure spoke, the earth tremored, and the world seemed to have turned darker than ever.

“This is the news that I have gathered from the nearby cities,” the soul reported.

It flicked its finger, and a jade token flew over.

The massive figure took hold of the jade token and swiftly browsed through it.

“Ludicrous! The Master Teacher Pavilion is asking for it... Mo Hunsheng, accompany me to the Glacier Plain Court! We’ll be finding my teacher!”

The massive figure dived into a ‘lifeless body’ lying motionlessly by the side, and a moment later, the ‘lifeless body’ got to its feet, revealing the gallant face of a young man.

He was none other than Zhang Xuan’s direct disciple, Lu Chong!

After inheriting the lineage of the soul oracles, Lu Chong’s soul had become incomparably powerful. With the slightest movement, he could cause the entire sky to darken. It felt as if he could even split the entire world in two at his will.

“Yes!” Mo Hunsheng nodded.

Before long, the two of them were already flitting swiftly toward the Glacier Plain Court.

...

In the Yuan Clan...

“What did you say, an arrest warrant was placed on my teacher? Very well! This is the intention of the First Elder of the Zhang Clan, right?”

Standing before a group of elders, Yuan Tao bellowed with narrowed eyes.

He could forgive a person for attacking and injuring him, but anyone who dared to hurt even a single strand of hair of his teacher was unforgivable!

An elder stepped forward. “Young Master, the clan head’s view is for us to steer clear of this matter. After all, that’s a decree issued by the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters...”

Peng!

Before he could finish his words, he was already slapped flying into the distance.

“Is there anyone else who has anything to say?” With his hands behind his back, Yuan Tao gazed coldly at the many faces in front of him.

“Young Master, before the clan head went into seclusion, he has requested for you not to get into any trouble... Argh!”

Yet another elder was sent flying with a cry of agony.

“Who else?” Yuan Tao continued staring at the crowd in front of him coldly.

After a moment of silence, the crowd quickly clasped their fists and declared resoundingly, “We’ll heed the Young Master’s orders!”

“That’s more like it!” Yuan Tao nodded in approval. “I believe all of you should be well-versed in the rules of the Yuan Clan, so you should know that I am the legitimate head of the Yuan Clan! So, right now, I shall issue my first order for you all as the head of the Yuan Clan. I command all of you to follow me to the Glacier Plain Court to find the whereabouts of my teacher. If anyone dares to make a move on him, you are to kill that person right away regardless of who they are!”

“Yes, Clan Head!” the crowd replied.

“Our Yuan Clan might not wield strength like the Premier Clans, but I won’t allow even the Master Teacher Pavilion to touch a person under my protection!”

With narrowed eyes, Yuan Tao bellowed, “Set off!”

Hu la!

Countless aerial saint beasts soared into the air, heading in the direction of the Glacier Plain Court.

## 1516 Zhang Shi's Students 2

In the Spirit Awakener Guild headquarters, countless ladies were standing in front of a tall tower, and every single one of them had a nervous look on their face.

“It has already been seven days. Will she be able to succeed?” a middle-aged lady among the crowd muttered worriedly.

“If she succeeds, there will be no need for us to hold that selection in two months anymore. What would be the point of holding the selection when we have already found our next guild leader!” another lady remarked.

“Indeed. Ever since the founding of the Spirit Awakener Guild, there has been hardly anyone who has succeeded in clearing the Spirit Awakener Tower. She started learning spirit enchantment just a few months ago, and now, she's already challenging the Spirit Awakener Tower... And what's more, she actually managed to reach the eighth floor! This is something that has never happened before!” the first middle-aged lady exclaimed in awe.

“Spirit awakeners require extreme precision in manipulating their Primordial Spirit. Given the purity of her soul and zhenqi, it would be hard for her not to improve quickly! With her around, it seems like our Spirit Awakener Guild will be able to climb to new heights. Very soon, we won't have to rely on other powers to protect ourselves anymore!” the second lady chirped excitedly.

As spirit awakener was an occupation that was supportive in nature, it was severely lacking in fighting prowess. As such, it had to ally itself with other powers in order to protect itself. However, the arrival of an unprecedentedly talented young lady just a few months ago could possibly change the current miserable circumstances that they were in. As long as she succeeded, they would not have to live subservient to another power anymore!

“I never would have thought that such a day would come for our Spirit Awakener Guild! It seems like the heavens haven’t forsaken us yet...”

The crowd in the area nodded in agreement.

Hong long!

At that moment, the ground suddenly began trembling, and following which, the tall tower ahead of them began shaking as well. It slowly rose to its feet before racing ahead.

“She managed to enchant the Spirit Awakener Tower? S-she... actually succeeded?”

The faces around the area flushed crimson in agitation.

“Not only so, she even received the recognition of our founder... In the time to come, Wang Ying could very well become the strongest spirit awakener aside from our founder... and perhaps, given sufficient time, she might even be able to exceed our founder!” the first middle-aged lady said feverishly as her body trembled uncontrollably.

“The time has finally come for our Spirit Awakener Guild to rise up once more...”

The excitement in the air was so intense that it was almost palpable.

Some time later, the tower finally came to a halt, and young lady slowly drifted down from the top. Dressed in a white robe, she looked as if a fairy descending from the heavens.

She was the very first student whom Zhang Xuan had taken in, the adorable and innocent young lady from Hongtian Academy, Wang Ying.

She had undergone a transformative change from how she was a year ago. Her previous innocence had been replaced with keen calmness. With just a sweeping gaze, she was able to exert her authority on the surrounding crowd, making them dare not speak against her.

“Paying respects to the guild leader!”

The ladies swiftly got to their knees and kowtowed deeply to their new guild leader.

The fact that Wang Ying had managed to clear the Spirit Awakener Tower had given her the legitimacy to become the next leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild. After witnessing the movement of the tall tower with their own eyes, no one would dare question her credentials.

“Un, rise up.” Wang Ying gazed down on the faces below and declared, “Now, I’ll issue my very first command as the leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild!”

The crowd clasped their fists and replied, “We’ll listen to the guild leader’s commands!”

“From today onward, all members of the Spirit Awakener Guild are to treat my teacher, Zhang Xuan, as they would treat me. His orders are to be carried out with any question, and I won’t tolerate anyone disrespecting him in any way. Anyone who contravenes this order shall be permanently stripped of their spirit awakener rank and prohibited from entering any Spirit Awakener Guild in the Master Teacher Continent!” Wang Ying announced.

“Yes, guild leader!”

The crowd hurriedly received the order.

A moment later, the first middle-aged lady suddenly raised her head and asked, “Guild leader, you mentioned that your teacher goes by the name of Zhang Xuan. Could he possibly be an 8-star master teacher of the Sanctum of Sages as well?”

“That’s right!” Wang Ying replied affirmatively.

Given how large the Master Teacher Continent was, it was inevitable that there would be some overlaps in names. However, an 8-star master teacher in the Sanctum of Sages who went by the name of Zhang Xuan... that could not possibly be anyone other than her teacher.

“Guild leader, just a while ago, the Master Teacher Pavilion ordered for the apprehension of Zhang Shi. This is the arrest warrant that they sent...” With a flick of her finger, the middle-aged lady passed a jade token over to Wang Ying.

“Hmm?” Wang Ying lowered her head to take a look, and a moment later, her eyes turned fearfully livid.

“Someone is trying to pin false accusations on my teacher, huh? Very well, I would like to see who that insolent fellow is!”

With a cold harrumph, Wang Ying flung her sleeves back and roared, “Hear my orders! All 9-star spirit awakeners are to follow me to the Glacier Plain Court, enchant every single Master Teacher Pavilion within a thirty thousand li radius, and wait for further orders!”

The crowd clasped their fists and replied, “Yes, guild leader!”

“All along, the continent has viewed us spirit awakeners as weaklings whom they can trample on. It’s time to prove them wrong. We’ll show them that the Spirit Awakener Guild also wields strength that they can’t afford to underestimate.” Wang Ying harrumphed coldly with her hands behind her back.

...

Boom!

Exhaling deeply, Zhao Ya slowly stood up once more.

It was no easy feat for her to cultivate the Heaven’s Path Golden Body when she had lost her meridians, but with the assistance of her teacher, she had still managed to pull it off. With the successful cultivation of the physical body cultivation technique, her skin became even more delicate, reminiscent of a newborn baby. While her strength had not increased by too much, she had gained the ability to alter her appearance freely. Along with her teacher using his zhenqi to help her conceal her soul, once she changed her appearance as well, it would be difficult for even 9-star master teachers to see through her disguise.

“Alright, try changing your appearance!” Seeing that Zhao Ya had succeeded, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

With this, they would not have to worry about being seen through by anyone in the Empire Alliance City.

“Yes, Teacher!”

Nodding, Zhao Ya's facial muscles began shifting around, altering the structure of her face entirely. Very soon, she had assumed a whole new look that would be nigh impossible for anyone to associate with the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court.

"Good!" Zhang Xuan nodded with a smile.

Even after altering her appearance, Zhao Ya was still very beautiful. However, it was at a level where it was not too uncommon in the Empire Alliance City, so she would not stand out as much.

After they were done with their preparations, the duo began making their way over to the Empire Alliance City once more.

At the entrance to the city, just as Zhang Xuan had expected, the checks had become much more stringent than before, such that there were even 6-star and 7-star master teachers supervising the checking process. However, it was impossible for those master teachers to see through their disguises, so they managed to get into the city with ease.

"Let's head to the Blacksmith Guild first. I want to see if there's a suitable material that could be used to replace your meridians!" Zhang Xuan said.

After asking around, Zhang Xuan led Zhao Ya toward the Blacksmith Guild.

The Empire Alliance Blacksmith Guild was around the same tier as the one in the Sanctum of Sages. The highest-ranking blacksmith in the guild was at 8-star, but there was still a sizeable collection of 9-star blacksmith books there.

Soon, they arrived at the entrance of the Blacksmith Guild and walked in confidently.

"Teacher, who should we find?" Zhao Ya asked.

In order to look into possible materials to replace meridians, they would have to find someone to inquire. Otherwise, they would not be able to make much progress just by roaming around the area aimlessly.



“The guild leader, of course!” Zhang Xuan replied as a matter-of-fact.

The one who would know the Blacksmith Guild the best was definitely none other than the guild leader. There was no one else better to find than him!

“Guild leader? Will he be willing to meet us given our current identities?” Zhao Ya asked with a frown.

As they had to conceal their identities, Zhang Xuan could not take out his emblem and proclaim himself to be a master teacher or a blacksmith. However, without sufficient standing, there was no reason for the busy guild leader to spare some of his time for them.

“That’s simple!” Zhang Xuan chuckled. He scanned the surroundings, and upon seeing something, his eyes lit up as he said, “Come, follow me!”

Seated by the corner of the main hall was a blacksmith, and there were eight brilliant stars gleaming off the emblem on his chest.

An 8-star blacksmith!

He was currently in the midst of tutoring his disciple.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Xuan walked up to that 8-star blacksmith and exclaimed in agitation, “You really are here! Do you know how difficult it was for me to find you?”

“You are...” The 8-star blacksmith was stunned by the abrupt performance from Zhang Xuan.

“Have you forgotten me so quickly? I am your Senior Uncle!” Zhang Xuan remarked with a hint of displeasure in his voice.

# 1517 The Empire Alliance Blacksmith Guild

“Senior Uncle?” The 8-star blacksmith was stunned for an instant before a deep frown surfaced on his forehead. With a livid expression, he growled, “Friend, just who in the world are you? Don’t you think it’s inappropriate to say such a joke?”

How could he possibly not recognize his own Senior Uncle? He was certain that he had never met the person standing in front of him before, so it was obvious that the other party was teasing him.

“You said that I’m joking? Do you really not recognize me?” Zhang Xuan shook his head as he raised his hand.

Hong long!

A powerful might swiftly shrouded the 8-star blacksmith, threatening to crush him into bits.

After his cultivation had advanced to Dimension Sundering realm primary stage, his grasp over his strength had become further refined. In fact, he could already deal with most Saint 9-dan primary stage cultivators with ease. While the person before him was an 8-star blacksmith, his cultivation was only at Phantasmal Space realm pinnacle.

The 8-star blacksmith’s body instinctively tensed up in the face of the impending threat, and he hurriedly drove his zhenqi and launched a palm strike to counterattack.

But before his palm could strike, the crushing pressure that was pressing down on him abruptly vanished without a trace, as if it had never appeared in the first place.

Perplexed, he quickly looked at the young man before him once more, only to see that the latter had already placed his hands behind his back at some point in time. The young man was looking at him too, and with a slightly displeased look on

his face, he asked, “Since you claim that you don’t know me, allow me to ask you then. Is your name Chen Mo?”

“Yes, I am indeed Chen Mo!” the 8-star blacksmith, Chen Mo, replied.

There was no one in the Blacksmith Guild who did not know of his name, so it did not come as a wonder to him that the young man knew his name.

“Your teacher is 9-star Blacksmith Lu Yang. You inherited the Lu Yang Forging Art from him, but you specialize in the Hong Dian Forging Art instead. The ring finger of your left hand was once scorched by earth flames while you were in the midst of smithing... I didn’t make a mistake, right?” Zhang Xuan asked calmly.

“T-this... You are right!” Chen Mo was stunned for a moment before shaking his head. “That information can easily be found by asking around in the Blacksmith Guild, so it doesn’t mean a thing at all...”

“I know that it can be easily uncovered, but... the Hong Dian Forging technique requires precise coordination of all ten fingers in order to bring out its full prowess. Back when you were studying the technique, due to a small error, you ended up hurting your ring finger. As such, whenever you are tempering a weapon, it will begin curling uncontrollably. While it doesn’t affect the final product that you are creating too much, still, it does prevent you from achieving fine control over your strength. There aren’t too many people who are aware of this, right?” Zhang Xuan chuckled softly.

“Y-you...” Chen Mo’s body stiffened straight.

He did have such a habit in his smithing. While it was nothing major, there were not too many people in the Blacksmith Guild who were aware of this little quirk of his. So, for the other party to speak of it so decisively as if he had seen it with his own eyes, could the other party really be from the same lineage as him?

“Not only so, I also know that there are many flaws in your Hong Dian Forging Art. In fact, Senior Lu Yang instructed me

to come here in order to correct your problems in the hope that you can push for a breakthrough soon. However, I'm also aware that I don't have any token or the sort that I can use to prove my identity either, so if you still don't trust me after what I have said, there's nothing I can do about it!" Zhang Xuan said with a wave of his hand.

"You are here to correct my problems?" Chen Mo frowned doubtfully.

"Indeed. There are three major flaws in your forging technique. Firstly, you have a tendency to overcomplicate the forging process. You attempt to bring every single phase of the forging process to the level of perfection, refining every ore to the extremity, but ironically, your attempts to do so often end up affecting the fusion of the ores..." Zhang Xuan pointed out with a light smile.

Chen Mo's body jolted upon hearing those words.

The other party was right; he did have such a habit. He had tried to get rid of the habit before, but whenever he tried to do so, he would end up missing the ideal fusing time for the ores, thus resulting in a failed product.

As time went by, he had eventually given up on it.

Smithing was an extremely complicated and delicate process, and even the slightest lapse could cause the greatest difference. Despite being an 8-star blacksmith, he was still unable to ensure perfection in his smithing.

"Secondly, your Hong Dian Forging Art is focused on searching for the crux of the material you are processing and hammering right on it so as to create an even more wholesome product. You have no trouble finding the crux of the ores that you are processing, but it's a pity that you are slightly lacking in speed..." Zhang Xuan continued.

"I..." Chen Mo's body jolted once more.

It was almost the other party had seen him forging with his own eyes. Astonishingly, every single point that the other party had raised was spot-on!

"Thirdly..." Zhang Xuan continued speaking.

By the time all three flaws were raised, Chen Mo's body was already drenched in cold sweat.

Those were indeed the three greatest errors in his smithing. He was aware of them and had tried to change them several times, only to have failed. It was precisely due to those issues that his smithing had ended up meeting a bottleneck.

“Is there any way to resolve my problems?” Unable to remain calm any longer, Chen Mo clasped his fist and bowed.

He still was not too sure whether the other party was really his Senior Uncle or not, but one thing was for sure—the other party was far ahead of him in the field of smithing.

“Like I said, your teacher has sent me over to correct your mistakes. It goes without saying that I have my own ways to resolve your flaws!” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

It was not convenient for him to take out his 8-star blacksmith emblem at the moment, but in terms of his knowledge in smithing, even 9-star primary blacksmiths would struggle to match up to him.

All it took him was a slight moment of contemplation after browsing through Chen Mo's flaws in the Library of Heaven's Path for him to come up with a solution to resolve those problems.

Zhang Xuan swiftly imparted several methods to Chen Mo that he could use in order to resolve those three major flaws in his smithing.

“I see...” After hearing Zhang Xuan's pointers, Chen Mo could not help but widen his eyes in awe. The other party's words had truly enlightened him. “Thank you, Senior Uncle!”

As he spoke, he kneeled down to the ground and kowtowed to Zhang Xuan earnestly.

Zhang Xuan glanced at the kneeling man before him and said, “You aren't going to doubt me anymore?”

“No, no, of course not...” Chen Mo replied with an embarrassed chuckle.

Just the fact that the other party had pointed out the many flaws in his forging technique and even raised feasible methods to resolve them, even if the other party was not his Senior Uncle, he was already as good as a half-teacher to him!

“Good. To tell you the truth, other than to correct your smithing, I also have some business here that I will have to trouble your guild leader with. I’ll need you to bring me to him!” Zhang Xuan said.

“You wish to meet our guild leader? That won’t be a problem at all! This way, please,” Chen Mo said as he quickly led the way forward.

“This…” Having witnessed the entire scene, Zhao Ya was more awestruck than ever by her teacher.

She had known all along that her teacher was a very resourceful man, but she did not think that he would actually be able to win an 8-star blacksmith over with just a couple of words and turn the other party into his junior. Even when witnessing the entire process with her own eyes, she could hardly believe what she was seeing.

With an 8-star blacksmith leading the way, it did not take too long for them to meet the guild leader.

The guild leader appeared to be an elder in his sixties. His hair had already turned snow white, and with a swift examination, Zhang Xuan could tell that the other party was a Saint 8-dan pinnacle cultivator.

Chen Mo stepped forward and said, “Guild leader, my Senior Uncle has come to visit, and he wishes to have a word with you.”

“Your Senior Uncle?” Surprised by Chen Mo’s words, the guild leader swiftly got to his feet and clasped his fist. “Senior, may I know how I should address you?”

He was peers with Chen Mo, so that would make Chen Mo’s Senior Uncle his senior as well.

“I am Wu Zhangxuan, and this young lass beside me is my student. To be honest with you, my student got injured a while

back, so I came over hoping to request your aid!” Zhang Xuan clasped his fist.

“Ah, so it’s Blacksmith Wu! May I know what you need my help on? As long as it’s within my power, I’ll definitely try my best to assist with your student’s treatment!” the guild leader replied with a kind smile.

“My student made a mistake in her cultivation, resulting in her meridians sustaining some damage. So, I have come to your Blacksmith Guild in hopes of seeing finding a material that I could possibly use to substitute her meridians in driving zhenqi,” Zhang Xuan said.

# 1518 Indeed, I Am Him

“A substitute for meridians?” The guild leader contemplated deeply for a moment before saying, “Meridians are pathways within a cultivator’s body that allows for the movement of spiritual energy and zhenqi. As a cultivator advances their cultivation, they will be able to strengthen and widen their meridians, allowing energy to flow even smoothly through them... I’m afraid that I can’t think of any material in our Blacksmith Guild that has such properties!”

The meridians of a cultivator were not lifeless objects; they could evolve along with a cultivator’s advancing cultivation as well. A stronger cultivator would be able to expand their meridians so as to allow them to harness more power, and vice-versa... While there was a huge range of artifacts and materials in the Blacksmith Guild, none of them had the properties suited for substituting the role of meridians.

“There isn’t any material in your Blacksmith Guild that can be used to substitute meridians?” Zhang Xuan frowned. “If I recall correctly, there are some weapons that can extend and contract at will. Is it not possible to use those to substitute as meridians?”

There were formidable weapons in this world that could alter their sizes freely. For example, while the Sanctum Head Token in Zhang Xuan’s hands was roughly only the size of a palm usually, it could grow to the size of a huge shield at his command.

“While there are weapons that cultivators can alter the form of at will, those are usually unable to harness zhenqi for too long. Furthermore, the development of the meridians isn’t as simple as expanding and reinforcing them—there’s a limit to how far one can do that. Eventually, it will come a point where the cultivator has to enhance the effectiveness of their meridians through spatial manipulation. Besides, it won’t be easy to achieve delicate control over those materials, and one could



easily get hurt as a result of that,” the guild leader said with a bitter smile.

“Darn...” Zhang Xuan’s face turned livid.

He was also aware that it was unlikely that there was any material that could be a perfect substitute for human meridians, but he could not allow himself to give up just like that. He hoped that he might be able to receive a different answer from the mouth of another, but judging from what he had just heard, it seemed like reconstructing Zhao Ya’s meridians through smithing did not seem to be something achievable.

The guild leader was also able to roughly fathom Zhang Xuan’s intentions, so he could not help but shake his head as well. At this moment, a thought suddenly came to his mind, and he said, “Actually, there might still be hope for your student. While it’s not too plausible to reconstruct your student’s meridians through smithing, I did hear some rumors that someone had managed to pull off the replacement of meridians before!”

“Someone managed to pull off the replacement of meridians? Who is it?” Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up.

If someone in the world had succeeded in the replacement of meridians, that would mean that it was possible! Even if he could not do it himself, he could still search for the person in question and ask for their help.

“Before I go on, I would like to first say that these are only rumors that I have heard, and I am unable to verify their authenticity. From what I know, the matter didn’t happen too long ago, just roughly twenty years if I recall correctly. An expert of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters went around the Master Teacher Continent in search of a way to replace a person’s meridians, and it seems like he succeeded in the end!” the guild leader said.

“An expert of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters? Who is it?” Zhang Xuan asked anxiously.

This would determine whether Zhao Ya would be able to recover or not, so he had to clutch at every possible lead that he could find.

“That person is Grand Elder Yang Xuan of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters!” the guild leader replied.

“Yang Xuan?” Zhang Xuan was stunned.

For the longest period of time, he had been impersonating Yang Xuan and claiming to be Yang Xuan’s student. It seemed like fate really had a way of pulling pranks on others. After all that had happened, the clue to resolving Zhao Ya’s condition ended up being with a man whom he was so intricately linked with and direly wanted to avoid.

“Indeed. Yang shi is a highly talented person. Putting aside the tremendous strength he wields, he’s also well-versed in all of the occupations. Back then, in order to uncover a way to achieve the replacement of meridians, he even paid a visit to the head of our Blacksmith Guild headquarters and maintained correspondence with him for several years. Of course, I have no way of verifying those matters, so I’m afraid that you’ll have to find the person in question to ask about it!” the guild leader said.

“I see...” Zhang Xuan rubbed his glabella. “It seems like I’ll have to pay Yang shi a visit then!”

Most likely, Yang shi should still be in the Zhang Clan... It would be dangerous, but it seemed like he would have to pay the Zhang Clan another visit.

Just that, he had impersonated the other party and claimed to be the other party’s student, and now, he was even wanted by the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. If he met the other party, would the other party be willing to listen to what he had to say?

Against First Elder Zhang Wuheng, he might still stand a chance of escape, but against Yang shi, one of the strongest experts of the Master Teacher Continent... If the other party meant him harm, would he be able to get away even if he utilized every method at his disposal?

“Yang shi?” Hearing those words, Zhao Ya felt a little light-headed.

Having seen Yang shi transforming into her teacher with her own eyes, she knew that grandteacher of hers was actually just a persona that her teacher had created. Yet, to hear the name again... what was going on?

“Yang shi often spends his time roaming the world, such that he rarely returns to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters at all. So, I don’t think that it’ll be too easy for you to catch wind of his whereabouts. If the situation with your student is urgent, Physician Huang of the Physician Guild happens to be a close friend of mine. I could invite him over to have him help diagnose your student...” Seeing the young man deep in thought, the guild leader thought that Zhang Xuan was worried about his student’s condition, so he sincerely offered his help.

“Guild leader, thank you for your kind intentions, but I think it should be fine for the time being.” Zhang Xuan clasped his fist.

He was just about to continue speaking when a blacksmith abruptly rushed into the room and said, “Guild leader, there’s a master teacher outside who seeks your presence!”

The guild leader turned his head over and asked, “Master teacher? Who is it? What’s his rank?”

The blacksmith hesitated for a moment before replying. “He isn’t wearing his emblem, so I’m not too sure what his rank is either. However, I think his surname is... Yang!”

“His surname is Yang?” The guild leader fell into deep thought, but he could not think of any notable master teachers who went by the surname of Yang in the Empire Alliance. Nevertheless, he still nodded and said, “Invite him in!”

“Yes, guild leader!”

The blacksmith turned around and left the room.

“Since you have a guest waiting for you, I shan’t impose on you any longer and take my leave!” Having found what he needed, there was no longer any reason for Zhang Xuan to remain in the Blacksmith Guild any longer.

Thus, he clasped his fist before leaving together with Zhao Ya.

However, before he reached the entrance of the room, footsteps suddenly sounded ahead of him, and following which, the blacksmith from before returned with an elder beside him.

As the elder walked into the room, he suddenly turned his head toward Zhang Xuan and asked with a smile, “This young friend over here, you just arrived, right? Are you leaving so soon?”

“Hmm? Are you speaking to me?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback by the abrupt words from the elder.

The elder should be here to meet the guild leader, so why was the other party striking up a conversation with him instead?

“That’s right. Rather than saying that I’m here to pay a visit to the guild leader, it would be more exact to say that I am here for you!” The elder stroked his beard as he spoke.

“For me?” Zhang Xuan frowned in bewilderment.

The elder before him looked perfectly ordinary. While he was dressed in a master teacher robe, there was not an emblem signifying his rank pinned on his chest. There was an amiable smile on his face, which seemed to suggest that he bore no ill-will.

However, one thing was for certain—he had never met the elder in front of him before.

“Have I met you before?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“Hahaha!” Instead of replying to Zhang Xuan’s question, the elder chuckled softly before turning to the guild leader and Blacksmith Chen Mo. “Pardon me, but there are some private matters that I would like to talk to the young friend over here about.”

After saying those words, the elder flicked his finger, and an emblem came into the sight of the two blacksmiths. On the emblem were nine gleaming stars.

“9-star blacksmith?” Upon seeing the emblem, both the guild leader and Chen Mo leaped in shock. They hurriedly clasped

their fists and replied, “O-of course, feel free to use this room!”

They had thought that the elder would show them his master teacher emblem, but who could have thought the other party would be a 9-star blacksmith as well. With a clear hierarchy established among them, they could not afford to defy a direct command from the other party.

Hualala!

The duo quickly backed out of the room, leaving just Zhang Xuan, Zhao Ya, and the enigmatic elder.

“Wu Zhangxuan, Wu (I’m) Zhang Xuan. Isn’t the name you have come up for yourself a little too perfunctory?”

Seeing that there was no one else in the room, the elder chuckled softly as he gazed deeply at Zhang Xuan. “Isn’t that so, Zhang shi? Or perhaps, should I address you as... Sanctum Head Zhang?”

“You...” Not expecting the other party to not only be able to see through his disguise but even be aware of his identity as a sanctum head candidate, Zhang Xuan’s goosebumps immediately rose in alarm. He immediately alerted his clone so that the other party would be ready to make a move at any moment.

“You are a master teacher, and you go by the surname Yang... Could you possibly be...”

“Well, it seems like you have figured it out.” Stroking his beard once more, the elder said with a smile, “Indeed, I am the person whom you have been impersonating all this time... Yang Xuan!“It’s a play on words. In Chinese, the character Wu (吾) has the meaning of referring to oneself too.

# 1519 Discovering Zhang Xuan

Half a day earlier...

Through the Teleportation Formation of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, Yang Shi and the others swiftly arrived at the Glacier Plain Courts and saw the devastation that had occurred there.

All of the buildings had collapsed down to the ground, and beacons of smoke could be seen here and there. There were charred marks everywhere, be it on the collapsed rubble or the ground.

“... and that was how he reduced the Glacier Plain Court to its current state!” Just thinking about what had just happened, You Ruoxin’s body could not stop trembling in rage.

“He had just undergone the Phantasmal Space Ordeal in the Zhang Clan and left the entire place in tatters, but you’re telling me that he underwent his Dimension Sundering Ordeal here shortly after...” Zhang Wuheng couldn’t believe what he was hearing.

He had witnessed that fellow’s Phantasmal Space Ordeal with his own eyes, and even he had nearly been struck to death by it. Who could have thought that in less than a night, he would run over to the Glacier Plain Court and undergo his Dimension Sundering Ordeal? Did that not mean that he had managed to raise his cultivation by two whole realms within the span of a single day?

Was it really possible for anyone to be that overpowered?

And more importantly... he had actually been able to make the lightning tribulation heed his commands and strike whatever he wanted it to! How in the world did he manage to do that?

“According to what you have said, he should have been severely wounded in the encounter, so it doesn’t seem likely

that he would be able to get too far away. Do you know which direction he headed off in?" Yang shi asked.

"I'm not too sure." You Ruoxin shook her head. "He completely erased all traces of his presence, making it impossible to track him. I have already ordered the members of the Glacier Plain Court to comb through the surrounding area, but none of them have been able to find any traces of him!"

Considering the young man's flight speed, he could not have gotten too far. However, when they finally recovered and started trying to track him down, it was as if he had vanished into thin air. Despite searching for more than a day now, they had not been able to find any traces of him at all.

It was almost as if the young man had not been there in the first place!

"It seems like he's a hidden expert. He must have used some kind of special means to erase his presence," Yang shi remarked.

Since there were cultivators who specialized in tracking, naturally, there were also those who were skilled in anti-tracking. There were experts in the world who could sneak from place to place without leaving any traces.

If Zhang Xuan truly possessed such means, then even someone as powerful as Yang Xuan would have trouble tracking him down.

"That seems to be the case, but considering the injuries that he has sustained, I'm confident that he's still within a radius of 100,000 li around the Glacier Plain Court. As long as we comb this area thoroughly, we would be able to dig him out!" You Ruoxin said confidently.

Given how severely wounded Zhang Xuan was, it would be impossible for him to get too far away. Furthermore, the Master Teacher Pavilion had also released an arrest warrant for him, and traveling in the open air would make it too easy for others to find and capture him. Building on these assumptions,

she felt that Zhang Xuan would still be within a radius of 100,000 li from the Glacier Plain Court.

As long as they dispatched enough manpower to comb through the area, they would surely be able to find that scoundrel!

Yang shi turned to the group behind and proposed, “Sword Saint Xing, Sword Saint Meng, and First Elder, since there are no longer any clues on where he is, why don’t we split up and search for him separately? It should be easier for us to find him this way, and whoever finds him first can alert the rest through our Communication Jade Tokens!”

“I guess that’s the best we can do for now...” Sword Saint Meng nodded worriedly.

When she heard that the young man who could very well be her son was severely injured, she felt as if a knife had stabbed into her heart. She had considered exacting vengeance for her son on the Glacier Plain Court, but seeing the pitiful state that they were already in, she had eventually dropped the idea.

All she could think of at that moment was her injured son. Worried sick, she did not want to waste any more precious time dawdling around here.

“Let’s go then!” Knowing how his wife felt, Sword Saint Xing swiftly chose a direction, and the two of them left together.

On the other hand, Zhang Wuheng hesitated for a moment, seemingly contemplating over something, before eventually choosing a direction and leaving as well.

“Elder You, I’ll take my leave as well!” Yang shi bade his farewell before leaving in a certain direction.

In just a few moments, the four of them had already vanished over the horizon.

Shaking her head, You Ruoxin turned her gaze back to the Glacier Plain Court in order to supervise the disciples in its reconstruction. However, barely a moment later, the First Elder of the Zhang Clan, Zhang Wuheng, suddenly flew back over.



You Ruoxin quickly walked over and asked, “Elder Wuheng, could it be that you have managed to find him?”

“That isn’t it.” Zhang Wuheng shook his head. With an unreadable look on his face, he asked, “Which direction did Yang shi leave in earlier?”

“Yang shi?” You Ruoxin was taken aback.

“Indeed. As one of the top experts of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, Yang shi wields the ability to track down a person from their lingering presence. Even if Zhang Xuan has concealed his aura, I find it hard to believe that Yang shi would be unable to track him. Instead, I believe the reason he has suggested for us to split up is to shake us off and find him himself. I want to see just what he’s up to...” Zhang Wuheng harrumphed.

“You are saying that Yang shi knows where Zhang Xuan is? So... as long as we follow Yang shi, we would be able to find Zhang Xuan as well?” A glint flickered across You Ruoxin’s eyes.

“Indeed. However, in view of Yang shi’s strength, we have to make sure to keep a safe distance away from him. It will be hard for us to explain our actions to him if he catches us tracking him,” Zhang Wuheng said.

“I understand!” You Ruoxin nodded as a wintry gleam surfaced in her eyes. “This time, there’s no way I’ll allow him to slip through my fingers...”

“We have to make that fellow pay the price for his actions!” Zhang Wuheng nodded in agreement.

A fellow who had appeared out of nowhere actually had the guts to lay waste to the Zhang Clan. If they did not teach that fellow a lesson, how would the entire continent view the Zhang Clan in the future?

They could not allow the humiliation that they had suffered to slide just like that!

While the two of them were discreetly discussing their plans, some distance away, Yang shi stopped on a peak amid a

mountain range. He flicked his wrist, and a mirror materialized in his hand.

He swiftly formed several hand seals, and light began swirling on the surface of the mirror. Soon, the light converged to form something resembling a map.

“Ultimately, the Sanctum Head Token is still an artifact forged by the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters,” Yang shi muttered with a smile.

He did wield extraordinary skills in tracking, just as Zhang Wuheng suspected, but Zhang Xuan really did not leave the slightest trace at all when he left the Glacier Plain Court. Even to someone of his prowess, it appeared as if Zhang Xuan had simply vanished into thin air.

However, the Sanctum Head Token that Zhang Xuan had in his possession was an artifact belonging to the Master Teacher Pavilion. He could simply track the Sanctum Head Token in order to find the young man’s whereabouts.

Studying the image on the mirror, Yang shi was able to swiftly determine the location of the Sanctum Head Token. “It seems he has headed off to the Empire Alliance City!”

With a leap, he vanished from the spot.

To be honest, he was not too concerned about the fact that Zhang Xuan had impersonated him or claimed to be his student. Instead, the dominant feeling that he felt at this moment was pure curiosity.

Despite his low cultivation, that young man had been able to impersonate him and fool even 9-star master teachers... How did the young man manage to pull something like that off?

...

Roughly an hour after Yang shi left the peak, the surrounding space suddenly distorted slightly, and two figures materialized into existence.

The First Elders of the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court, Zhang Wuheng and You Ruoxin.

Yang shi had not intentionally concealed his presence, so it was not too difficult for the two of them to track his movements.

“It seems like he’s heading toward the Empire Alliance City...” After confirming the direction that Yang shi had left in, Zhang Wuheng asked with a frown, “Could Zhang Xuan be in the Empire Alliance City?”

“Very possibly. The closest major city to the Glacier Plain Court is the Empire Alliance City. Given the severe injuries Zhang Xuan has sustained, there’s no way he would be able to flee too far away. His best bet is to hide within a large crowd, and for that, there’s nowhere better than the Empire Alliance City!” You Ruoxin nodded in agreement.

The best way to conceal one’s presence from the world was not to dive into some remote mountain valley but an ocean of people.

The more people there were, the harder it would be for one to be found.

Going by such an analysis, it was indeed very likely for Zhang Xuan to be in the Empire Alliance City.

It boasted the greatest population count among the cities in the area, and there was a diverse range of people within the city. There was a Master Teacher Pavilion within the city, which might make such a choice of location appear risky, but sometimes, it was the most obvious location that one was likely to overlook.

After all, which sane person would dare loiter right beneath the nose of the Master Teacher Pavilion when an arrest warrant had been issued on him? Thus, the Master Teacher Pavilion would not devote too much of its manpower searching the Empire Alliance City either.

“Inform the Master Teacher Pavilion right away and tell them that we have found some traces of Zhang Xuan in the Empire Alliance City. Regardless of whether he’s there or not, let’s have the Master Teacher Pavilion first conduct a thorough

search throughout the city!” Zhang Wuheng harrumphed coldly.

“Un, I’ll inform them right away!” You Ruoxin nodded.

While they could conduct the search, they did not have the legitimacy and manpower of the Master Teacher Pavilion, so their efficiency was bound to be much lower.

All that was left to do was bide their time in the Empire Alliance City. Once Zhang Xuan was found, they would swoop right in and apprehend him!

# 1520 Be My Student 1

“Yang Xuan...” Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted in horror.

His first instinct was to escape, but he forced himself to remain calm.

From the looks of it, it seemed like the other party had seen through his disguise from the start. The fact that the other party had not made a move yet and instead chose to converse with him calmly showed that he bore no ill will.

On top of that, he had been trying to assess the other party’s strength, but as if staring into the abyss, he found himself unable to see the bottom of the other party’s cultivation. It was questionable whether he would really be able to escape or not even if he tried.

Rather than jumping into action, it seemed wiser for him to sound out the other party’s aim first.

While Zhang Xuan was in a state of utter shock, the elder standing opposite of him was also completely astounded.

He could tell with his eye of discernment that the person standing opposite to him was only in his early twenties, but the young man’s state of mind was so deep that even he was unable to see through him.

It was no wonder that no one had been able to see through the young man’s impersonation for so long.

More importantly, despite knowing who he was, the young man was still able to remain perfectly calm, not showing the slightest hint of fluster at all. Just from that, his state of mind had already surpassed all master teachers that he knew of.

There was a short moment of silence before Zhang Xuan remarked, “I have always taken pride in my disguise ability. If Yang shi doesn’t mind sharing, I am interested to know how you managed to see through me.”

He would not be so arrogant as to actually think that his disguise was impeccable, but with his Soul Depth of 29.1, which was on par with top 9-star master teachers, and the extraordinary flexibility of his body, not even Elder Qu and the others had been able to see through him. Just what kind of fatal opening was there in his disguise that made Yang shi so certain that he was Zhang Xuan?

“Your disguise was remarkable. From your outer appearance down to the aura of your soul, there’s no way I could have guessed it was you. The only reason I was so certain is because of the Sanctum Head Token in your possession,” Yang shi replied.

“Sanctum Head Token?” Zhang Xuan was stunned, not expecting to hear such an answer. He quickly flicked his wrist and took out his Sanctum Head Token.

After using it to defend against the attack from Elder Qu back at the Glacier Plain Court, he had placed it back into his storage ring, and he had not taken it out since then. Who could have thought that it would actually become the crux for Yang shi to find him?

“That’s right. The Sanctum Head Token is an artifact that Sage Kui, together with a group of powerful master teachers, painstakingly forged. While it isn’t the strongest weapon in the world, it harnesses the wills of the predecessors and the scholarly aura of the Sanctum of Sages. Even if you store it in your storage ring, you still can’t fully conceal the aura it emanates. It’s due to this property of the Sanctum Head Token that even with the untimely deaths of the preceding sanctum heads, the Sanctum of Sages was still able to eventually retrieve the Sanctum Head Token without fail!” Yang shi replied with a smile.

Zhang Xuan nodded in realization.

The Sanctum Head Token could be considered an insignia of authority and nobility for the Sanctum of Sages. Perhaps in a bid to sustain the legacy of the token, Sage Kui and the others had devised some method that would allow the top echelons of the Sanctum of Sages and Master Teacher Pavilion

headquarters to trace the whereabouts of the Sanctum Head Token.

And it was using such a method that Yang shi had been able to find his whereabouts and confirm his identity.

“Since Yang shi has found me, do you intend to apprehend me?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“I haven’t returned to the Master Teacher Pavilion for a very long time, and the decrees they issue have nothing to do with me. The reason I came looking for you is solely out of curiosity... A person as talented as you couldn’t have just appeared out of nowhere. I’m interested to find out what lineage you are from and whom your teacher is!” Yang shi replied with a smile.

Along the way, he had carefully browsed through Zhang Xuan’s records. The young man had claimed to be his student, but he knew very well that he had never met the young man before, let alone imparted any knowledge to him.

He knew all of the 9-star master teacher on the Master Teacher Continent, but he did not think that any of them wielded the ability to raise such a formidable student. In fact, even the student whom he had personally groomed, Feng Ziyi, was nothing compared to the young man standing before him.

He wanted to find out just whom the person behind Zhang Xuan was.

“This...” Zhang Xuan shook his head and replied, “I’ll be frank with you. I have never acknowledged a teacher before!”

Before others, he could still claim that his teacher was Yang Xuan, but with the person in question standing right in front of him, such lies no longer held any meaning.

“You have never acknowledged any teacher before?” Yang shi’s smile collapsed into a look of disbelief. “How could that be possible? I have looked through your records, and you were just an ordinary cultivator in the Tianxuan Kingdom. Within a single year, you have already grasped the strength of the Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm. How could you grow so quickly without the guidance of a teacher?”

Be it in terms of cultivation or supporting occupations, the young man before him seemed to grasp everything in an instant. Even when it came to his cultivation, everything seemed to bank on his whims. He could achieve breakthroughs as and when he liked, as if the concept of bottlenecks did not apply to him.

As unbelievable as it seemed, it might still have been possible if he did have a formidable teacher to guide him along. However, to achieve all of that by himself... this was something that even Yang shi himself was unable to believe!

One must know that even the legendary Kong shi had not grown at this breakneck speed either!

“I don’t know why, but be it cultivation or supporting occupations, I’m able to grasp and master everything in an instant. There’s nothing I can do about how talented I am!” Zhang Xuan replied with a helpless edge to his voice.

He could not possibly talk about the Library of Heaven’s Path, so he could only attribute everything to his own aptitude.

There should have been individuals who were so monstrously talented that they could not be defined using common sense in history, such as the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan. Did they not say that he was already a Saint realm expert at birth?

Considering how there were people in the world who were born as Saints, surely his talent of mastering everything in an instant was nothing to gawk at.

“This...” Yang shi frowned.

In his lifetime, he had met plenty of prodigies, and there were indeed those who possessed such talent too—the little princess of the Luo Clan was one such example—but... none of them were as overpowered as this!

Besides, the Luo Clan’s resources were there for all to see. It was due to the massive influx of resources, and this was including the guidance of 9-star master teachers, that she had been able to grow that quickly. On the other hand, the young man before him was an unaffiliated cultivator... and yet, he was actually growing at a rate faster than the little princess!



There was no way that such a thing could be achieved if he did not have a teacher!

Furthermore, based on what he had heard, the young man also wielded many extraordinary means as well, such as taming the lightning tribulation into subservience... Even he was incapable of pulling something as ludicrous as that off!

Yang shi hesitated for a moment before flicking out a jade token and passing it over. "I have a battle technique here. It's a finger art that Feng Ziyi was unable to achieve Major Accomplishment in despite having cultivated it for three years. Since you possess such talents, may I request that you try learning it so as to convince me that you really don't have a teacher?"

Since the young man had claimed that he was able to master everything swiftly, there was a very simple method to verify this claim. If the young man was really able to master the finger art swiftly, that would mean that there was some truth to his words.

"A finger art?" Zhang Xuan took the jade token and swiftly browsed through it.

Severing Yang Finger!

It was a Saint pinnacle battle technique that wielded unparalleled might. If used well in a battle, it could easily serve as a trump card in dire situations!

Fortunately, I do have quite a few finger arts in the Library of Heaven's Path... Compile!

Knowing that Yang shi was testing him, and he would clear this test as long as he could master the finger art, Zhang Xuan did not hesitate to collect the Severing Yang Finger into the Library of Heaven's Path. After which, he compiled it together with the finger arts that he had collected back in the Combat Master Hall.

The Severing Yang Finger was a little similar to the Grand Constellation Finger, which he had practiced back then. Its crux lay in focusing one's strength at a single point and releasing it all at once.

Soon, a new book materialized in the Library of Heaven's Path.

Zhang Xuan quickly flipped it open and browsed through it.

Just as he had expected, the compiled finger art was devoid of flaws. With a touch, the knowledge regarding the perfected Severing Yang Finger flowed into his head.

“This finger art of mine is a little too heavy on its killing intent, but it's still a formidable weapon when dealing with Otherworldly Demons,” Yang Shi said. “This finger art allows one to sever the vitality and longevity of one's opponent, but due to its might, it also inflicts a certain degree of damage on the practitioner as well. One must be able to concentrate one's strength, mind, spirit, and will together in order to execute it perfectly.

“I'll give you three days to learn this skill. If you are able to reach Minor Accomplishment within three days without my guidance, I'll believe that you possess the capability to have reached your current altitude without a teacher to guide you along...”

“Three days? There's no need for that!” Zhang Xuan opened his eyes and looked at Yang Xuan. “I am already done learning it!”

## 1521 Be My Student 2

“You are already done... learning it?” Yang shi’s eyebrows shot up, thinking that he might have heard wrongly.

You have only grabbed the jade token and nothing else. Heck, you didn’t even infuse your zhenqi into it to browse through its contents, and yet, you are telling me that you are already done learning it?

Furthermore, the Severing Yang Finger is complex and hard to grasp. Even when I came into contact with it the first time, it took an entire hour before I was able to finish reading through the manual and comprehend it. Yet, right after grabbing hold of the jade token, you are telling me that you have already mastered it?

Surely, you jest!

“Since it’s your battle technique, you can lower your cultivation and try it out,” Zhang Xuan said with a smile. “You should be able to tell whether I am lying or not once we trade blows.”

“Very well then!” Seeing how confident the young man before him was, seemingly not fearing his identity or strength at all, Yang shi nodded.

The young man was right. The best way to test a cultivator’s mastery of his battle technique was to trade blows with him!

If the young man was able to execute it fluidly in the midst of battle, that would mean that he had truly mastered the technique.

Boom!

Yang shi took in a deep breath, and the next moment, his cultivation plummeted to the same level as Zhang Xuan, Dimension Sundering realm primary stage!

“I’m going to make my move now...”

Yang shi raised his forefinger and middle finger, gathering a rotating surge of energy at the tip of his fingers. In an instant, the surge of energy had already gathered together in a cataclysmic storm.

Devastating might roared furiously from the midst of the storm, on the verge of tearing the surrounding space into shreds.

Simply replying with a nod, Zhang Xuan raised his finger casually and lightly tapped the space in front of him.

His finger did not wield the power of the storm, unlike Yang Xuan's, and his movements were slow as if an old ox plowing the fields.

Yang shi was intending to say that he had executed the finger art incorrectly, but when he saw the tip of the finger pointed at him, his eyes narrowed in alarm. In that moment, he could not even spare a shred of his attention toward speaking anymore.

He swiftly focused the crippling energy that he had gathered together and shot it forward to defend against Zhang Xuan's finger art.

Boom!

As the two fingers collided, the storm that had gathered abruptly vanished without a trace. Following which, Yang shi felt an enormous force striking him head on, forcing him to retreat uncontrollably. He swiftly released the seal on his cultivation, and only when he had recovered up to Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle did he finally regain his balance.

"You..." Suppressing the turbulence in his zhenqi, Yang shi was utterly shocked by what had just happened.

At first glance, the finger art that the young man had executed bore no resemblance to the Severing Yang Finger at all. However, the moment that the finger art struck him, it had suddenly made the full transformation into the Severing Yang Finger.

While he had altered the execution of the Severing Yang Finger, the might of the finger art did not weaken in the least; on the contrary, it had grown almost two times stronger!

Furthermore, the intent of the finger art was on point as well. He could feel the force of the finger consuming his entire body, nearly severing the zhenqi in his body into half!

This was a level of power that even he did not possess despite having mastered the Severing Yang Finger!

“Are you injured?” Zhang Xuan asked sheepishly.

“I’m fine,” Yang shi replied. Unable to hold himself back anymore, he asked, “You didn’t just master the Severing Yang Finger; you have even improved it as well, right?”

Through the previous clash, it was apparent that the young man had not only mastered the Severing Yang Finger but even managed to improve it. How in the world did he do it?

To do all of that within just a few minutes... even when he was seeing it with his own eyes, he still felt as if he was dreaming!

Was it really possible for someone to be so formidable in the world?

“In the first place, to design a battle technique solely for the sake of killing isn’t optimal. The purpose of battle techniques is to allow a cultivator to better utilize their zhenqi, exerting force that would have otherwise been impossible,” Zhang Xuan explained. “The Severing Yang Finger is too domineering, placing it at disharmony with the world. Thus, I altered it a little so as to place the focus on severing the enemy’s zhenqi instead. This way, not only will it not result in unnecessary bloodshed, it will also be able to let the opponent realize that they are outmatched.”

The Severing Yang Finger was indeed a formidable technique, but it was simply too demanding on a cultivator’s zhenqi, spirit, mind, and will. If the attack missed, the cultivator could end up creating an opening for the enemy to strike.

But after compiling the Severing Yang Finger with many other finger art manuals, Zhang Xuan had managed to resolve the flaw.

“It’s true that severing the opponent’s zhenqi is a less violent way of subduing one’s opponent and can avoid unnecessary

bloodshed, but... what if the enemy that you are facing is an Otherworldly Demon? Your act of mercy will not necessarily be reciprocated. Often, just the slightest difference in intent could bring one the greatest of calamities!” Yang shi said.

While killing arts were at disharmony with the world, there was still a reason for their existence.

One would not use it when fighting against fellow master teachers, but when facing the Otherworldly Demons, the slightest mercy could end up creating an opening for the other party to exploit, placing oneself and one’s allies in danger.

Such cases were simply too common.

Back then, when he entered the Subterranean Gallery for the first time with his teacher, out of a moment of compassion for the enemy, he had given the enemy an opportunity to launch a counterattack. Eventually, his teacher had ended up being severely injured while trying to save him, nearly losing his life.

He had spent a very long time regretting his indecisiveness back then. That incident had taught him a lesson that he would never forget—it was fine to have mercy when fighting a friend, but against one’s enemies, one had to cast aside one’s morals and be as ignoble as possible. Otherwise, the ones who would pay the price would not be the enemy.

“Indeed. You can’t afford to go easy against the Otherworldly Demons!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

“If you agree with my point of view, why did you still diminish the destructive might of the Severing Yang Finger?” Yang shi asked in bewilderment.

If the young man understood his logic, it seemed counterintuitive for him to still choose to alter the battle technique into such a form.

“Ah. To be honest with you, I only used thirty percent of my strength in the fight earlier so that I could exert and retract my strength freely. If I used my full strength, the might it commands is still not too bad!” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

“Thirty percent?” Yang shi staggered on the spot, and he thought that his mind would blow up. “You said that... you only used thirty percent of your strength?”

Using just thirty percent of his strength, the young man had actually managed to push him back and force him to raise his cultivation to Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle before he was able to steady himself once more.

Was the young man really serious about this?

“Indeed. A full might attack would be something like this...” Zhang Xuan nodded as he raised his finger once more.

This time, the young man’s movement was even slower, but for an instant, Yang shi felt as if the entire world had collapsed on him. A feeling of despair swiftly crept its way into his mind, leaving him feeling as if he would be completely helpless no matter how he struggled.

Kacha! Kacha!

Not daring to hesitate in the least, Yang shi quickly released the seal on his cultivation, and in an instant, his cultivation rose back up to Saint 9-dan Macrocosm Ascendancy realm.

Following which, he thrust his finger forth to face Zhang Xuan’s attack.

Peng!

The young man’s strength surged toward him like a relentless tide, threatening to disintegrate his meridians and render him completely helpless.

Once again, Yang shi was forced to retreat more than twelve steps back. His zhenqi was jolted into turbulence under the impact, and he had to take deep breaths in order to calm himself down. His face was as pale as a sheet of paper, marked with utter disbelief.

As one of the strongest experts in the world, even if he had suppressed his cultivation, the young man should not have been able to be a match for him. Yet, the young man actually overpowered him using his move after learning it for just a couple minutes...

That was too frightening!

Were there really geniuses in the world who could grasp anything upon sight and even alter it stronger in just moments?

“The strength isn’t too bad, right?” Zhang Xuan asked with a smile.

“Yes...” Calming down the turmoil he was undergoing inside, Yang shi exhaled deeply. With glowing eyes, he asked, “Since you don’t have any teacher at the moment, will you consider taking me as your teacher?”

The fact that the young man had claimed to be his teacher showed that the young man did have an interest in his lineage. He had still been able to remain calm about it in the past, but after witnessing the young man’s unbelievable talent, his heart as a teacher immediately lit up into a passionate inferno.

He could not even begin to imagine just how far the young man could go under his guidance.



# 1522 You Are a Celestial Master Teacher?

“You want me to accept me as your student?”

“Indeed. As long as you agree to be my student, the Master Teacher Arrest Warrant, the Zhang Clan, and the Glacier Plain Court, I can help you resolve them all!” Yang shi said with a smile.

In the first place, even though the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court had been humiliated by the matter, they had not lost any of their men due to that. Furthermore, Zhang Xuan was the head of the Sanctum of Sages, so the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would be lenient on him, especially considering the current circumstances. Thus, as long as he spoke up on Zhang Xuan’s behalf, in deference to his standing and power, this seemingly unresolvable issue could be resolved rather easily.

At the very most, he would just have to bring Zhang Xuan around to make more contributions so as to strike off whatever misdeeds he had done in the past.

As a grand elder of the Master Teacher Pavilion, he believed in his appeal to others. As long as he proclaimed his interest in taking in a student, countless masters teachers would immediately rush over to him. Considering how he had even made a direct offer to Zhang Xuan, he believed that the latter would not turn him down.

Just as he thought that the young man would delightfully kneel down and acknowledge him as his teacher, the young man shook his head instead and said, “Yang shi, thank you for your high opinion of me, but... I don’t have any intention of acknowledging a teacher just yet!”

Having undergone five Celestial Master Teacher acknowledgement, his eyes were already set on higher grounds. Even if Kong shi offered to take him in as his

disciple again, he might not necessarily agree to it, let alone Yang shi!

“Hmm?” Yang shi was stunned for a moment before his eyes slowly widened in astonishment. “You do have a strong foundation, possessing unique insights into battle techniques and cultivation. Under normal circumstances, it’s true that you wouldn’t need a teacher. After all, you have already found your own way of cultivation, and it would be meaningless for you to forcefully adopt another person’s lineage.

“That being said, the Master Teacher Pavilion still heavily emphasizes the idea of lineage. With a good teacher, your standing in the Master Teacher Pavilion could be increased significantly, thus bringing you greater convenience in whatever you intend to do in the future. Furthermore, beyond Saint 9-dan, there won’t be any predecessors whose path you can emulate. Without a teacher to guide you along, there’s a high chance that you might accidentally head down the wrong path, and that could pose to be deadly!”

“There won’t be any predecessors whose path I can emulate?” Zhang Xuan turned to look at Yang shi with a doubtful look in his eyes.

As he had not raised his cultivation or master teacher rank to the corresponding level yet, he had not been able to acquire any news regarding the affairs of 9-star master teachers. As such, he was completely oblivious to what lay beyond Saint 9-dan and how such a level of cultivation could be achieved.

“Becoming a 9-star master teacher isn’t just about one’s cultivation or Soul Depth. More than that, one must find their own philosophy of education and achieve a certain level of accomplishment in the field of teaching. Take Kong shi for example, the philosophies that he left behind include teaching without discrimination, individualized impartation of knowledge, cultivating a passion toward learning, wholesome education, and so on. The beliefs that he left behind have lasted through the ages, inspiring generation after generation of teachers.

“Not only so, one of the core requirements to becoming a 9-star master teacher is to achieve a breakthrough beyond Saint 9-dan, but it is no easy feat to do so at all. Even I had to tread carefully as if walking on thin ice, fearing that the slightest mistake would lead to my downfall! It’s during times like this that the guidance of a teacher plays a crucial role. If you simply rely on fumbling your way through, it’ll be difficult for you to get far!” Yang shi said with a shake of his head.

“Cultivation is a struggle against the heavens, so it’s bound to be fraught with difficulties. However...” Knowing that Yang shi bore good intentions at heart, Zhang Xuan pondered deeply for a moment, seemingly deciding on an important decision. A moment later, he exhaled deeply before walking up to Yang shi and saying, “Yang shi, please take a look at this!”

After which, Zhang Xuan tapped his finger forward, and a surge of Heaven’s Path zhenqi slowly gathered at the tip of his finger. At the same time, a unique aura was slowly being released from his body, pushing toward the elder.

Yang shi was initially a little perplexed over what Zhang Xuan was going to do, but upon sensing the aura that the young man emanating, he hurriedly retreated two steps as his eyes nearly bulged out of their sockets. His finger trembled non-stop as a furious tempest broke out in his heart. “Y-you are...”

Zhang Xuan nodded silently.

“This... But... No wonder!” Yang shi took a deep breath before conducting a solemn, proper bow toward Zhang Xuan.

He felt light on his feet, almost as if he was floating on cloud. The situation was simply too unbelievable to him.

It was no wonder the other party was unwilling to be his student. It turned out that he was a Celestial Master Teacher!

Having the acknowledgement of the world, it would be no exaggeration to say that he was the disciple of the very world itself. In terms of standing, the young man before him could be said to be on par with even Kong shi! Putting him aside, even if Kong shi was reincarnated, he might still be unqualified to take the young man before him in as his student!

Seeing that Yang shi understood what was going on, Zhang Xuan clasped his fist and explained, “You should also understand how astounding my identity is. I know that revealing my identity could help me out of the quandary I am currently in, but it would surely draw the frenzied aggression of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. I think it would be utterly foolish to place my life in the hands of another, so until I am powerful enough to protect myself, I don’t intend to reveal my true identity. It’s also for that reason that I claimed to be your student and used it as a cover to rationalize my accomplishments... I hope for your understanding for using your name without your consent!”

Back then, when he first impersonated Yang shi, he had been unaware of the other party’s existence. Perhaps, this was the path that destiny was veering him toward. Since things had already worked out this way, he might as well just play along with it.

This way, he would also be able to justify why he had chosen to impersonate Yang shi in the first place.

“I-it’s my honor!” Yang shi nodded with a dazed look on his face, having yet to recover from the shocking revelation.

It was his utmost fortune to have the Celestial Master Teacher claiming to be his disciple. He would have never dared imagine such a thing happening otherwise!

“I guess that’s to be expected. Who else other than the Celestial Master Teacher could wield such tremendous abilities?”

It took Yang shi a long moment of rumination before he was able to regain himself.

It was no wonder the young man had been able to pull off so many inconceivable feats, such as commanding the lightning tribulation! In his lifetime, Yang shi had seen plenty of geniuses, but none of them could match up to even a tenth of Zhang Xuan’s capabilities!

His direct disciple, Feng Ziyi, was one such example. In the eyes of others, he was a hard-to-come-by genius who

possessed unparalleled talent, and he could very well join the upper echelons of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters in the future. However, when compared to the young man before him, the difference between the two of them was so great that he could not bear to look at his direct disciple anymore. They were simply on two entirely different levels!

“Yang shi, the implications concerning a Celestial Master Teacher are too great, so I ask of you to keep this matter a secret,” said Zhang Xuan as he clasped his fist.

“Don’t worry, I won’t speak of this matter to another soul,” Yang shi replied with a nod.

The term ‘Celestial Master Teacher’ had come to take on too great a significance throughout the entire world. If it became known that Zhang Xuan was the Celestial Master Teacher, it would raise a huge commotion, such that even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would be rattled at its core.

At the same time, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe would also launch an all-out assault against mankind, not caring about the damage that they would sustain as a result of their actions, just so that they could prevent another Kong shi from rising among the humans. This would place mankind in grave danger, and the situation could very well run out of control.

“You have my gratitude!” Zhang Xuan clasped his fist.

Even though this was the first time that he had met Yang shi, for some inexplicable reason, he felt that the latter was someone whom he could trust and rely on, which was also the reason he had chosen to reveal his identity to Yang shi in the first place.

The greater the number of people who knew of his identity, the higher the risk that the news would leak out. As such, he could not afford to have the entire Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters learning of his identity as a Celestial Master Teacher. But at the same time, he also understood the unfavorable situation that he was in.

If he could just bring Yang shi over to his side and have the latter mediate on his behalf, this matter could very well be

resolved peacefully without him having to expose his identity to too many people.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony. This is part of my duty as a master teacher.” At this point, Yang shi turned a serious gaze to Zhang Xuan as he continued speaking. “You are a Celestial Master Teacher, and I understand that I don’t have the qualifications to take you in as my student. However, without exposing that you are the Celestial Master Teacher or having you come under any lineages, I’m afraid that it’ll still be hard for me to convince the Master Teacher Pavilion to get off your back.”

“Hard?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

He knew that the person standing right before him was the First Grand Elder of the Master Teacher Pavilion. Surely, with the other party’s esteemed standing, he would be able to resolve this matter easily. Why would it be hard for him?

“You have had quite a few clashes with the Master Teacher Pavilion, so I believe that you should be able to tell that the current Master Teacher Pavilion is no longer what it used to be,” Yang shi said with a deep sigh of resignation.

Zhang Xuan blinked, not expecting to hear such words from Yang shi.

“The purpose behind the founding of the Master Teacher Pavilion was to empower mankind and grant it the strength required to fend off any external threats. Anything aside from its primary purpose, master teachers would strive not to get involved with or even pay attention to at all. After Kong shi’s passing, most of the predecessors continued to embrace such a tradition. Alas, all men have ambitions and desires; the allure of power corrupts them so.”

Woefulness rippled in Yang shi’s eyes as he shook his head bitterly, seemingly lamenting the vicissitudes of life. “The effects of power appear benign in the short-run, but those who have enjoyed it for far too long fear having it stripped from their hands, and they will do anything to preserve their grip on power. Such is the case with the current Master Teacher Pavilion.

“They feel that the scars on their bodies and the blood that they have shed make them the rightful leaders of the Master Teacher Continent, and there’s no human and no power who is worthy of refuting their contribution to the world. They feel that the Master Teacher Pavilion deserves the very prestige that it’s accorded, and anyone who shows them any disrespect is contemptible. It’s a true pity that they have already lost sight of the very people who granted them their power in the first place. Without humans, who would care about whatever sacrifices the master teachers have made?”

“I simply couldn’t stand such snobbishness. So, I chose to spend my days roaming outside, rarely returning to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters!”

# 1523 Junior Yang Xuan

“This...” Zhang Xuan was stunned for a moment before he slowly shook his head.

He had encountered many different master teachers on his journey. He had met master teachers who addressed others humbly and amiably regardless of their ranking, as well as those who worked hard to ensure that their students matured to become upstanding and capable individuals in the future. At the same time, there were also master teachers who were self-important and abused their power for their own satisfaction, making them no different from tyrants.

The Master Teacher Pavilion was built with good intentions at heart, but as time passed, its primary purpose had inevitably dulled.

Power placed one in a lofty position and would corrupt one’s heart. Not even master teachers were infallible to that.

“The arrest warrant that the Master Teacher Pavilion has placed on you is one such example.” Yang shi shook his head and sighed. “I have checked your records, and on top of your outstanding talent, you have also made commendable contributions to mankind. Under normal circumstances, the stand that the Master Teacher Pavilion would take should be reconciliatory, working to mediate in the conflict between you and the other powers.

“However, your ability to control the lightning tribulation is simply too attractive for them to miss out on. To make matters worse, the fact that you don’t have a lineage means that they can force you to spit out your secret arts without fearing retribution from those in your lineage. With so many people desiring to obtain your secret arts, it’s no wonder they have chosen such an extreme approach this time around.

“Currently, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters is split into several factions, each of them keeping their secret arts and skills under wraps, aiming to outdo the other factions instead



of striving for collective growth. Long gone are the days when master teachers are truly open with one another, sharing their insights and knowledge unreservedly with one another.

“As long as a faction obtains your secret arts, they will be able to surpass the other factions and suppress them, thus gaining dominant power in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. Kong shi left the Master Teacher Pavilion behind in order to strengthen mankind, but ultimately, even his teachings aren’t able to overcome the fundamental nature of humans... Damn!”

“Indeed...” Zhang Xuan sighed. “No matter how good a system Kong shi put in place, the humans who manage the system are ultimately still fallible!”

In the early years of the Master Teacher Pavilion, master teachers had sought not power or recognition. They had believed that their responsibility lay in the betterment of mankind, and they had never hesitated to share their knowledge with others so as to achieve that goal.

But tens of thousands of years had passed since, and mankind had progressed to a stage of stability and prosperity. There was no longer any urgent threat for mankind to unite against, so they had turned their sights inward and begun fighting for power instead, forgetting their initial purpose.

Sometimes, even the character of the most pinnacle master teacher might not compare with the lowest 1-star master teacher.

At the very least, the lowest 1-star master teachers had not been corrupted by power and authority yet.

“For the past tens of thousands of years, there has been a pre-established cap on how high one’s cultivation can go, so most people lose their motivation to continue cultivating once they reach that perceived cap. Thus, they sought new ways to allow them to live grander and more pompously instead.” Yang shi heaved yet another dejected sigh.

The problem with the Master Teacher Pavilion was an intrinsic issue, and the corruption had already permeated right into the

core of the organization. It was not something that he alone could resolve.

“Much of the Master Teacher Pavilion’s virtue has eroded over the past tens of thousands of years... but even though the master teachers nowadays have already forgotten the lofty ideals that they once embraced, they remain unrelenting in dealing with the Otherworldly Demons and protecting mankind,” Zhang Xuan noted with a nod. “Perhaps it was in view of this that the preceding deputy pavilion masters thought little of the ailments that the Master Teacher Pavilion is suffering from!”

While power had caused the nature of the Master Teacher Pavilion to change, as long as they remained united when dealing with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, it would show that the master teachers had not truly cast away their values and purpose yet.

“Ever since Kong shi left us so, Great Sage has been the highest realm that any cultivator could reach. No one has been able to overcome the final hurdle to reach the level of the Ancient Sages. However, your very emergence signifies a change in the eras. As a Celestial Master Teacher, I believe that you’ll be able to lead mankind through its current threats and usher in another era of prosperity!” Yang shi exclaimed excitedly.

The preceding generations of deputy pavilion masters had been lacking in legitimacy and prestige, so they had not been able to garner the support of everyone in the Master Teacher Pavilion. However, things would be different for the Celestial Master Teacher.

“Great Sage?” Zhang Xuan asked with a frown.

“Above Saint 9-dan lies the realm of Great Sage, but unlike the Saint realm, Great Sage only consists of four dans. Beyond Great Sage lies Ancient Sage, which is also the level that Qiu Wu, Bo Shang, and the other disciples of Kong shi reached. However, in the dozens of millenniums since the passing of Kong shi, no one has been able to achieve a breakthrough to that level,” Yang shi replied.

“This...” Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted in astonishment.

All along, he had thought that Ancient Sage was just a manner of addressing the predecessors in the ancient era, but who could have thought that it would actually be the name of a whole cultivation realm!

“What realm did Kong shi reach?” Zhang Xuan could not help but ask out of curiosity.

Since his subordinates and disciples had all reached the level of Ancient Sage, as the number one expert of all mankind and the founder of the Master Teacher Pavilion, just how powerful could he have been?

“Kong shi reached an unfathomable level, far beyond our means to speculate!” Yang shi said as he gazed into the distance deeply.

At his peak, Kong shi had reached a level that no man had ever reached. No one could tell how powerful he was, or taking a step back, even if someone knew how powerful he was, it was not something that young juniors like them were qualified to look into.

“After all that has been said and done, I believe that you should have gained some understanding of the current Master Teacher Pavilion. If we don’t expose your identity as a Celestial Master Teacher, you will need another identity to increase your standing so that others won’t doubt you so. Otherwise, your feat of rising through the ranks within the span of a single year and successfully crashing two different Master Teacher Pavilions will be simply too eye-catching. Together with the huge uproar this time around, I fear that it will be hard to resolve this matter peacefully!” Yang shi said.

“This...” Zhang Xuan fell silent.

There was some truth in what Yang shi had said.

If the majority of the master teachers in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters wanted to lay their hands on Zhang Xuan, even with Yang Xuan’s influence as the First Grand Elder, it would still be difficult for him to overthrow a verdict that had the approval of the majority.

No matter how much prestige Yang shi wielded in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, the one who was truly in power and had the right to make the final call was still the deputy pavilion master.

Unless Zhang Xuan had a sufficiently high standing that could induce the deference of those 9-star master teachers, it would be difficult for Yang shi to gather sufficient momentum to stop the arrest warrant.

“I don’t have the right to accept you as my student, but I could take you into my lineage in the stead of my teacher. This way, you could assume the identity of my senior in front of others. My teacher has already passed on, so even if others question your identity, as long as I insist on it, there will be nothing that they can say. Of course, this is just an empty title to uphold in front of others. After all, even my teacher has no right to take you in as his student...” Yang shi revealed his thoughts.

“So, I’d become your senior?” Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan scratched his head in embarrassment. “But would you really be fine being my junior?”

“Celestial Master Teachers are individuals who can stand on equal grounds as Kong shi. If not for fear that it would be too shocking to others, I would have liked to acknowledge you as my teacher. Having you as my senior can already a huge honor in itself!” Yang shi hurriedly said.

As the First Grand Elder, there were very few who could match his standing on the Master Teacher Continent. However, compared to the Celestial Master Teacher, even his standing paled too much in comparison.

To act as Zhang Xuan’s junior and address him as his senior could already be considered insubordination, and it left him feeling a little jittery inside.

After a moment of contemplation, knowing that there was no other way around it, Zhang Xuan very reluctantly nodded and said, “I understand. Let’s go with that then, Junior Yang Xuan!”

“Senior Zhang...” Yang shi heaved a sigh of relief.

It sure was a bizarre turn of events. He had been intending to take the other party as his student, but it had eventually ended up with him finding himself a senior instead... Nevertheless, he was still delighted by the outcome.

With the emergence of the Celestial Master Teacher, the disjointed Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would finally come to be united as one. Mankind would grow stronger and stronger, and there would be no need to fear the crises that lay ahead of them anymore.

Zhang Xuan suddenly recalled the other matter he had at hand, so he asked, “Junior, I heard that you once helped a person reconstruct their meridians. May I know if that’s true?”

Previously, the guild leader had said that Yang shi had once successfully helped a cultivator replace their meridians. Since the person in question was standing right in front of him, it was a good opportunity to inquire about the matter.

“There was indeed such a matter!” Yang shi nodded in response.

# 1524 Reconstructing Meridians 1

“The reconstruction of meridians is a very complicated process, involving the Blood Reincarnation of the Ancient Sages. I had to browse through many ancient manuals before I was able to a feasible method,” Yang shi said.

“Blood Reincarnation?” Zhang Xuan asked.

Noting Zhang Xuan’s confusion at the term, Yang shi explained, “After making the breakthrough to Ancient Sage, one will be able to achieve Blood Reincarnation. In other words, as long as the cultivator retains a single droplet of their blood, there would be a way for them to come back to life.”

“This...” Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted in astonishment.

Vicious had reached the level of Blood Reincarnation as well. Because of that, he had been able to come back to life despite having his body shredded into innumerable pieces.

That being said, it was important to note that there was still a fundamental difference in the lifespan of humans and Otherworldly Demons. The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was blessed with inherent longevity, so an Ancient Sage human cultivator would not even come close to living as long as an Ancient Sage Otherworldly Demon. As such, even if traces of Ancient Sage human cultivators were found, it would be impossible to revive them anymore.

Nevertheless, if Ancient Sages were able to revive from mere droplets of blood, surely reconstructing meridians would be a piece of cake for them!

“The meridians of my student over here, Zhao Ya, have collapsed completely. I wish to restore her meridians so that she can continue cultivating. Do you have any way that I can possibly do so?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“Her meridians have collapsed completely?” Astonished, Yang shi quickly turned his gaze upon the young lady. He did not think that the young lady with a healthy glow on her face would be afflicted with such a severe condition. A moment later, he nodded grimly and said, “Her meridians have indeed collapsed entirely. I fear that it’ll be extremely difficult for her to recover to her former state.”

“Extremely difficult?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

“Indeed. The person whom I helped reconstruct his meridians had sustained some tears in his meridians as a result of old age, so all I had to do back then was connect them together. On the other hand, Zhao Ya’s meridians have collapsed entirely, leaving nary a trace at all. That means that you will have to reconstruct her meridians from scratch, and I fear that she won’t be able to take the strain that will be placed on her during the reconstruction process given her current weakened state.” Yang shi shook his head. “If we use my method on her, the chances of success will be exceedingly slim.”

“What’s the method that you used to reconstruct meridians?” Zhang Xuan asked. “I want to see if I can come up with an alternative method that will be feasible on her!”

While Yang Xuan felt that the chances of success were slim, the same might not necessarily apply for Zhang Xuan. Possessing the Library of Heaven’s Path, he would be able to resolve any flaws in Yang Xuan’s meridian reconstruction technique and uncover the most feasible and correct method to do so.

That should increase the chances of success considerably.

“The theory behind my meridian reconstruction technique is rather simple. I extracted the meridians from high-tier saint beasts and used a unique method to connect them with the meridians of the patient’s body. As the meridians of most saint beasts are similar in terms of flexibility to those of humans, while it might not be as easy to use, it should still suffice!” Yang shi said.

“You used the meridians of high-tier saint beasts?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

In a sense, this was similar to the act of organ transplant from his previous life.

“Saint beasts also differ in their constitutions as well, so their meridians should be different from one another.” Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before raising a doubt. “I don’t think that it would be viable to use the meridians from any saint beasts, right?”

Just like how it was possible for a body to reject a transplanted organ, the same problem should apply to meridian transplants.

“Of course, the saint beasts selected should possess a similar constitution to the patient. Your student possesses the Pure Yin Body, but saint beasts of the pure yin attribute are nearly non-existent. That’s also the reason I said that it would be extremely difficult or perhaps even impossible!” Yang shi shook his head.

“This...” Zhang Xuan fell silent.

It would be difficult to find even a human with Pure Yin Body, let alone a saint beast. This was indeed not a viable solution.

Hearing the conversation of the duo, Zhao Ya interjected for the very first time with a smile. “Teacher, I’m fine with this. If I can’t recover from my condition, I have no qualms with living as an ordinary human for the rest of my life!”

She had seen how far her teacher had gone for her. If it still did not work out despite that, perhaps this was just the path that fate had chosen for her. There was no need to force the impossible.

“Rest assured. Since I have said that I’ll cure you, I will definitely pull it off!” Zhang Xuan said with a confident wave of his hand before turning his gaze back to Yang shi. “Other than this, are there any other feasible solutions?”

“This...” Yang shi paused for a moment before saying, “It’s indeed not too easy to find beasts of the pure yin attribute. Alternatively, it might be possible to replace her meridians using plants!”

“Plants?”



“That’s right. Plants are more adaptable to their surroundings, especially those of neutral attributes, thus making them suitable to be molded into meridians. Unfortunately, most plants have a cap to their strength, and that means that the future accomplishments of the cultivator will be limited as well,” Yang shi explained.

Even the formidable millennium old herbs could not come close to comparing with the vitality of saint beasts. While they could be used to reconstruct one’s meridians, that could only be considered a mediocre solution, used only when there were no other alternatives available. This was because the limits of the plants would spell the limits of the cultivator, thus preventing the cultivator from reaching greater heights.

“You’re right. Unless the plant is extremely high-tier, it won’t work out well. However, it’s no easy feat to find such plants... Hmm?” Just as Zhang Xuan was in a state of loss, a thought suddenly surfaced in his mind, and he slapped his forehead in realization. “The vine of the Dongxu Gourd!”

The vine of the Dongxu Gourd was an artifact that could absorb even the violent energy of a lightning tribulation. On top of that, it harnessed the power of space, such that in terms of prowess, it would not pale in comparison to a Saint 8-dan cultivator. There was no doubt that it would serve as a much better meridian compared to a saint beast’s.

After all, not even saint beasts would dare devour lightning!

Hu!

With such a thought in mind, Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist, and the vine immediately appeared in his hand. He hurriedly brought it toward Yang shi and asked, “Junior, can you have a look to see if this will do?”

“This?” Yang shi quickly turned his gaze over, and it took only a few seconds for his face to warp with shock. “What is this plant?”

Astonishingly, he could not tell what it was even with his eye of discernment.

“It’s the vine of a Dongxu Gourd!” Zhang Xuan explained.

“Dongxu Gourd?” Yang shi pondered for a moment before shaking his head. “No, that’s not right. I have seen a Dongxu Gourd before, and its vine isn’t like that. The one that you have should have been nourished by a spirit vein for at least several dozen millenniums, and on top of that, it seems to harness the power of space and lightning...”

“This...” Zhang Xuan blinked before explaining, “The anomaly might be due to this vine absorbing plenty of lightning energy!”

“No, that isn’t it. As powerful as the Dongxu Gourd is, it still flees as far as it can in the face of lightning. After all, that’s retribution from the heavens. It shouldn’t be possible for it to absorb any lightning energy!” Yang shi refuted Zhang Xuan’s words.

“Let’s just put that aside for the moment. Is this vine suitable for replacing my student’s meridians?” Zhang Xuan asked.

The Dongxu Gourd that he had was left behind by Ancient Sage Qiu Wu. It had slipped right into his dantian shortly after its appearance, refusing to leave no matter what Zhang Xuan did. From such a perspective, there was indeed something rather bizarre about it. However, this was not the time to look into it. At this point, Zhang Xuan was only interested in knowing if he could use the vine to reconstruct Zhao Ya’s meridians and cure her.

“Considering that it harnesses the power of space and lightning, it’s indeed the ideal artifact to use to replace one’s meridians.” Yang shi examined the vine closely, and his eyes lit up in agitation. “If Zhao Ya’s meridians are reconstructed using this vine, her cultivation will surely be brought to new heights. In the future, she might even be able to push for a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.”

The vine in front of him harnessed incredible energy and properties, such that even he had some trouble trying to discern it. If it was used to reconstruct Zhao Ya’s meridians, she would surely be able to drive her zhenqi much easier and more efficiently. Not only so, her zhenqi capacity would also be enhanced to an unbelievable level.

“That’s great...” Hearing that it was a viable option to use as Zhao Ya’s meridians, and it would benefit her cultivation as well, Zhang Xuan could not help but heave a sigh of relief.

# 1525 Reconstructing Meridians 2

“Let me take a look at your meridian reconstruction technique!” Zhang Xuan requested.

“Here you go.” Yang shi flicked his wrist and passed a jade token over.

Placing his finger lightly on the jade token, the content within it swiftly surfaced in his head. The next moment, Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up.

The method used by the other party was indeed able to reconstruct a cultivator’s meridians, but there was a fatal flaw in it—it was too violent. Regardless of whether the reconstruction process was a success or not, it would place a great strain on the cultivator’s body.

In a sense, this was also similar to the organ transplant process in his previous life. Even if the organ transplanted was a match, the process was still highly dangerous and taxing on the patient.

Furthermore, meridians were pathways linking the various parts of the body together. Just a single mistake in the meridian pathway could lead to unimaginable outcomes.

“Junior, do you have any books regarding meridian reconstruction with you?” Zhang Xuan asked. “I need as many of them as possible!”

After reading through the book that Yang shi had passed to him, Zhang Xuan could tell that given the current limits of his knowledge, it would be difficult for him to find a feasible method to resolve the flaw in the short run.

Given that Yang shi had researched the topic for quite some time, even maintaining correspondence with the head of the Blacksmith Guild headquarters in order to trade insights

regarding the issue, he likely had plenty of resources regarding this topic.

“I do have quite a few books on it. Back then, I used my influence in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to gather everything on the topic that I could find for several years... However, it turns out that most of them are just thoughtless blabber, beautiful in theory but infeasible in practice...” Yang shi shook his head as he flicked his wrist, and a huge pile of ancient books materialized before him.

Back then, in order to reconnect his close friend’s meridians, he had spent quite a lot of time browsing through all of the books that he could lay his hands on regarding the topic. To date, he had accumulated around nine thousand of them, but it was a pity that most of them were not of much use.

“It’s fine. I’ll just take a quick look and get whatever’s useful from them,” Zhang Xuan said as he swept his eyes across the huge pile of books.

The next moment, all of them materialized in the Library of Heaven’s Path.

Compile! Zhang Xuan willed as he merged the nine thousand or so books together with the meridian reconstruction technique manual that Yang shi had made previously.

Soon, a brand-new meridian reconstruction technique manual was formed.

Zhang Xuan anxiously flipped it open to take a look, only to shake his head in disappointment once more.

The compiled meridian reconstruction technique was much simpler than the one that Yang shi had come up with, but there were still plenty of flaws in it. The meridian reconstruction process was still fraught with danger, and the slightest mistake could spell Zhao Ya’s death.

The main issue is that Zhao Ya is too weak after losing her cultivation entirely... Zhang Xuan rubbed his glabella in distress.

The meridian network of a human was simply too complicated. Had Zhao Ya’s cultivation not dissipated, he

could still have given it a try. However, after what had happened, she was already no different from an ordinary mortal, and in contrast to that, the vine of the Dongxu Gourd was simply too strong. If some mishap occurred in the reconstruction phase, the devastating power harnessed in the vine would terminate her life in a heartbeat.

To put it simply, Zhao Ya's body was so feeble that fusing the vine of the Dongxu Gourd into her would very likely result in her death, let alone manipulating the vine to form an intricate meridian network in her body.

All of a sudden, a certain thought surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind, and he froze on the spot.

Wait a moment... Is the meridian network of a human necessarily the most ideal layout?

All of the nine thousand or so books that Yang shi had gathered were all built upon the fundamental layout of the human meridian network, and that made the reconstruction phase exceptionally complex and dangerous. But was the meridian network of a human necessarily the best way to go about doing it?

That was not necessarily the case!

He knew of many formidable battle and cultivation techniques that had exceptionally awkward zhenqi pathways, making them difficult to execute and master.

So, could there be a more efficient meridian network than that of the humans?

If there really existed one, that would significantly increase the chances of success of the meridian reconstruction process, and it would be highly beneficial for Zhao Ya's cultivation in the future.

With such a thought in mind, Zhang Xuan decided to get right to it. He raised his head to look at Yang shi and asked, "Junior, do you have books on meridian networks? It doesn't necessarily have to be about humans; those of saint beasts will work as well!"

“Meridian networks? I do have quite a few books regarding that with me. I studied that back then as well, so I have books on humans, saint beasts, and even Otherworldly Demons...” Yang shi was not too sure why Zhang Xuan was asking about that, but he still flicked his wrist and took out all of the books that he possessed regarding meridian networks.

Just like how the Otherworldly Demons were researching master teachers, master teachers were researching Otherworldly Demons. Only through understanding how the Otherworldly Demons drove their zhenqi would the master teachers be able to better deduce the might of their cultivation techniques and devise feasible battle plans to better deal with them.

“You have my gratitude...”

Those books were bound to be incredibly valuable, but Yang shi had still shown them to him without any reservation. Zhang Xuan nodded in gratitude before sweeping his gaze across them.

Very soon, a brand-new meridian network book materialized in the Library of Heaven’s Path.

It was vastly different from that of a human meridian network. Humans had Eight Mystic Meridians, but the meridian network reflected in the compiled book only consisted of core meridians leading to the four limbs. The previous unnecessary complexity in the network had vanished without a trace.

There are the least flaws in this meridian network, so it’s bound to be much stronger than that of a human... Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up in excitement.

Through the Library of Heaven’s Path, it was apparent that the human meridian network was riddled with flaws, making it highly inconvenient for one to cultivate. On the other hand, the newly compiled meridian network was simple but nearly flawless. It consisted only of the portions that were absolutely required, removing all of the extraneous complexity in the network.

With fewer miscellaneous and secondary meridians, it would be much easier to cultivate, and the chances of one sustaining internal injuries would also be significantly lowered.

Zhang Xuan examined the new meridian network several times to ensure that it was feasible on a human body before heaving a huge sigh of relief. He turned to the young lady before him and said, "I'll help you reconstruct your meridians right now. No matter how much pain you are in, you must grit your teeth and endure it. Otherwise, if any mishap happens, not even the deities will be able to save you!"

"Teacher, rest assured!" Zhao Ya nodded resolutely.

After seeing everything that her teacher had done for her, how could she chicken out right now and disappoint him? She had already gone through death once, so no matter how much pain she would be in later, she was determined to grit her teeth and get through it!

"I have reconstructed meridians before, so I can help you..." Seeing that Zhang Xuan was going to make a move right after reading the books for a moment, Yang Shi hurriedly offered his help out of worry.

"There's no need for that. I'm intending to use a different method, so I'm afraid that you won't be of much help." Zhang Xuan shook his head.

The new meridian network was different from that of an ordinary human. As talented as Yang Shi was, there was still a high chance that the other party would make a mistake given that it would be his first time coming into contact with something like this. On the other hand, the reconstruction of meridians was a delicate process that allowed for no mistakes at all.

Zhang Xuan could not afford to take the risk.

"A new method?" Yang Shi's face twitched in shock.

It could not be that his senior had already devised something new after barely researching the topic for a moment, could it?

As expected of a Celestial Master Teacher! His talent was truly something that could not be measured using common



sense!

“I’m starting now!”

Zhang Xuan instructed Zhao Ya to sit cross-legged on the floor before flicking his wrist.

Hu la!

The vine of the Dongxu Gourd materialized in his hand. He swiftly infused his zhenqi into it, and under the rapid inflow of his energy, the massive vine swiftly contracted. In less than ten minutes, it was already roughly as thin as a strand of thread.

Cold sweat dripped down Zhang Xuan’s forehead.

It was fortunate that he had the ability to eliminate the spirit within the vine, and his Heaven’s Path zhenqi was also a powerful suppressant against it. Otherwise, it would have taken much more effort for him to tame it.

“Go!”

Zhang Xuan flicked his finger, and the vine slipped into Zhao Ya’s body through her glabella and slowly unfolded itself within her body.

As soon as the narrow vine entered her body, a burst of cold sweat swiftly broke out throughout the young lady’s body as a pained frown appeared on her face.

The areas where her meridians used to be had already closed up, so the vine had to pave out new pathways within her body slowly, which was almost equivalent to drilling multiple holes within her body simultaneously. The pain that she would have to suffer as a result of that was imaginable.

“Reconstructing meridians is a very delicate process. You mustn’t go too fast, and you mustn’t stop halfway,” Yang shi advised.

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

Even if Yang shi had not said it, he knew as much as well. In order to reduce the strain on Zhao Ya’s body, he would have to make sure to progress bit by bit, or else she would first

collapse under the massive stress piled on her body before the reconstruction process could be completed.

And the same time, the meridian reconstruction process could not be halted halfway through. Otherwise, the reversal of zhenqi would cause all of the meridians that had just barely formed to shatter once more.

She might be able to survive the impact the first time around, but given the feeble state that she was in, if it happened again, not even the Heaven's Path zhenqi would be able to save her.

However, that would not be a problem at all. He had plenty of time on his hands, so all he had to do was take his time.

# 1526 News on Sun Qiang

Geji geji!

As the vine gradually paved its way throughout Zhao Ya's body, her disposition was also undergoing a transformative change. It had grown even more refined and transcendental, as if an ethereal fairy.

“What an extraordinary meridian reconstruction technique...”

Zhang Xuan had seen the meridian reconstruction technique that Yang shi had devised as well, and while both would place the patient in great pain, Yang shi's meridian reconstruction technique was inferior in the sense that the patient would have to rest for quite some time before they would finally regain their strength. On the other hand, this meridian reconstruction technique was actually able to induce a transformative change in the patient's disposition even during the reconstruction process.

With this, it was clear which meridian reconstruction technique was more advanced.

“However, the rate at which the meridians are being reconstructed is rather slow. It seems like it'll take roughly a day or so...” Zhang Xuan remarked. “That's really a little too slow!”

Ever since he started cultivating, there had rarely been times where he would require more than two hours for his cultivation. Yet, the reconstruction of meridians actually took up an entire day! This left him feeling deeply helpless.

But no matter what, Zhao Ya was his direct disciple. No matter how long it would take, he would still have to advance slowly so as to ensure her safety.

“Slow?” Hearing Zhang Xuan's muttering, Yang shi's eyebrows twitched wildly. “Back then, just to repair a single meridian, I spent three whole years! On the other hand, you

are using only a single day to reconstruct an entire meridian network, and yet, you are calling this slow?”

It seemed like his senior was really unaware of the difficulty in meridian reconstruction. Even with his strength, it had taken him three years to mend a single meridian, and yet, his senior was actually unsatisfied with taking up a single day!

“Three years?” Zhang Xuan was rendered speechless.

If he had to take three years just to mend a single meridian, he would have immediately chosen against it. He would simply have found some other way to restore Zhao Ya’s strength.

Soon, half a day ticked by.

With his mind working under high intensity to ensure the highest possible level of precision in the reconstruction process, it did not take long for exhaustion to set in on Zhang Xuan.

Fortunately, Zhao Ya was making great progress. As more and more of her meridians were healed up, her aura was gradually growing stronger and stronger. At the same time, her disposition and appearance were undergoing a massive change as well. If she was just a bud that had yet to fully blossom in the past, at that moment, her petals were starting to open into a full blossom.

Noting the changes with his student, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. “It seems like her Pure Yin Body will be fully awakened once her meridians recover!”

He had been feeling a little distressed as to how he could awaken her unique constitution after reconstructing her veins, but from the looks of it, that was not a problem that he had to worry about anymore.

Just by using the vine of the Dongxu Gourd as her meridians seemed to be sufficient to further awaken her Pure Yin Body. Even if her Pure Yin Body was not fully awakened by the end of the reconstruction process, it would not be too far from that anymore.

With this step forward, she would no longer need to resort to harvesting yang energy from men in order to fully awaken her

Pure Yin Body.

“Truly incredible...” Looking at what was happening from behind, Yang shi’s eyes lit up in agitation.

With his eye of discernment, it went without saying that he could tell that the meridian reconstruction technique that Zhang Xuan was using was far more than advanced than his. Even when seeing it with his own eyes, there were still many aspects of it that he could not completely comprehend. He had to ponder deeply over them and browse through several materials before he could make sense of them.

For someone who had barely learned about meridian reconstruction to be able to come up with something as ingenious as this...

“Hmm?”

All of a sudden, Yang shi was drawn out of his thoughts and whipped out a jade token. Lowering his gaze to browse through its content, a deep frown slowly etched its way onto his forehead.

“What’s wrong?” Noticing the change in Yang shi’s expression, Zhang Xuan shot a glance in his direction while continuing with the reconstruction process.

As long as he did not abruptly halt the meridian reconstruction process, he could still afford to look around him and speak without bringing any adverse effects to Zhao Ya.

“Senior, it’s about your butler,” Yang shi replied with a troubled look on his face.

“My butler? Are you referring to Sun Qiang? What happened to him?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

As he had been in too much of a hurry to leave the Sanctum of Sages then, he did not have time to liaise with Sun Qiang. However, as long as the latter did not leave the Sanctum of Sages, he should still be rather safe.

Yang shi hesitated for a moment before revealing what was written on the jade token. “While I was making my way over to you, I instructed someone to take him over to the Master

Teacher Pavilion headquarters—it seemed like Zhan shi and the other elders of the Sanctum of Sages bore him ill-will, so I didn't think that it would be safe leaving him there. However, I just received a message saying that he got too depressed after learning the truth, resulting in him making a mistake in his cultivation. At the moment, he's already on the verge of death...”

“That's impossible!” Zhang Xuan's eyes narrowed menacingly. “The cultivation technique that he practices originates from me, and not to mention, he has always been an indolent individual. How could there be any problem in his cultivation?”

Sun Qiang's cultivation had originated from him. Even if it had not reached the tier of Heaven's Path, it was far superior to the other cultivation techniques on the Master Teacher Continent, possessing very few flaws. As long as he cultivated it properly, it was impossible for his cultivation to go berserk. How could anything happen just because he was upset?

“My guess is that someone is trying to uncover the secrets of your cultivation technique from your butler, so they intentionally gave him incorrect guidance to test some things out, thus resulting in an error in his cultivation,” Yang shi explained with a reddened face.

He was well aware of the nature of the group in the Master Teacher Pavilion. He did not think that those people were doing this out of malice; rather, they were probably just curious about his cultivation technique.

After all, it was unthinkable for a butler of completely ordinary aptitude to advance through the cultivation ranks so quickly. It was no wonder they would be curious about his cultivation technique.

Furthermore, Sun Qiang had already been in a mentally distraught state before due to the revelation. It would be no wonder he would be swayed so easily by the master teachers at the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

That being said, despite the condition that Sun Qiang was in, it was still unlikely that his life would be in any danger. While

he was a prisoner, the master teachers in the headquarters were at least principled enough not to take a person's life lightly.

Of course, it still would not do to leave Sun Qiang just like that.

“Un, that should be the case...” Hearing Yang shi's analysis, Zhang Xuan nodded. His first instinct was to rush over to save Sun Qiang, but he had his hands full with Zhao Ya at the moment. Thus, he could only suppress his urge, turn to Yang shi, and request, “Junior, you are also aware that I have my hands full and can't leave this area yet. Thus, I'll have to ask you to help me rescue Sun Qiang and bring him over to me. He has followed me since our time in the Tianxuan Kingdom, and I cannot stand seeing any harm come to him!”

As long as Yang shi stood up for him, with his influence and prestige, the other master teachers would not dare do anything to Sun Qiang.

“That's simple. Since I was the one who got your butler into the headquarters, you can count on me to ensure his safety!” Yang shi nodded. “However, you are currently in the midst of a meridian reconstruction process, and you can't afford to be interrupted by anyone at this point in time. If something happens while I am away...”

Meridian reconstruction was an extremely delicate process, so Zhang Xuan could not afford to be interrupted during this period of time. He did not dare imagine what would happen if he left right then and some mishap occurred as a result of that.

“It's fine. I'm still rather confident in my ability to disguise myself. Just help me give a heads up to the guild leader of the Blacksmith Guild, and I believe that no one will dare cause any trouble here. So, there shouldn't be any trouble on my side... On the other hand, Sun Qiang's matter cannot be delayed!” Zhang Xuan said.

While there was a Master Teacher Pavilion in the Empire Alliance, given his disguising ability, it would be nigh impossible for them to find him. Besides, as long as Yang shi issued a command to the guild leader of the Blacksmith Guild

as a 9-star blacksmith, the guild leader should be able to keep any uninvited guests away from him.

After all, not even the Master Teacher Pavilion would dare barge into the Blacksmith Guild carelessly!

Furthermore, he would be done with reconstructing Zhao Ya's meridians in another four hours or so, and they would be able to leave right after. Surely, nothing bad would happen within that short period of time.

Yang shi pondered for a moment before nodding in agreement. "Alright then... I'll help you seal this area first. I'll be using the Teleportation Formation from the Glacier Plain Court, so I should be able to return very soon."

The matter with Sun Qiang was indeed more urgent.

With a flick of his hand, he sealed the area completely before swiftly heading in the direction of the Glacier Plain Court.



# 1527 Zhang Xuan, Come Out and Accept Your Death!

A short moment after Yang shi left the Blacksmith Guild, he suddenly widened his eyes as a thought surfaced in his mind.

How could I have forgotten about the matter concerning Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng?

Sword Saint Meng had always thought of his senior as her son, and that was also one of the matters that Yang shi had sought to verify. However, the revelation that the other party was a Celestial Master Teacher had left him deeply shocked, and following that, he had been too deeply immersed in the ingenuity behind the other party's meridian reconstruction technique. As a result, that matter had completely slipped his mind.

If it had been anyone else, given his eye of discernment, he would have been able to tell with a single look. However, his senior's Soul Depth was far higher than his, and he also had the ability to morph his physical body freely. It was difficult for him to discern his senior's original appearance, let alone determine the origin of his birth.

Yang shi shook his head as he continued heading forward.

Forget it! Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng should be in the Glacier Plain Court at the moment. I'll just have to discreetly inform them of the matter and have them head over to take a look. Considering their blood ties, it should be easier for them to recognize him!

While he did know quite a few things surrounding the young prodigy, it would still be best to have his own parents verify his identity. Since that was the case, he would just leave this matter to them.

They were not very far away anyhow.

...

Shortly after Yang shi left, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

To be honest, it had been quite stressful for him to be standing before the man whom he had impersonated for so long. It was fortunate that the other party bore no malice toward him and was deferential to his identity as the Celestial Master Teacher. Otherwise, this matter might not have been able to be resolved so peacefully.

Seeing that his surroundings were finally quiet, Zhang Xuan exhaled deeply as a gleam surfaced in his eyes. “Alright, I should get to the real deal now...”

The new meridian network that he was going to reconstruct within Zhao Ya was simply too shocking, so he did not dare showcase it before Yang shi. On top of that, he was not too sure how it would turn out. As such, he had only focused on building up the foundations and reconstructing the parts that still bore some resemblance to that of the human meridian network, avoiding the portions where the meridian network had changed as far as he could.

But now that Yang shi had finally left, there was no need for him to hold back.

“Zhao Ya, from this point onward, I’ll be paving open new meridians in areas where you didn’t have meridians before, so the pain that you will be placed in will be ten times more excruciating than before. You must hold on and maintain your consciousness no matter what happens, understood?”

Knowing that the process would be unbearable for Zhao Ya, Zhang Xuan warned her grimly to allow her to prepare herself mentally for what was to come.

The new meridian network would differ greatly from the Eight Mystic Meridians that was within a human’s body, so there was no choice but for him to forcefully forge a way forward through unpaved terrain. The pain resulting from that would be as good as having a weapon stabbed into one’s body and twisted around, and the worst part was that the weapon would be inching forward bit by bit.

This was a pain that even the toughest of cultivators would find hard to endure.

However, this was a necessary process in order to reconstruct her meridians, and even with his Heaven's Path zhenqi, there was not much that he could do to alleviate her pain. He could only pray that she would be able to grit her teeth and persevere to the end.

“Teacher, I understand. Rest assured, I’ll surely pull through!” Zhao Ya replied resolutely.

As the vine slowly unfolded throughout her body, she could feel the changes in her body, and the hope for recovery was beginning to blossom in her. Not only so, she could sense that as long as she could pull through this ordeal, she would be able to push for a breakthrough directly. With her newfound power, she might just be able to help her teacher out of the current quandary that he was in.

Thus, no matter what, she had to hold on. It was not just for her but for her teacher as well!

“Good!” Hearing the resolve in Zhao Ya’s voice, Zhang Xuan was reassured.

He hesitated for a brief moment before flicking his fingers forward.

Tzzzzz!

Numerous surges of zhenqi swiftly shot forth in the form of thin threads, and they wrapped themselves around Zhao Ya as if creating a cocoon. They served to protect the vital acupoints and organs within Zhao Ya’s body.

After that was done, he continued pushing the thin vine forward, hastening its speed as it paved its way through Zhao Ya’s body.

The new meridian network compiled through the Library of Heaven’s Path was pretty much flawless, but ultimately, he still had not tested it. Thus, he had no way of knowing what would happen to Zhao Ya’s body as a result of the new meridian network. As such, he had taken every protective measure possible just to be safe.

By using his zhenqi to seal Zhao Ya's vital acupoints and organs, the moment that something went wrong, he could use his zhenqi to ward off any damage and heal her vitals at the same time, thus opening up the possibility for an emergency rescue. Otherwise, if he made a move only after something had happened, it would already be too late.

Huhuhu!

As the vine began making its way toward the unpaved regions, Zhang Xuan heightened his attention to keep a closer eye on things.

"Teacher..." the young lady moaned.

Her body was shivering intensely from the excruciating pain drilling through her body. It was at a scale far beyond what she had felt before. Even death had not left her as frightened as this!

If not for her sheer willpower pushing her on, she might have already fainted.

"Grit your teeth and hold on. The meridians here will be useful for your future cultivation!" Zhang Xuan bellowed.

"I-I will hold on!" Zhao Ya nodded feebly.

"Good!" Hearing that Zhao Ya could still respond to him, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief as he continued driving the vine forward.

Hong long!

As the vine finally pushed through a bottleneck, the aura emanating from Zhao Ya's body suddenly warped into a foreign form. It was tinged with sharpness and ferocity, reminiscent to the aura of a gladiator charging toward his enemy.

This aura pierced right into Zhang Xuan's soul, shaking him at his core.

"This is... the aura of an Otherworldly Demon?" Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in shock.

This aura was simply too familiar to him—it was something that only Otherworldly Demons should possess! He could emulate it using his Heaven’s Path zhenqi, but even his emulation was not able to reach this level of purity.

It was as if Zhao Ya had suddenly turned into an Otherworldly Demon Emperor, possessing a bloodline that was even stronger than Vicious’.

“Could it be because of the involvement of the Otherworldly Demon’s meridian network in the compiled meridian network?” Zhang Xuan’s face turned livid.

The new meridian network that he was paving for Zhao Ya was compiled out of the books that detailed not only human meridian networks but those of saint beasts and Otherworldly Demons too. The area that the vine was paving open did not exist in the human meridian network, but it was present in the Otherworldly Demon meridian network.

Zhang Xuan thought that a similarity in meridian network should not mean anything at all, but contrary to his expectations, it actually caused the warping of her aura.

“Zhao Ya, how are you feeling right now?” Zhang Xuan asked nervously.

“I... am... fine...” Zhao Ya’s voice was very soft and strained.

It seemed like she had to exert all of her strength in order to squeeze out those three words from her mouth.

Hearing that Zhao Ya was fine, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, he swiftly analyzed the situation before him.

“Otherworldly Demons do possess vastly different meridian networks compared to that of humans... Could the reason behind the difference in the level of existence between humans and the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe be due to the difference in their meridian network?”

Otherworldly Demons possessed strength equivalent to Transcendent Mortals at birth, and their lifespan was far longer than any human. As long as they were not killed due to some external event, they could easily live for tens of thousands of

years... This was something that even Ancient Sage human cultivators were unable to achieve!

Just from that in itself, it could be seen that Otherworldly Demons were beings that were more biologically advanced than humans.

Just by altering Zhao Ya's meridians to resemble those of an Otherworldly Demon, her aura swiftly changed from that of a docile human to that of a ferocious Otherworldly Demon. Was that not evidence that it was the difference in meridian networks that resulted in the difference in the level of existence of the two races?

If that was the case... were humans able to accept the meridian network of the Otherworldly Demons?

If it was possible for the meridians of a human cultivator to be reconstructed in likeness of the Otherworldly Demons, and the method to do so was propagated throughout the Mater Teacher Continent, would the human race not grow far stronger and live far longer?

As this thought surfaced in Zhang Xuan's mind, he quickly established a mental connection with Vicious in the Book of Heaven's Path, and soon, he received his answer.

"Master, there's indeed a fundamental difference between the meridian networks of humans and Otherworldly Demons. However, I fear that there won't be too many of the vine you have in the world. Furthermore... you are probably the only person in the world who is able to save a cultivator whose meridians have collapsed properly. Even that Yang shi fellow from before wouldn't be able to pull something like that off."

Zhang Xuan shook his head and sighed. "I guess you're right..."

Indeed. He only had this single vine from the Dongxu Gourd, and judging from what Yang shi had said, it seemed like the vine in his possession was an anomaly as well. Furthermore, the only reason Zhao Ya was able to survive even after having all of her meridians shattered was due to Zhang Xuan spending an entire day infusing his Heaven's Path zhenqi into

every single part of her body. Without either of those two, it would be impossible to replicate this miracle.

Besides, the utter collapse of meridians and the excruciating and lengthy reconstruction process... Honestly, this was not something that a normal cultivator could endure.

“It seems like it will be impossible to spread this procedure throughout the Master Teacher Continent...” Zhang Xuan shook his head in pity.

If humans could possess as much potential and as long a lifespan as the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, Kong shi’s goal of a strong mankind could very well be achieved. Even if the Master Teacher Pavilion ceased to exist, mankind would still wield the power to protect itself.

However, it was a pity that the vision would never come to be. Furthermore, it was still too early to tell whether the new meridian network would truly be beneficial or not. If Zhao Ya became as brutal and callous as the Otherworldly Demons as a result of the altered meridian network, then the creation of the new meridian network might not necessarily be a blessing for mankind. Until the results were conclusive, it was best to just wait and see.

“Continue!” Despite the risks of the new meridian network, Zhang Xuan knew that it was already too late to back out.

Thus, he continued driving the vine to pave a way forward in Zhao Ya’s body, and slowly, the aura of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe that the latter emanated grew stronger and stronger.

All of a sudden, a loud bellow echoed throughout the entire hall, causing even the roof to shudder. “Zhang Xuan, come out and accept your death!”

Si la!

Following which, the seal placed over the hall was torn apart by a powerful force.

# 1528 Who Dares Touch My Teacher? 1

“What?”

Zhang Xuan raised his head, only to see the First Elders of the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court, Zhang Wuheng and You Ruoxin, floating in the air, gazing down on him coldly. Without a doubt, the attack that had destroyed the seal had been executed them.

The seal that Yang shi had left behind would have had no trouble withstanding the attack of Saint 9-dan cultivators, but under the devastating force of two top-notch experts who had already surpassed Saint 9-dan, there was no way it could possibly stand a chance.

“You sure know how to disguise yourself well! If not for your Otherworldly Demon aura leaking out, even I would have had trouble trying to recognize you!” Zhang Wuheng sneered coldly as he glared fixedly at the young man within the hall, seemingly fearing that the latter would disappear from his sight if he averted his gaze for a moment. “Zhang Xuan, what else do you have to say for yourself?”

As he spoke, a powerful aura burst forth from him, crushing the hall beneath so heavily that it almost seemed as if the ground would be reduced to dust. Standing right in its face, Zhang Xuan felt his body freezing in place. The surrounding air suddenly grew so heavy that it suffocated him.

Despite having achieved a breakthrough to Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm, he still was not close to being a match for the First Elder.

The other party had definitely already reached the level of a Great Sage, or else he could not possibly have survived a cultivation ordeal that had already surpassed the scale of a Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal.



Seeing the confident looks on the faces above, he knew that the other party had seen through his disguise too.

Thus, he reverted to his original appearance and gazed upward. “I have nothing to say for myself. However, I plead for you all to just give me four more hours. I have something important that I have to finish!”

Zhao Ya was currently in a crucial phase in the reconstruction of her meridians. If he halted right now, even if she survived this ordeal, the wounds that she would sustain as a result would be irrecoverable!

In any case, after her meridians were healed up, he would be able to slowly deal with the Zhang Clan, Glacier Plain Court, and the Sanctum of Sages.

“Four hours? To give you time to escape? Do you take us for fools? Dream on!” Zhang Wuheng sneered coldly as he turned around and gestured grandly. “The rest of you can appear now. If you harbored any doubts toward my previous report, I believe that this should be more than enough to prove the authenticity of my words. The thing in front of him is emanating such concentrated killing intent... Even if it isn’t an Otherworldly Demon, it’s bound to be some kind of precious artifact of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe! Despite being a master teacher, he dares to collude with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe to conspire against mankind! Surely, I need not say more about the implications of his actions, right?”

Huala!

Right after those words were spoken, multiple bursts of wind echoed in the surroundings as fifteen master teachers flew over from all around. Each of them emanated a powerful aura that paled nowhere in comparison to that of You Ruoxin or Zhang Wuheng. As their auras weighed down on the entire Blacksmith Guild, it created a sensation that felt as if the world was collapsing on one.

“They are all 9-star master teachers?” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in horror.

Each of these master teachers had a 9-star emblem pinned on their chests, just like Elder Qu. In fact, even without their emblems, their esteemed standing was apparent just from their strength that they commanded!

For fifteen 9-star master teachers to appear in a single area simultaneously... just to apprehend him?

They sure held him in high regard!

While he had caused quite the uproar in the Zhang Clan and the Glacier Plain Court, considering how Zhang Wuheng and You Ruoxin were already around, it would be an impressive lineup with just another one or two 9-star master teachers with them. Yet, for fifteen to appear along with them...

When did 9-star master teachers become so cheap and commonplace?

It could not be that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had actually dispatched all of its experts to deal with him, could it?

“Are you Zhang Xuan?”

In his moment of shock, a voice suddenly sounded from above. It was from an elder in the sky who was gazing down on him with a look of incomprehension and lamentation.

Deputy Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan!

After hearing the reports from the three powers, Ren Qingyuan had thought that the fellow who had been causing trouble all around would be some kind of formidable figure. As such, he was a little bewildered to see that the person in question was just a twenty-year-old young man with a perfectly ordinary appearance. His cultivation was only at Dimension Sundering realm primary stage, and honestly, there did not seem to be anything particularly outstanding about him.

If one really had to point out something that was extraordinary about him, it would be how calm he was able to remain despite standing in the face of all of them. In terms of mental resilience, he could already surpass some of the 9-star master teachers.

“I am indeed Zhang Xuan,” Zhang Xuan replied with a nod.

“I have looked through your records. You have successfully crashed two pavilions and conquered the Tower of Master Teachers as well. You have shown outstanding talent in many of your supporting occupations, and you also managed to foil the ploy of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe’s Qingtian Lineage. There is no denying that you have made outstanding contributions to mankind.

“However, as a master teacher, virtue should always come first. You wreaked havoc in the Zhang Clan, Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court, and that is more than enough to strike off any contribution that you have made. Why are destroying your own future?” Ren Qingyuan said.

A person as talented as the young man before him was bound to achieve great things in the future, but why did he have to ruin everything for himself?

Before Zhang Xuan could speak, Zhang Wuheng interjected with a cold sneer. “Pavilion Master Ren, why are you wasting your breath on him? You aren’t intending to cover up for him just because he’s a master teacher, are you?”

“Cover up? First Elder, I have to ask you to watch your tongue. Be it master teachers or ordinary cultivators, as long as he has sinned, he would be punished. All are equal before the law!” Ren Qingyuan said.

“Humph, that would be for the best. Zhang Xuan has wreaked havoc in the Zhang Clan, destroying countless buildings and injuring many of our elders. The sins that he has committed are more than enough to put him to death many times over. Since Pavilion Master Ren has agreed that he should be punished, I won’t stand on ceremony... Men, seal the area. Make sure that he can’t get away!” Zhang Wuheng waved his hand grandly.

Huala!

Another eight more men dressed in robes imprinted with the Zhang Clan insignia rose into the air. They were experts from

the Zhang Clan, and their cultivation had all reached Saint 9-dan.

With their combined strength, they swiftly sealed the surrounding space firmly, rendering even Teleportation Formations unusable within this space.

“He destroyed our Sanctum of Sages and showed blatant disrespect to me and my elders. The Sanctum of Sages will not turn a blind eye to this matter either!” someone bellowed from the distance.

Sou sou sou!

Deputy Sanctum Head Zhan shi of the Sanctum of Sages swiftly flitted over with more than a dozen experts from the Sanctum of Sages following behind him. They took their stance above the Blacksmith Guild as well as they gazed down at Zhang Xuan with menacing eyes.

Despite being a student of the Sanctum of Sages, he had willfully destroyed the Sanctum Head Hall and its surrounding buildings. Not only so, he had even openly defied and injured Zhan shi and the others. This had gone far beyond what they could tolerate.

“Zhang Xuan, it’s one thing for you to destroy our Glacier Plain Court, but how dare you kidnap our young court chief as well! There’s no way we are going to forgive you for this!” You Ruoxin also stepped forward as an imposing aura burst forth from her.

That fellow had acted as Yang Xuan and sneaked their young court chief away, destroying countless buildings of the Glacier Plain Court in the midst of doing so... If not out of deference for Pavilion Master Ren, she would have dashed right forward to tear that fellow into pieces.

Paying no heed to Zhang Wuheng and Zhan shi, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze toward You Ruoxin and scoffed. “Kidnapped your young court chief? Are you really saying that I have kidnapped Zhao Ya? To think that the Glacier Plain Court would have a habit of spinning lies to your convenience!”

He was willing to admit that the fault was with him for what happened at the Zhang Clan and the Sanctum of Sages, but for the Glacier Plain Court to claim that he had kidnapped Zhao Ya, that was truly ridiculous!

If not for them resorting to depraved means in order to awaken their Pure Yin Body, cornering Zhao Ya to the point where she had to turn to him for help, those subsequent events would not have happened.

If they looked back to the root of the matter, the primary culprit was the Glacier Plain Court. Yet, they actually twisted the story to suit their purpose, claiming that he had kidnapped Zhao Ya instead. Preposterous!

To allow the other powers to spout such blatant lies, had the Master Teacher Pavilion really turned so lax? Or perhaps, just like what Yang Shi had said, the truth mattered not to them as long as they could achieve their personal motives.

At this point, Zhang Xuan raised his head to look at the 9-star master teachers above him with wintry eyes.

“What irony. I thought that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would be able to remain a neutral and impartial party on the Master Teacher Continent, but right now, it appears to me that it has already chosen to align itself with the Glacier Plain Court and become its spokesperson. Just how much lower can the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters fall?”

# 1529 Who Dares Touch My Teacher? 2

“Audacious!”

Upon hearing those words, the 9-star master teachers in the sky immediately bellowed furiously.

The Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was the top power on the Master Teacher Continent, and it had always been known as the embodiment of impartiality and justice. Yet, the young man spoke as if they were acting in collusion with the Glacier Plain Court. In an instant, all of the 9-star master teachers flew into rage.

“You said that I’m audacious? So be it! You are already determined to pin all of those crimes on me anyway, so what difference would one more make?” Zhang Xuan shook his head as he spoke with a voice filled with desolation.

It was no wonder Yang Shi was so disappointed in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters and refused to return there. Their actions were truly hard to accept.

It should not have been too difficult for the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to find out that Zhao Ya was actually his direct disciple, and that should cast some doubts on the Glacier Plain Court’s claims that he had kidnapped Zhao Ya. Yet, without bothering to clarify the matter, they had simply chosen to go along with the Glacier Plain Court simply for their own convenience. This was truly an embarrassment to all master teachers!

“Since you know your guilt, you should just surrender straight!” You Ruoxin harrumphed coldly. “Where is our young court chief? Where have you hidden her?”

“Your young court chief is in here!” Zhang Xuan harrumphed as he gestured to the cocoon in front of him.

“What did you say?” You Ruoxin’s heart skipped a beat.

The cocoon made of zhenqi threads did have the shape of a human, but from the killing intent emanating from within, it was apparent that an Otherworldly Demon lay within. Yet, the other party had actually said that their young court chief was inside. Could it be that the other party had used some secret art to turn their young court chief into an Otherworldly Demon?

But was there really such a technique in the world? Was one's race not decided at birth?

“Don't listen to his nonsense. He's just stalling for time, waiting for an opportune moment to escape. Let's just attack him all at once and apprehend him first! We can slowly interrogate him once we've sealed his cultivation!” Zhang Wuheng bellowed loudly.

“Indeed, we should apprehend him first before deciding on anything else! That fellow has simply too many tricks up his sleeves. The longer we wait, the more likely it is that he'll try to pull something!” Elder Qu yelled in consent amid the crowd.

While the young man's prowess was nothing much to fear, he had powerful tamed beasts and possessed the ability to manipulate the lightning tribulation. After all that they had been through, they knew better than to underestimate the young man. If the young man brought out some unbelievable trump card and successfully escaped right before their eyes, the lot of them would really become the laughing stock of the entire continent!

After saying those words, Elder Qu turned around and clasped his fist. “Pavilion Master Ren...”

“Just seal his cultivation. Don't go too heavy on him!” Ren Qingyuan gave his word of approval.

Since the Master Teacher Pavilion had already gone to the extent of issuing an arrest warrant, naturally, they could not just this matter go without doing anything. As for interrogation and the like, that could come after they grasped control of the situation.

“Yes!”

Huala!

Elder Qu turned to Zhang Wuheng and said, “First Elder, you have heard it. Make your move!”

“Alright!” A cold smile crept onto Zhang Wuheng’s face as he waved his hand grandly.

Hula!

The eight experts of the Zhang Clan immediately encircled Zhang Xuan. They gathered their strength together in order to form an energy barrier around the young man, slowly tightening it as they walked closer and closer to him.

Knowing that the meridian reconstruction process would be forcefully halted if he was captured by them, Zhang Xuan’s face turned livid.

He flicked his wrist and released the Inferno Qilin as he bellowed, “Inferno Qilin, stop them!”

He was bound to the spot at the moment, so he could only rely on his tamed beast.

It was fortunate that he had used medicinal herbs and his Heaven’s Path zhenqi to heal the Inferno Qilin’s injuries over the past two days. Otherwise, he would have been completely helpless at this moment.

Hong long!

As soon as the Inferno Qilin appeared, it let loose a resounding roar before swiping its claw ferociously at the surroundings.

Si la!

Perhaps it was because it had seen through the flaws of their collaboration, or maybe its might was simply that great, but the Inferno Qilin successfully tore apart the energy barrier created by the eight Zhang Clan experts instantaneously, forcefully pushing them back.

While they were all at Saint 9-dan, the Inferno Qilin still wielded an advantage due to its superior strength and physique. With its strength, unless the opponent was a Great



Sage, ordinary Saint 9-dan cultivators would not stand a chance against it at all.

“You ungrateful scoundrel! The Zhang Clan fed you for three years, yet you chose to conspire with others to deal with us. You are courting death!” Knowing that Zhang Xuan would bring out the Inferno Qilin to protect him, the First Elder took a step forward and thrust his palm forward.

Hula!

He tossed an artifact reminiscent of a fishnet outward, and it swiftly grew larger and larger in midair.

Roar!

Upon seeing the fishnet, a hint of fear surfaced in the eyes of the Inferno Qilin. It immediately retreated, attempting to flee. However, the artifact in the air seemed to have sealed space in a manner such that no matter how the Inferno Qilin tried to retreat, it was still unable to escape from the fishnet.

“To think that the First Elder would actually bring the Dragonsnare along with him!”

“That’s the artifact that our clan head used to capture the Inferno Qilin back then, right?”

“If I recall correctly, it’s a Saint pinnacle artifact, right? Paired by the First Elder’s strength, there’s no way the Inferno Qilin will be able to get away no matter how powerful it is...”

Upon seeing the fishnet-like object falling toward the Inferno Qilin, the experts of the Zhang Clan heaved a sigh of relief.

The Dragonsnare was an artifact that could even trap Saint beasts that possessed the Dragon Bloodline. While the Inferno Qilin was powerful, its strength was still lacking in comparison to beasts that possessed the Dragon Bloodline.

Huala!

While the crowd was still discussing the matter, the Dragonsnare fell right on the Inferno Qilin, trapping it in place. The latter struggled desperately in the hope of fleeing, but it was unable to free itself from the Dragonsnare.

“Come over!” Zhang Wuheng waved his hand, and the Dragonsnare began contracting in size as it flew over to his palm.

On the other hand, the Inferno Qilin appeared to have been sealed in another parallel dimension. It roared in fury, but there was nothing that it could do at all.

“Hmm?” Not expecting Zhang Wuheng to have such a powerful artifact in his possession, Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

With his current strength, without making use of the power from lightning tribulations, he was completely helpless against experts of Zhang Wuheng’s caliber.

“Now that his greatest trump card has been nullified, there’s no need to fear him anymore. Continue!” Zhang Wuheng commanded as he threw the trapped Inferno Qilin into his folded space.

Hula!

The eight experts swiftly got to their positions and gathered their strength together to form an energy barrier around Zhang Xuan once more, limiting his area of movement.

“Surrender right now, and you can be spared from some pain!” one of the experts of the Zhang Clan sneered coldly as he thrust his finger toward Zhang Xuan’s glabella.

In face of that attack, Zhang Xuan’s body stiffened.

If he was struck by that finger strike, his cultivation would swiftly dissipate, rendering him completely helpless. At the same time, the meridian reconstruction process would be interrupted as well.

However, he was in no state to avoid the attack either. While he could still multitask to some extent, he could not afford to channel his energy elsewhere or even move away, or else it would disrupt the meridian reconstruction process, and that would likely result in adverse consequences for Zhao Ya.

From the looks of it, he had no choice but to release his clone and Vicious together to fend off those Zhang Clan experts for

the time being.

It was a small matter for him to be apprehended, but if the meridian reconstruction process was disrupted, Zhao Ya could very well lose her life! That was not an outcome that he could accept.

However, releasing Vicious would really be the final straw. Once he brought it out in public, there would be no way that he could explain it to the Master Teacher Pavilion without revealing his Celestial Master Teacher identity anymore.

Also, he was a little apprehensive about bringing his clone out. After all, it was a God-tier artifact, and it could serve as a powerful trump card in times of emergency.

Forget it, there's no choice anymore. At this point, there's no backing down anymore...

Seeing that the finger strike of the Zhang Clan expert was about to reach him and that there was not any time to be wasted, Zhang Xuan gritted his teeth and flicked his wrist, intending to let Vicious out.

However, in this crucial moment, a voice rumbled furiously from afar.

“Who dares touch my teacher?”

Boom!

The next moment, the energy barrier created by the eight experts abruptly dissipated. Following which, the Zhang Clan expert that was making a move on Zhang Xuan suddenly started convulsing, causing him to crash right into the ground. Blood spurted wildly from both his mouth and nose.

“What?”

The other Zhang Clan experts also did not expect to meet with such a turn of events, and they hurriedly turned their heads over to see the culprit who had made a move on them. However, before they could see the other party's face, they suddenly started convulsing and plummeted to the ground as well.

“Poison Hall’s Right Guardian Shen Jue, Toxic Hand  
Eminence He Guangyu, and Myriad Poison Eminence Lin  
Jianghai have come under orders to offer Zhang shi our aid!  
We implore Zhang shi to pardon us for arriving late!”

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Three silhouettes suddenly appeared right before Zhang Xuan,  
and they swiftly kneeled down on a single knee.

# 1530 Heed My Commands

“Why are the lot from the Poison Hall here?”

“It’s said that the new head of the Poison Hall is the reincarnation of their founder. As a possessor of the Innate Poison Body, she possesses fearsome means. Just a while ago, the Master Teacher Pavilion dispatched a 9-star master teacher to scout out the Poison Hall, but he ended up being knocked out by poison instead... I don’t understand. Why are they getting involved in this conflict as well?”

“I have read Zhang Xuan’s records, and it seems like he once met the poison masters in a Poison Hall and integrated them into the ranks of the Combat Master Hall. Could they be repaying the debt from there?”

“That’s a rather low-tier Poison Hall over there. Surely it wouldn’t warrant the Right Guardian and two of the Four Eminences personally heading over to protect him, right?”

“Just a moment ago, I heard someone shout, ‘Who dares touch my teacher?’ Could it be that these poison masters are actually Zhang Xuan’s students?”

...

The abrupt turn of events caused a huge commotion amid the crowd.

Everyone had thought that Zhang Xuan was doomed, but who could have thought that three top brass from the Poison Hall would actually arrive at this moment to save him?

These three men were figures who could cause the entire Master Teacher Continent to rattle with just a stomp of their feet. There was a famous quote in the Master Teacher Continent that if a 9-star poison master was locked in the same room as a 9-star master teacher, the one who would walk out alive would likely be the 9-star poison master.

And these three men happen to be the cream of the crop of 9-star poison masters. That should be more than enough to show

how fearsome they were.

“The Poison Hall has always been a reclusive power, holing itself within the depths of a mountain range and refusing to submit to the Master Teacher Pavilion’s control. Since they dared step out of their self-exile, why don’t we just...” Elder Qu whispered to Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan as he pulled his thumb across his neck, making a gesture for death.

“Over the last few years, many things have happened to the Poison Hall. The Left Guardian, Hu Yiwei, was taken in by Yang shi as his butler, and the other two Eminences have been killed.” Ren Qingyuan pondered for a moment before nodding in agreement. “This is indeed an ideal opportunity to take them down once and for all.

“However, these three can be considered as the strongest experts in the Poison Hall aside from their hall master. Even if we make a move on them, we’ll have to move very carefully. It would be pointless if we sustain heavy losses while apprehending them!”

The Poison Hall’s reputation had never been good. It was only because they had chosen to hole themselves up in a mountain range filled with all kind of traps and shrouded by a poisonous mist that the Master Teacher Pavilion hadn’t been able to launch a large-scale invasion on them just yet. However, since they dared step out from their home base to wreak havoc there, they could very well make use of this opportunity to encircle and eliminate them once and for all.

“Ren shi, rest assured. The Poison Hall has always been an unstable factor on the Master Teacher Continent, and we have long made preparations to encircle and eliminate them. If they had continued holing up in their mountain valley, we might still have had problems dealing with them. However, since they have decided to run out here... Humph, today shall be their death date!” Elder Qu spat with a cold glint in his eyes.

“Alright then.” Ren Qingyuan nodded before waving his hand lightly.

The fifteen 9-star master teachers in the air swiftly understood his gesture and discreetly spread around the surroundings,

sealing all paths of escape from the area.

On the other hand, oblivious to the movements of the master teachers above and the impending danger that loomed just ahead of them, Shen Jue, Lin Jianghai, and He Guangyu raised their gazes to look at the young man ahead of them.

They were interested to see just who the man worthy of being their hall master's teacher and winning her absolute loyalty was.

To be honest, they were slightly disappointed by what they saw.

The person standing before them was younger than they had expected, and while his cultivation was exceptional for his age, it came nowhere close to matching to their hall master... They did not think that the young man was worthy of having their hall master mobilize their entire Poison Hall just to save him.

It was truly hard for them to understand why their hall master would think so highly of the young man before them.

But despite the doubts in their hearts, they dared not allow it to show on their faces.

"That lass..." Not expecting that Poison Hall to actually dispatch men to save him, Zhang Xuan felt a little moved and helpless at the same time.

The Poison Hall had always been on bad terms with the Master Teacher Pavilion. He was indeed thankful for their timely arrival, but at the same time, this could also lead to unnecessary complications.

While continuing to reconstruct Zhao Ya's meridians, he gazed at the trio kneeling before him and asked, "Where is your hall master?"

He was certain that he had heard Wei Ruyan's voice earlier even though it had been quite some distance away. However, since she had come to save him, why did she disappear all of a sudden?

“Reporting to Zhang shi, our hall master said that the Master Teacher Pavilion’s acts of encircling and assaulting you are deplorable and utterly shameless... She ordered us to rush over to protect you first while she takes a trip to the Master Teacher Pavilion in the vicinity to repay the favor to them...”  
Lin Jianghai clasped his fist as he reported.

“She is going around the Master Teacher Pavilions in the vicinity to repay the favor?”

Wei Ruyan had been in a sickly state from a very young age, living a life that could hardly be counted as a life. Those difficulties had left her with little regard for rules and convention... If it was her, she really might go around poisoning master teachers just to vent anger against the Master Teacher Pavilion on his behalf!

Hearing those words, the master teachers in the area nearly plummeted to the ground from a mixture of horror and rage.

“You cowards!”

This was especially so for Ren Qingyuan; he nearly exploded on the spot.

Possessing the Innate Poison Body, the head of the Poison Hall was as good as a walking calamity. Even 9-star master teachers would not be able to withstand the poison that she emanated, let alone ordinary master teachers! If she made a move personally, this would really end in a widespread massacre for all of the master teachers in the vicinity!

Unable to hold back his rage anymore, Ren Qingyuan bellowed in fury, “Take down Zhang Xuan and those three fellows right now!”

It was in consideration of his identity that he had been unwilling to have the master teachers make a move previously—after all, it would be dishonorable for 9-star master teachers like them to gang up on a junior. However, with the head of the Poison Hall on the loose, he could not care that much anymore. They had to quickly apprehend those four so that they could devote their forces to dealing with the head of the Poison Hall.



A second wasted could mean the deaths of a hundred more master teachers.

Aside from that, they would also be able to use those four as hostages in order to force the head of the Poison Hall to stop what she was doing and cure the master teachers that she had poisoned.

“Yes!” Upon hearing the orders, the master teachers immediately released furious roars and rushed forward.

Elder Qu charged ahead of the group and kickstarted the duel with a palm thrust toward Shen Jue.

Si la!

In an instant, the surrounding air suddenly grew incredibly viscous, and overwhelming might poured down like a raging waterfall, threatening to bore a hole into the ground.

Elder Qu could not be considered too strong among the 9-star master teachers in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, but he was still unmistakably a Great Sage expert. Powerful shockwaves rippled out from his furious palm thrust, and unable to take the impact, the Blacksmith Guild abruptly collapsed into rubble.

Facing Elder Qu’s devastating attack, Shen Jue’s lips curled up. “Do you think that you alone will be enough to kill me? Think again!”

With a cold harrumph, he retaliated with a palm strike of his own.

As the Right Guardian of the Poison Hall, as well as an individual who had almost succeeded in becoming the hall master, Shen Jue’s strength was definitely not one to be underestimated.

The moment that the two palms collided with one another, Elder Qu felt the power that he commanded being swiftly corroded by some intangible force, to the point where he could almost feel a burning sensation on his skin.

“It’s lethal poison!” Elder Qu narrowed his eyes in realization as he quickly flicked his free wrist and took out a jade bottle.

Without any hesitation, he crushed the jade bottle into bits.

Boom!

A gush of water shot out from the bottle, and it swiftly dissipated Shen Jue's zhenqi as soon as it came into contact with it.

"Tianyun Divine Water? The Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters sure is extravagant!" Shen Jue sneered with an awful look on his face.

The Tianyun Divine Water could be said to be the closest thing that the Physician Guild headquarters had created that could be termed as an all-cure panacea to poison. However, it was also incredibly difficult to concoct, making it a priceless treasure. However, Elder Qu did not hesitate to use a large quantity at once, and as a result of that, Shen Jue's poison art was severely weakened.

"Of course, it's important to be prepared before dealing with underhanded scoundrels like you!"

Seeing that the Divine Water had effectively neutralized Shen Jue's attack, Elder Qu bellowed loudly, "Comrades, hurry up and make a move as well. This is a good opportunity to rid the Master Teacher Continent of the vermin known as the Poison Hall!"

"Charge!"

The morale of the master teachers was raised tremendously, and they swiftly whipped out all kinds of treasures to enter the fray.

Huala!

In an instant, attacks from all directions rushed toward Zhang Xuan, forming a frightening storm.

Facing the onslaught of the master teachers, Lin Jianghai's face turned livid as he furiously roared, "Protect Zhang shi at all costs!"

"Very well!" The other two swiftly moved their focus to defense, and they hurriedly drove their zhenqi to form a protective barrier around them to ward off the attacks.

Hong long long!

As powerful as the three of them were, there was no way that they could stand a chance against fifteen master teachers together with Zhang Wuheng, You Ruoxin, Zhan shi, and the others simultaneously. In just two breaths, a crack had already appeared in their barrier, and the three of them spurted mouthfuls of blood simultaneously.

The situation was truly disadvantageous for them.

Seeing that the three poison masters were swiftly reaching their limits, Zhang Xuan shook his head and said, “Abandon the energy barrier and heed my commands!”

# 1531 The True Might of the Poison Masters

The offensive prowess of the simultaneous assault from fifteen 9-star master teachers was simply too frightening. Putting aside the three poison masters, even if Yang Shi was around, he would also have succumbed swiftly!

“Heed your commands?” Shen Jue and the others were surprised to hear such words from Zhang Xuan.

Even they were helpless against so many 9-star master teachers, so what could a mere Saint 8-dan cultivator possibly do?

“That’s right!” Zhang Xuan replied as he met the gazes of the three of them one by one.

“This...” Seeing that the young man was not joking around, the three poison masters traded gazes as deep frowns appeared on their foreheads.

The opponents that they were facing were 9-star master teachers. Every single one of them was unimaginably powerful! If they followed the young man’s commands on this matter, they could very well be wiped out!

Lin Jianghai sent a telepathic message to Shen Jue and He Guangyu. “Guys, let’s just listen to him. Our hall master instructed us to hold him in higher regard than her!”

Shen Jue and He Guangyu hesitated for a moment before nodding in agreement.

From their interactions with the hall master, they also knew how highly the hall master viewed her teacher. If something happened to him today, she would surely have them killed in a moment of fury.

The current situation was already bad enough as it was. Since they did not have any better ideas in mind, it could be worth

gambling on the young man; he might just hold the key to leading them out of this crisis.

Forcefully holding the barrier up to fend off the barrage of attacks, Lin Jianghai quickly asked Zhang Xuan, “Zhang shi, what do you want us to do?”

Zhang Xuan’s voice echoed by the ears of the crowd.

“Dissipate the energy barrier. Shen Jue, drive your Golden Yang Poison Art, take twenty steps forward, and flick your left hand. I know that there’s the venomous essence of Dustbreaking Twilight in your fingernails, so flick them out.

“Lin Jianghai, take twenty-seven steps to your right and prepare to release your Crimson Consonance. There’s no need to aim it any specific person—just scatter it lightly into the surroundings and you’ll see its worth.

“He Guangyu, nicknamed the Thousand Hands Poison, I know that you bring a huge variety of lethal poison on you, or more specifically, fifty-four poisons. Remain where you are and scatter eight of them toward the sky. After which, shoot seventeen of them right ahead of you. Then, remain on standby and await my next orders. You can decide then whether it’s worthwhile to continue following my orders or not!”

“Y-you... know of my Dustbreaking Twilight?” Shen Jue’s body clearly stiffened upon hearing Zhang Xuan’s words.

He was certain that this was the first time that he had met Zhang shi, but even if that was not the case, the Dustbreaking Twilight was a lethal poison that he had concocted not too long ago, not to mention that he had just decided on a name for it on his way there... Not even the hall master would be aware of it, yet the young man was able to name it and point out that it was hidden in his left fingernail.

Shen Jue was not the only one who was shocked. With a look of disbelief on his face, He Guangyu exclaimed in shock, “You know that I have fifty-four different poisons on me?”

As those poisons were his trump card, not even the closest people to him knew the number of poisons that he carried with

him. On top of that, he reserved two of them for only the direst of situations, vowing to keep them hidden unless the situation truly called for them. Despite that, the young man had still been able to accurately point out how many poisons he had with him.

And that was not all. Each poison had an optimal way of planting them, depending on their properties and forms. There were exactly eight poisons in his possession that were discreet enough to be scattered upward without anyone noticing, and similarly, there were exactly seventeen of them that could be fired as swift projectiles, making them suited for direct offense.

In other words, there was no doubt that the young man really knew what poisons he had in his possession!

Was the young man actually a mind reader?

Seeing that the three poison masters were still dawdling around after hearing his commands, Zhang Xuan growled in displeasure, “If you still treasure your lives, hurry up and get to it!”

“Yes!”

Knowing that this was not a good time to allow their thoughts to wander, the trio swiftly acted according to Zhang Xuan’s instructions.

While they could not fathom what the purpose of making those moves was, the fact that the young man was completely aware of their trump cards was more than enough to say that he was not messing around and had a plan in mind.

Shen Jue swiftly drove his Golden Yang Poison Art before he decisively abandoned the energy barrier and dashed forward. He took exactly twenty steps forward, just as commanded.

Si la!

Barely after he stopped his footsteps, he felt a powerful force sweeping way. The attacks of two master teachers were already right before him.

He flicked his left finger lightly and shot out the Dustbreaking Twilight venomous essence that he had hidden beneath his fingernail.

*TZZZZZZZZ!*

As soon as the venomous essence came into contact with the master teachers' attacks, their zhenqi immediately began corroding.

“This is bad; it's lethal poison!” Narrowing their eyes in shock, the two master teachers immediately retreated in a fluster.

At this moment, Lin Jianghai had already taken twenty-seven steps right at this point and scattered the Crimson Consonance powder outward, and the two master teachers happened to step right into its area of scatter. As soon as they came into contact with the Crimson Consonance, their zhenqi immediately began bubbling as if it was boiling.

*Pu! Pu!*

The two master teachers immediately spurted blood out. In no state to attack anymore, they quickly retreated out of the area of battle and sat on the floor to suppress the poison running through their veins.

The fifteen master teachers were moving as a whole in a formation, so with the abrupt disappearance of two members, the formation swiftly collapsed. He Guangyu's lethal poison dispersed into the surroundings, forcing the master teachers to back off a hundred meters away.

It was almost as if a vacuum had been created in an instant. All of a sudden, the master teachers who had been ferociously attacking a moment ago dared not approach.

“This...” Seeing how the crisis that they had been facing was resolved with just a few simple movements, the three poison masters traded incredulous glances with one another.

They were confident of their strength, but the enemy had the Tianyun Divine Water to suppress them, which placed them in a highly disadvantageous position. If the fight had dragged on,

it was only a matter of time before they sustained heavy injuries.

However, by following Zhang Shi's commands, not only did they manage to avoid direct confrontation with the Divine Water, they also managed to incapacitate two master teachers and successfully drive back the others. This was a result that they could brag about for many years and pass down to their descendants. At the same time, it would also serve as a testimony of the might of the Poison Hall!

“Zhang Shi...” Unable to hold back their agitation, the three turned intrigued gazes to Zhang Xuan.

They had simply followed the young man's orders, but even at that moment, they were unable to comprehend how it had produced the effect that it did.

Knowing that the three poison masters were curious about what had just happened, Zhang Xuan explained the earlier happenings to them. “Earlier, there were fifteen 9-star master teachers attacking us simultaneously, and three of them only managed to clear the 9-star examination in the recent decade. As such, their state of mind and fighting prowess were clearly a notch lower as compared to the rest of the group.

“Of the remaining twelve, seven of them have sustained some traumas in their long years of battle against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and they haven't fully recovered even now. Four of them were serving as the lynchpins of the formation, so they could not move too quickly or else they would have risked the formation collapsing.

“Shen Jue's advancement of twenty steps forward happened to be where the three newly promoted 9-star master teachers were stationed. By sending them into a fluster, an opening was created in the formation for He Guangyu to drive away the seven injured master teachers and force the lynchpins to swiftly retreat. With that, there was no way for their formation not to collapse!

“Of course, as master teachers, it would be foolish to underestimate their flexibility in adapting to their situation and their fighting prowess. The key to the earlier maneuver



actually lay in Lin Jianghai's twenty-seven steps to the right. That area happened to be the point of convergence for their zhenqi in the formation. In other words, your maneuver effectively poisoned all of them with the Crimson Consonance!

“While they might appear to be completely fine on the surface, the truth is that they are currently busy suppressing their poison. Of course, given that the poison was distributed among all fifteen of them, its effectiveness has been reduced considerably. Nevertheless, it still managed to scare them off for the time being. At the very least, they will not dare attack recklessly any time soon!

“Well, given the lack of time, I couldn't come up with a wholesome plan. That's all I could come up quickly!” Zhang Xuan shook his head and sighed.

“Is that still not considered a wholesome plan to you?”

“To think that you can calculate all of that in the spur of a moment...”

“Timing, formation, analysis of the opponent... You were actually able to achieve an impeccable evaluation on all of those with just a swift look...”

Shen Jue and the others trembled as if they had seen a ghost.

# 1532 First Elder of the Luo Clan

As members of the top echelon in the Poison Hall—and this was especially so for Shen Jue—in order to find the legendary Tome of Poison Legacy that their founder had left behind, they had spent most of their days roaming the world. On their journeys, it was inevitable that they would meet with several powerful master teachers, and there were even some occasions where they had exchanged blows with the grand elders of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters. Even so, they had never heard of any master teacher being able to analyze everyone's condition accurately with just a look and devise strategies on them in just a few seconds!

This was not just at the level of being discerning anymore but being omniscient!

“Un! It isn't a good timing for us to attack yet, so just focus on defense for the time being. I have a few surges of zhenqi here, and I want you all to discreetly plant them in the area. Make sure that no one notices them. Once you are done, return here and sit down!” Zhang Xuan instructed as he flicked his finger.

The three poison masters each received several surges of zhenqi.

These surges of zhenqi were rich in spiritual energy, and they harnessed a nourishing aura, contrasting sharply to their destructive, poisonous zhenqi. While Lin Jianghai and the others had no idea why Zhang Xuan was issuing such instructions, they still followed his orders and discreetly planted those surges of zhenqi around the area.

A poison master's strength lay in planting poison in their victim without the latter noticing anything at all, let alone that these surges of zhenqi were completely attributeless, making them even less detectable. It did not take them long to finish planting the zhenqi, and they swiftly sat down in front of

Zhang Xuan. They closed their eyes and started meditating, paying no heed to the menacing glares from the master teachers above.

It did not take long for the master teachers in the air to successfully dispel the poison in their bodies, and they quickly turned their sights in Zhang Xuan's direction. Upon seeing how defenseless the four of them were, frowns appeared on their foreheads.

To be honest, they could have made use of their moment of panic to escape earlier, but not only did they choose not to do so, they had even sat down and meditated on the spot. Just what were they up to?

“Humph, they are just putting on a front! The only reason we suffered a setback earlier is because we were unprepared for their attacks. As long as we proceed carefully, we will surely be able to slaughter them!” Elder Qu spat coldly.

“Indeed! If we can't even subdue three poison masters, what right do we have to lead mankind against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe?” another master teacher growled in agreement.

While the Poison Hall had always been considered vermin on the Master Teacher Continent, in truth, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had never considered it as a threat. They felt that as long as they were willing to devote their forces to deal with them, they would be able to destroy them anytime they wanted to.

As such, they had charged into the battle expecting to be able to subdue those three poison masters with ease, especially given the powerful forces that they had present. Who could have thought that the other party would suddenly make such a bizarre maneuver that ended in all of them getting poisoned instead?

“In the end, the only powerful threat that they have is poison. I happen to be a 9-star physician specializing in the treatment of poison, so I have quite a few antidotes with me in my storage ring. Allow me to serve as the vanguard and pave a way

forward for the rest of you!” With a cold bellow, a master teacher stepped forward.

He flicked his wrist and popped an antidote into his mouth. Without waiting for Ren Qingyuan’s approval, he strode toward Zhang Xuan and the others and thrust a powerful palm strike downward upon them.

His power was colossal as if numerous mountains were falling from the sky, but then, it came into contact with one of the surges of zhenqi that the poison masters had planted around the area.

This surge of zhenqi swiftly flowed against the master teacher’s zhenqi, and in the blink of an eye, it had already dived into the master teacher’s body.

If it was lethal poison, the protective layer of zhenqi that maintained around him would have automatically filtered and deflected it away. Even if it managed to breach his defenses and slip into his body, the antidote that he had swallowed earlier would also have immediately moved to neutralize it. However, the surge of zhenqi just happened to be pure and attributeless. It successfully bypassed all defensive mechanisms and entered the master teacher’s meridians before swiftly making its way toward his vital organs.

Huala!

The next moment, the master teacher’s face abruptly warped in pain, and the might behind his palm strike dissipated entirely.

Putong!

He plummeted from the sky and curled up from excruciating pain on the ground.

“This...” Elder Qu widened his eyes in shock. He hurriedly rushed up to check the master teacher’s condition before uttering in alarm, “Elder Bai has been poisoned.”

He had also encountered this condition back at the Glacier Plain Court. Zhang Xuan, disguising as Yang shi, had managed to poison him using some means that remained a mystery to him even now, stripping him of his strength.

Otherwise, he would not have allowed the young man to act as he pleased and destroy the Glacier Plain Court's long heritage.

“Poisoned?”

Everyone hurriedly turned their sights over, only to see Elder Bai trembling non-stop, seemingly placed in immense pain. The antidote that he had swallowed previously did not seem to be working at all.

“What kind of poison is that?” Ren Qingyuan was stunned.

He knew how skilled Elder Bai's medical skills were, and it was not as if he had been unprepared at all—he had even gone to the extent of swallowing an antidote in advance! Yet, he had still ended up being incapacitated by the other party's poison... Just what kind of poison could be that lethal?

“I have no idea either...” the trembling Elder Bai explained through clattering teeth. “It's no different from ordinary zhenqi, but as soon as it slipped into my body, it swiftly turned into lethal poison, making it impossible to guard against!”

“Ordinary zhenqi... Could this be Will of Poison? This...” Ren Qingyuan exclaimed in astonishment. He immediately turned to the other 9-star master teachers and commanded, “Everyone, stand back! Don't launch an assault recklessly! Wait till we have found a countermeasure before making any moves!”

Will of Poison referred to the poisons that were harmless usually, making cultivators lower their guard around it. However, it would turn into the most lethal of poisons at the poison master's will, making it a frightening tool of assassination.

If the poison masters had planted such a formidable poison in the area, the tables could swiftly turn on them if they charged in recklessly. Thus, they had to find a countermeasure first before making a move.

“I have come into contact with this poison before. Without a doubt, it's indeed formidable, but it's also very easy to deal with as well. Come, let me help you...” With a flick of his finger, Elder Qu sent a surge of zhenqi into Elder Bai's body.

Having experienced such poison in the Glacier Plain Court, he knew how to resolve. While it did inflict great pain on the ones afflicted with it, it could not hurt one's core.

As expected, with his help, the master teacher managed to resolve the poison within just three minutes.

However, after seeing what had happened to the master teacher, the others did not dare approach Zhang Xuan and the others easily.

“Let's try finding the areas where the poison is planted and uncover what kind of poison it is. We won't make any progress just waiting idly here!”

“Don't worry. As long as this area is sealed, they have nowhere to escape to. Besides, there's a time limit to how long a poison can be exposed to open air before it loses effectiveness. I don't believe that the poison can continue remaining as potent as it is...”

The crowd discussed their next course of action.

No one dared to attack, but no one left the area either.

“Zhang shi... is actually a master at poison too?”

Seeing how the young man was able to render the fifteen 9-star master teachers and a deputy pavilion master helpless, the gazes that Lin Jianghai and the others directed at the young man changed. Unlike before, they were filled with respect and awe.

As poison experts, they knew how powerful the ‘Will of Poison’ was. What was even more formidable was how the young man was able to infuse his normal zhenqi with the Will of Poison and bring out formidable prowess. They had never seen such an incredible use of poison in their life before.

Previously, they had thought that the hall master was only respectful to the young man due to the gratitude that she had for him in her earlier years, but after witnessing this sight, it seemed like that was not all. In terms of mastery of poison, the young man was definitely above them, possibly on par with or even exceeding their hall master!

It was no wonder the young man was their hall master's teacher. At this point, they had no doubt that their hall master's poison art had truly originated from him!

“As long as we can buy enough time for the hall master's return, we will be able to turn the tables on them...”

Seeing how the master teachers dared not approach despite how infuriated they were, Lin Jianghai and the others heaved a sigh of relief.

If they could buy sufficient time till the arrival of their hall master, their danger would be resolved.

“What's going on here? Which one of you is Zhang Xuan?”

In this moment of silence, a voice suddenly sounded in the air.

Following which, a figure suddenly appeared in the distance. It was an elder with a white, flowy beard.

“It's the First Elder of the Luo Clan!” someone amid the crowd exclaimed.

Upon seeing that man, Ren Qingyuan's eyes lit up in agitation. “Hahaha! Luo Qingchen, you arrived at a timely moment!”

—

Do consider joining my Discord to chat about the novel: <https://discord.gg/ATHVehx>

If you like my work, do consider dropping a small tip via Paypal: <https://donatebot.io/checkout/277761613128531969>

# 1533 Wei Ruyan Arrives

“This is bad!”

In contrast to Ren Qingyuan’s excitement, Shen Jue’s face turned livid upon seeing the arrival of the elder.

“What’s wrong?”

Lin Jianghai and the others turned doubtful gazes toward him.

“Luo Qingchen is the First Elder of the Luo Clan, and he possesses exceptional aptitude toward the manipulation of space. The poison that Zhang shi instructed us to plant around the area might be able to fend off most cultivators, but I fear that he will be able to overcome it easily!” Shen Jue explained.

“What? What do we do then?”

Grave expressions surfaced on Lin Jianghai and He Guangyu’s faces.

In this world, every single existence had its own nemesis. No matter how formidable a poison was, there would definitely be a way to deal with it. While they knew that the poison zhenqi that Zhang shi had left around the area would not stop the 9-star master teachers for too long, they did not expect them to overcome the problem so swiftly!

They had been banking on it lasting till their hall master came back, and everything would have been resolved swiftly. Who could have thought that the First Elder of the Luo Clan would arrive at this moment?

“... that’s how it is. Elder Qingchen, I beseech you to lend us your strength!” Ren Qingyuan swiftly explained the matter to Luo Qingchen before clasping his fist to make a formal request.

“That isn’t a problem at all!” Luo Qingchen chuckled softly as he reached out and grasped at the space before him.

Si la!



The next moment, Zhang Xuan felt as if the space around him had been isolated. The zhenqi and lethal poison that they had planted around the area previously seemed to have been severed by some mysterious power and stored in another dimension, causing him to lose control over them.

“Thank you...” Seeing how easily Luo Qingchen resolved the problem they had been plagued with, Ren Qingyuan delightfully relayed his gratitude.

With sufficient time, they could have achieved the same as well. However, if they wanted to achieve the same level of precision and accuracy as Luo Qingchen in carrying out the feat, not harming the surroundings in the least, that would have been truly difficult.

“Let me do it!” After all of the surrounding poison had been spatially isolated, Zhang Wuheng chuckled as he raised his hand and dashed forward.

When he started saying those words, he was still in the sky, quite some distance away from Zhang Xuan and the others. However, by the time he spat out his last word, he was already standing right before Shen Jue and the others. The instant that he thrust his palm down, it felt almost as if the heavens had been overthrown, completely eradicating the concepts of time and space.

There was almost no time lapse in between Luo Qingchen’s separation of space and Zhang Wuheng’s move, making it nigh impossible for Zhang Xuan and the others to respond to the situation.

“Block him!” Shen Jue bellowed as he flicked poison gas off from his fingertip to engage Zhang Wuheng.

“Humph!” Without bothering to dodge, Zhang Wuheng simply heightened the might of his palm strike.

Kacha!

The poisonous gas was immediately forced back by the overwhelming might of the palm strike, seeping through Shen Jue’s pores.

Pu!

Shen Jue spat a spurt of blood as black patches appeared all over his face. He quickly took out an antidote and consumed it before feeling a little better. However, by the time all of it was done, it was already too late for him to dodge Zhang Wuheng's palm strike. His chest caved in under the latter's attack, and his entire body was knocked into the ground.

Seeing how Right Guardian Shen Jue, the most powerful man of the group, was swiftly incapacitated under the collaboration of the duo, Ren Qingyuan could not help but nod. "It's no wonder the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan want to ally with one another. The combination of temporal and spatial powers is indeed fearsome."

Individually, the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan paled far in comparison to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, but if the two of them allied with one another, even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would have to think twice before challenging them.

"I think there's no need to trouble Elder Wuheng any further than this." Ren Qingyuan turned to the 9-star master teachers behind him and ordered, "All of you, take those two down as well!"

"Yes!" Elder Qu, Elder Bai, and the other elders quickly flew forth.

Previously, it had been due to Zhang Xuan's arrangements and the sudden onslaught of many unseen lethal poisons that their encirclement had failed tragically. However, with their eye of discernment, they were able to swiftly analyze the mistakes that they had made and the properties of the poisons that they had just faced, thus putting them in a much better position this time around.

Peng peng peng!

In the blink of an eye, Lin Jianghai and He Guangyu were already exchanging blows with Elder Qu and the others.

The difference in the fighting prowess of both sides is simply too big... Zhang Xuan thought anxiously.

His means could only induce fear in the 9-star master teachers temporarily, making them dare not attack them. However, it was unfortunate that it had been foiled by the First Elder of the Luo Clan.

Even though those three poison masters were among the top echelon of the Poison Hall, ultimately, it was nigh impossible for them to challenge the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, which had dominated the Master Teacher Continent for many years.

Not to mention the fact that they could only stand their ground in order to protect him, or else they might still have been able to try other maneuvers.

Pu! Pu!

In less than ten blows, Lin Jianghai and He Guangyu had already sustained considerable damage. Just like Shen Jue, they were forced to the ground by a compelling force, completely sealing off their movements.

“Don’t kill them yet. If the head of the Poison Hall really dares to make a move on our master teachers, we’ll use them as chips to negotiate with her!” Ren Qingyuan said with a wave of his hand.

While the newly inaugurated head of the Poison Hall might be young, the terrifying reputation of the Innate Poison Body had been passed down from generation to generation. With her unparalleled mastery of poison, if she really made a move on the Master Teacher Pavilions in the vicinity, there was no way that they would be able to stop her.

Besides, it was too late for them to rush over to save them. More likely than not, they would be blindly chasing after her tail, thus putting them in an even more disadvantageous position. Rather than that, it would be better for them to capture her subordinates so that they would have something over her.

“Alright!” Elder Qu nodded as he quickly walked over to Shen Jue’s side to place him under control first.

All of a sudden, he felt a dangerous aura assaulting him, and he hurriedly backed away in fright. But before he could get too far away, his face suddenly turned black, and he found himself losing control over the zhenqi within his body.

Putong!

He was unable to sustain his flight any longer and collapsed to the ground.

“What happened?” Alarmed by the sudden twist, Ren Qingyuan, Zhang Wuheng, and the others immediately tensed up as they assessed their surroundings carefully.

A quiet but imposing voice echoed in the air. “I shan’t trouble Master Teacher Pavilion to take care of my poison masters!”

Following which, a young lady dressed in red robe slowly descended from the sky.

She was not too old, probably only around seventeen to eighteen, and she had a skinny and not-too-tall stature. However, there was a pink aura rippling around her, covering a radius of ten meters or so. Be it plants or zhenqi, anything that came within its range would be swiftly corroded into nothing.

Ren Qingyuan attempted to extend his Spiritual Perception toward the young lady in order to assess her closely, but before his Spiritual Perception could come close to reaching her, it was abruptly severed. In fact, the lethal poison around her even traversed through his Spiritual Perception toward him and would have afflicted his Primordial Spirit if not for his decisive severing of the connection.

“What formidable poison...” Ren Qingyuan’s eyebrows shot up in astonishment.

To be able to become the deputy pavilion master of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, his strength could be considered to be the cream of the crop among the elders. He still could not compare up to the distinguished grand elders who had been around for a long time, but without a doubt, his strength was ranked amid the top of the Master Teacher Continent.

Yet, despite his strength, he was not even able to peer into the young lady's strength. This was too fearsome!

“Are you the newly-appointed hall master?” Ren Qingyuan asked.

To be honest, he was really caught off guard by how powerful the new head of the Poison Hall was. He was not certain if he could defeat her even if he used his full strength.

On the other hand, the red-robed young lady continued descending silently from the sky, paying no heed to Ren Qingyuan's question at all.

Seeing how disrespectful the other party was, one of the 9-star master teachers furiously howled, “You lass! Are you deaf or mute? Can't you hear our deputy pavilion master is talking to you?”

Hearing those words, the young lady shot a cold glance over to the 9-star master teacher before flicking her hand lightly, as if swatting a fly.

“Ahhh...”

The next instant, the complexion of the 9-star master teacher turned pitch black, and he clasped his neck tightly as if he could not breathe at all. Following which, he fell from the sky to the ground as well, just like what had happened to Elder Qu earlier.

Ren Qingyuan quickly rushed over to the 9-star master teacher and fed him an antidote, and only then did the latter's condition improve slightly. However, terrified by the previous experience, the 9-star master teacher no longer spouted any nonsense anymore.

To be able to poison him with just a casual swat of her hand... just what kind of ability was that?

He was not the only one in such a state. The other 9-star master teachers also tensed up as they gazed at the young lady in front of them warily with ugly complexions.

For an individual to induce such fear in sixteen 9-star master teachers and the leaders of three major powers... no one

would dare believe such a thing to be possible!

This was the Innate Poison Body, one of the strongest unique constitutions in the world, an existence deeply feared by even Kong shi back then!

Hu!

Before everyone's fearful gazes, the red-robed young lady landed on the ground, and she swiftly kneeled with both of her knees.

“Teacher, please pardon Wei Ruyan for arriving late!”

# 1534 Pavilion Master Seal

Seeing how the sickly young lady who could only afford to live from day to day, never daring to imagine what would come in the future, had already grown to become a powerhouse of the Master Teacher Continent, capable of inducing fear even in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, Zhang Xuan's eyes reddened in agitation as he nodded with a heartened smile. He reached out his hand and lightly patted the young lady's head.

“Not bad. You have finally grown up!” Zhang Xuan said as he gazed deeply at the young lady before him in reminiscence.

The first time that he met the young lady, she had still been lying unconscious on a bed. Just so that her sickly body could last a little longer, her father had cast aside his morals and committed many atrocities. In the end, despite knowing that it was a sure-death journey, he had unrelentingly hiked up the Cloudmist Ridge, which was filled with saint beasts far stronger than him, and in the end, he never did find his way down.

After entering the Poison Hall, she had many capable poison masters working tirelessly to help her awaken her unique constitution. In a matter of months, her disposition and strength had undergone massive changes. From a weak young lady who wielded not even the strength to snap the neck of a chicken, she had become someone who commanded deference even from 9-star master teachers.

If Wei Changfeng was looking down from above, he would surely be gladdened to see how she was doing!

Geji! Geji!

While Zhang Xuan was stroking the young lady's head as his thoughts wandered into the past, Shen Jue, Lin Jianghai, and He Guangyu were looking at the shocking sight with absolute fright.

That person whose head was being fondled was their founder! Possessing the Innate Poison Body, she commanded absolute authority in the Poison Hall. Anyone who dared stand against her in the Poison Hall would swiftly be reduced to ash. It was with such overwhelming strength that she had been able to gain full control over the fractious Poison Hall within just a few months.

Even as a Guardian and Eminences of the Poison Hall, they still had to tread carefully around her, fearing that a single mistake would bring her wrath upon them. Yet, that fellow actually reached out to fondle her hair, as if doting on a young child.

“Is our hall master... not angry?”

They cowered backward in fright, fearing that the hall master would fly into a rage and implicate them as well. But contrary to their expectations, there was not the slightest hint of rage in her eyes. Instead, they could see agitation and longing in her eyes, similar to that of a reunion with close kin.

As they came to realize what was going on, the trio thought, It seems like Zhang shi isn't just our hall master's teacher; he's her benefactor as well. We must relay these words to the others when we return—cross the hall master rather than cross Zhang shi!

If they offended the hall master, perhaps they might still be able to defuse the situation by apologizing. However, if they offend Zhang shi and the hall master learned of it... it was very likely that the hall master would kill them without bothering to listen to their explanation!

“The head of the Poison Hall... is Zhang Xuan's student?”

“So, the reason she spared Gong shi back then was out of consideration for him?”

“The fact that a student that he raised was able to become the head of the Poison Hall means that he is a formidable poison master as well! It's no wonder he was able to wreak havoc in the Zhang Clan, Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court despite his low cultivation realm! The Way of Poison is



unorthodox and depraved; those who practice it can't possibly be of honorable character!"

"With deadly poison in their possession, the Master Teacher Continent will remain threatened as long as they live. We have to deal with them promptly! Otherwise, if they ever decide to use their strength for evil, it would end in a bloodbath for the Master Teacher Continent!"

Watching the sight in front of them, an uproar broke out amid the 9-star master teachers.

The head of the Poison Hall had made a domineering entrance, and her every movement and gesture further created her image of invincibility. Yet, as soon as she arrived before Zhang Shi, she immediately kneeled down and allowed the latter to fondle her head as he pleased, as if she was just a little girl before him.

While they were shocked by the matter, it had also made them further their resolve. Without a doubt, Zhang Xuan would be an even more frightening force if he matured. If they could not control him now, the world would be a mess in the future!

"We must try to pull them over to our side, and if that doesn't work out... we'll have no choice but to destroy them!" Ren Qingyuan told the 9-star master teachers telepathically with a grim look on his face.

Prodigies were indeed the greatest treasure of mankind, but only obedient prodigies were useful prodigies. Those who refused to bow down to command and simply did as they pleased would eventually culminate into a calamity!

Over the past tens of thousands of years, countless geniuses had risen in the Master Teacher Continent, and there was no lack of cases where they had turned into demons due to the occurrence of an event in some point of their life. As such, the Master Teacher Pavilion had come to take only two stances when it came to them—the geniuses could either choose to submit to the Master Teacher Pavilion's authority and come under its command or choose death!

To protect mankind from the threats surrounding it for many years, the Master Teacher Pavilion could not afford to be all good and virtuous. Ideals and morals were only for the privileged. When the fate of mankind was on the line, they would have no choice but to compromise their morals for the sake of the greater good.

Elder Qu and the others nodded in agreement to what Ren Qingyuan said.

After issuing his instructions, Ren Qingyuan glanced at the teacher-student pair beneath and began speaking in an amiable voice.

“Zhang Xuan, the fact that you have chosen the path as a master teacher means that you feel a belonging to the Master Teacher Pavilion. As long as you surrender and face the consequences of your actions, I’ll ensure your safety. Perhaps, you might still have an opportunity to become a master teacher once more in the future. However, if you continue struggling, not only will you be cornering yourself, even your student could very well lose her life because of you!

“The Poison Hall and the Innate Poison Body are admittedly powerful, but you should know that the Master Teacher Pavilion didn’t remain as the top power of the Master Teacher Continent with just those petty means that we have shown you!”

“Pavilion Master Ren!” Hearing that Ren Qingyuan was going to ensure his safety, Zhang Wuheng and You Ruoxin immediately turned their heads over anxiously.

But before they could say anything else, Ren Qingyuan had already interjected. “I know what you want to say, but the Master Teacher Pavilion has its own considerations in making this judgement. As long as he agrees to our conditions, I’ll give you all a satisfactory answer!”

“Alright then. We’ll put our trust in you.”

Since Ren Qingyuan had already said so much, even though the two of them were still a little indignant at letting Zhang

Xuan off the hook so easily, they still reluctantly nodded in agreement.

“How about it? I’ll give you ten minutes to consider the matter!” Ren Qingyuan said.

“Face the consequences of my actions?” Zhang Xuan directed a deep gaze at Ren Qingyuan as he repeated the words that the latter had said earlier. “What kind of consequences will there be for my actions?”

“While you did cause a huge uproar, given that no lives were lost, I believe that there’s still some ground for reconciliation. Since I have already made this guarantee on your behalf, the other powers also won’t go too overboard with their demands,” Ren Qingyuan replied.

“I trust your words, Pavilion Master Ren, but what I am curious about is how the Master Teacher Pavilion intends to deal with me,” Zhang Xuan replied.

If the Master Teacher Pavilion guaranteed his safety, the Zhang Clan, Glacier Plain Court, and the Sanctum of Sages certainly would not dare to go too far against him. No good would come from snubbing the most powerful organization in the world, after all, and they still had their future to consider.

At most, the Master Teacher Pavilion would just compensate them by helping rebuild their infrastructure, formations, and giving them some treasures. That should placate those three powers considerably.

The key to this matter still lay in the Master Teacher Pavilion.

In the past, the Master Teacher Pavilion did not hold him in high regard, thinking that he was just an ordinary prodigy whose death would be inconsequential to the Master Teacher Continent. However, now that it had been shown that even the head of the Poison Hall was his student... Without a doubt, he had already become a dangerous figure in their eyes. As the ones governing the Master Teacher Continent, the Master Teacher Pavilion would not wish to see the rise of individuals beyond their control.

So, while Ren Qingyuan had spoken of allowing him to become a master teacher once more, in truth, his goal was simply to bring him under control so as to prevent the situation from running amok.

“You are a person of great talent, and I believe that you will eventually become a pillar of support for mankind. You can trust the Master Teacher Pavilion to do everything we can to ensure your safety for this matter. In fact, we are willing to offer you the best resources that we have so that you can raise your strength swiftly. However, you’ll have to imprint your soul on the Pavilion Master Seal!”

Ren Qingyuan flicked his hand, and a token appeared in his grasp.

It was roughly the same size as the Sanctum Head Token, but it had a peculiarly ethereal presence, almost as if it would vanish at any moment.

Even when using the Eye of Insight, Zhang Xuan was unable to discern what tier of artifact it was.

“This is an artifact that Kong shi left behind after founding the Master Teacher Pavilion, and it serves as the insignia of authority for the deputy pavilion masters. Only a true pavilion master is able to tap into its true strength, but as a deputy pavilion master, I’m still able to wield a tenth of its might. With just that, it already grants me power that makes me unmatched against any men beneath Ancient Sage!” Ren Qingyuan said as he gently stroked the Pavilion Master Seal and infused his zhenqi into it.

The next instant, a heavy pressure suddenly crushed down on the crowd, trembling their souls.

—

Do consider joining my Discord to chat about the novel: <https://discord.gg/ATHVehx>

Translating is not easy and very time-consuming. If you like my work, do consider dropping StarveCleric some tip: <https://donatebot.io/checkout/277761613128531969>

# 1535 Negotiations Falling Through

It felt like as long as Ren Qingyuan willed it, he could destroy the souls of any of them present in an instant.

This was the tremendous power harnessed within the Pavilion Master Seal!

Other than the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn, the Pavilion Master Seal could be said to be the number one treasure of the Master Teacher Pavilion. While the deputy pavilion masters could only wield a tenth of its true prowess, it was more than enough to solidify the Master Teacher Pavilion's standing on the continent, making all of the major powers deferential to its authority.

Granting the deputy pavilion master might that was unmatched beneath Ancient Sage, even experts of Yang Shi's caliber would not dare clash head on with him!

"Your student might be powerful, but with the Pavilion Master Seal in hand, I will be able to crush her soul directly, and not even her Innate Poison Body will be able to stop me!" Ren Qingyuan said as he allowed the Pavilion Master Seal to float freely in front of him.

The carrot and the stick. Since he had already shown them a possible way out of the dilemma that they were in, he should also let them know that the prowess of the Master Teacher Pavilion did not just stop at words so that they knew the decision that they had to make.

Wei Ruyan glanced at the seal before turning to her teacher. However, before she could speak, Zhang Xuan had already shaken his head and interjected. "You won't be a match against it."

The Pavilion Master Seal floating in front of Ren Qingyuan was many times stronger than his Sanctum Head Token. If Ren

Qingyuan really tapped into its power, they would indeed stand no chance at all.

“Since that’s the case, may I ask how imprinting my soul on it will affect me?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“Don’t worry, the effects will only be beneficial to you. Firstly, it ensures that you’ll never be able to turn your back on the Master Teacher Pavilion, so no one will be able to doubt your loyalty to mankind. Secondly, if you are in any danger, you’ll be able to communicate with the Master Teacher Pavilion through your soul imprint on the Pavilion Master Seal, and we’ll be able to bring reinforcements to you in the fastest time possible!” Ren Qingyuan replied.

“It ensures that I’ll never be able to turn my back on the Master Teacher Pavilion? In other words, I will be signing a soul contract and putting my soul under your control, won’t I?” Zhang Xuan asked.

Based on what he had heard, it was similar to the contract between a beast tamer and their tamed beast. If he imprinted his soul on it, that would be as good as placing his life in the hands of the Master Teacher Pavilion.

“The only reason I am asking you to imprint your soul on it is just to avoid the possibility of you ever committing treacherous acts against mankind. You can rest assured that I won’t force you to do anything at all!” Ren Qingyuan replied.

The reason he was asking Zhang Xuan to put his soul imprint on the Pavilion Master Seal was in case the worst-case scenario ever happened. It was not to make things difficult for Zhang Xuan.

This procedure was just to forge an inseverable link between the other party and the Master Teacher Pavilion so that they would not have to worry about him anymore. This would be a win-win situation for both sides. The Master Teacher Pavilion would gain a powerful, reliable ally, and the other party would have the full backing of the Master Teacher Pavilion.

“My apologies, but even if you won’t use the soul contract against me, I’m unwilling to entrust my life to you!” Zhang

Xuan shook his head.

As long as his soul imprint remained on the Pavilion Master Seal, even if Ren Qingyuan said that he would not force him to do anything, there was no guarantee that his promise would last. Should Ren Qingyuan ever decide to go against his word, he would be forced to do whatever Ren Qingyuan commanded him to do, as if a human tamed beast. How could he possibly agree to such derogatory treatment?

Their grounds were simply not equal. It would be an irreversible decision, and it could very well haunt him for life.

For one, what if Ren Qingyuan ordered him to cripple Wei Ruyan and destroy the Poison Hall right after he imprinted his soul on the Pavilion Master Seal? In the eyes of the world, that would simply be the duty of a master teacher, and very few would criticize Ren Qingyuan for making such a call!

In such a case, Ren Qingyuan would have nothing to lose whereas he had everything to lose.

“Are you turning down my offer?” Ren Qingyuan’s face darkened. “Do you understand the consequences of your decision?”

No matter what, he could not allow someone who wielded as much influence as Zhang Xuan to remain uncontrolled. In his view, it was only a matter of time before he became a threat to the world.

“I do.” Zhang Xuan nodded before turning to the young lady before him with an apologetic look. “I’m sorry. It seems like I have implicated you this time around...”

If he refused to submit, the Master Teacher Pavilion would surely choose to eliminate him. Considering that Wei Ruyan was there to save him, the stance that he had chosen would be equivalent to placing Wei Ruyan on the opposing side of the Master Teacher Pavilion as well.

“Teacher, please don’t say that you have implicated me. You are the one who gave me a new life, so there’s no need for such words between us,” Wei Ruyan replied with a tender smile.

Following which, she stood up and gazed coldly at Ren Qingyuan and the other 9-star master teachers before continuing. “However, if they really want to make a move against us, they should first prepare themselves to lose half of their personnel!”

With a flick of her wrist, countless people materialized in front of her.

They were all dressed in master teacher robes, and one thing that the crowd immediately noticed was that their faces were all pitch-black. Despite having lost consciousness, they were still writhing on the ground in agony.

It would not take a genius to figure out that they had all been poisoned.

“They are... our master teachers?”

“She actually poisoned so many of our master teachers?”

Shocked gasps echoed from here and there.

Ren Qingyuan’s complexion also turned extremely ugly.

He recognized some of those master teachers lying on the ground. They were the top experts of the Master Teacher Pavilions within a sixty thousand li radius of the Glacier Plain Court, and many of them were 8-star master teachers. In their respective Master Teacher Pavilions, they were powerful figures who could determine the fates of countless people with just their words, but against the head of the Poison Hall, they stood no chance at all.

It was inevitable that they would be captured by her.

“What do you want?” Ren Qingyuan spat coldly with narrowed eyes.

“Nothing in particular. If you wish to make a move on me and my teacher, be my guest. However, I can promise you that if we die here today, the poison masters of the Poison Hall will immediately leap into action, and at least half of all master teachers across the Master Teacher Continent will lose their lives in the time to come!” Wei Ruyan replied haughtily as she



placed her hands behind her back in emulation of her teacher's usual posture.

A few months ago, she had still been a young lady reliant on her teacher, but at this very moment, she was already a true leader who could stand her ground on the Master Teacher Continent. Even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters no longer wielded the power to kill her at will.

“Outrageous! This is completely outrageous!”

“How dare you threaten us? It seems like the Master Teacher Pavilion has really erred by not destroying you miscreants sooner!”

Upon hearing those words, the 9-star master teacher in the air trembled from sheer rage.

As the number one occupation on the Master Teacher Continent, they were used to being treated with the utmost respect and honor. No one had ever spoken to them like that.

Glaring coldly at Wei Ruyan, Ren Qingyuan said, “Every single one of our master teachers has already resolved themselves to lay down their life for mankind when they became a master teacher. It's futile to threaten me with their lives!

“Your poison masters are indeed a difficult bunch to deal with, but know that your poisons aren't omnipotent! As long as we devote our effort to it, the Master Teacher Pavilion will be able to find a way to nullify all of the poisons that you have.

“Back then, the treacherous soul oracles were a powerful force as well, but the Master Teacher Pavilion still managed to destroy them at their very roots. It's only in view of the fact that the poison masters' unique insight into medicinal herbs could aid the advancement of mankind that we have tolerated you all so far. I advise you not to end the Poison Hall's long legacy due to your own selfishness!”

Seeing how Ren Qingyuan was devoid of fear, Wei Ruyan burst into laughter. “You said that your master teachers are willing to lay down their lives for mankind? Wonderful! I have always wanted to see how deep their resolve is. Let's see which of us is the first to cave in then!”

With a wave of her hands, the poisonous air that shrouded her immediately diffused into the surroundings.

The closest 9-star master teacher to her failed to escape in time, and his face immediately turned pitch-black as he collapsed to the ground and vomited non-stop.

“Ah?”

Seeing how fearsome the poisonous air was, Zhang Wuheng, You Ruoxin, and the others hurriedly fled in fear.

The prowess of the Innate Poison Body was really as fearsome as its reputation made it out to be!

“Since you are courting death, I’ll fulfill your wish!” Ren Qingyuan uttered coldly.

The poisonous air that Wei Ruyan was diffusing could very well reduce the entire Empire Alliance into a state of living hell. Unable to watch such atrocities being committed right before his eyes, Ren Qingyuan reached out and tapped the Pavilion Master Seal ahead of him.

Weng!

The Pavilion Master Seal buzzed softly in response, and following which, a dizzyingly immense force burst forth from it, intending to obliterate Wei Ruyan’s Primordial Spirit straight!

Hong long long!

Wei Ruyan’s eyebrows shot up as she quickly gathered all of her zhenqi to defend against that attack.

Hong long!

Just as Wei Ruyan was about to reach her limits, a wintry voice echoed in the air.

“You speak of soul oracles in contempt, and yet, you use the very soul arts that you frown upon to deal with my teacher and my junior. Just how far can the hypocrisy of the Master Teacher Pavilion go?”

A massive soul abruptly appeared right in the sky, looming over the crowd. With a slight wave of his finger, the Pavilion

Master Seal flew right into the hands of the soul. The seal struggled intensely to escape, but it was unable to break free from the grasp of the massive soul.

# 1536 Disciple Lu Chong Returns!

“That is... a soul oracle?”

“Wasn't the entire lineage of the soul oracles destroyed many millenniums ago? How could there still be one around?”

“The soul oracle said something about dealing with his teacher and junior earlier... Could it be that he's Zhang Xuan's student as well?”

“Not only did Zhang Xuan teach a poison master, he even groomed a soul oracle?”

Everyone's face distorted in shock. Even the 9-star master teachers who could remain calm before the worst of turmoil looked as if they had seen a ghost.

It was one thing for him to have taught a hall master who possessed the Innate Poison Body, but for such a massive soul oracle to claim to be his student too... was this for real?

Even though the heritage of the soul oracles had already vanished many millenniums ago, the person was still able to steal the Pavilion Master Seal from Ren Qingyuan in a single move, rendering him helpless. Without a doubt, it was apparent that he was an expert too.

For the students that he had taught to actually be stronger than him... and more importantly, there were actually two of them!

“Let go of the Pavilion Master Seal!” Ren Qingyuan roared furiously as he rushed upward to snatch the Pavilion Master Seal back.

He had been so focused on Wei Ruyan that he let his guard down for a moment and allowed a soul oracle to approach him and snatch the Pavilion Master Seal.

The Pavilion Master Seal represented the very dignity and standing of the Master Teacher Pavilion. He could not allow

anything to happen to it!

Si la!

Ren Qingyuan moved so quickly that the surrounding space actually distorted under his movement.

As the deputy pavilion master, Ren Qingyuan's strength was significantly above that of Zhang Wuheng and You Ruoxin. With him exerting his full strength, the crowd felt as if someone had robbed the surrounding sound and light, leaving them with nothing but despairing darkness. It was almost as if the world had been torn into two, and they had fallen into a crevice of nothingness.

Of course, it was all just a misperception of the senses. Nevertheless, this move was already powerful enough to send one's Primordial Spirit into a disorientated state, making it nigh impossible for one to set reality apart from illusion anymore.

"Powerful, I'll admit. However, you are too naive if you think that you can catch me like that!" The soul oracle in the sky chuckled as his silhouette swiftly turned ethereal before phasing out altogether, as if he had never been there in the first place.

"It's the long-lost art of Soul Traverse!" Luo Qingchen narrowed his eyes in shock.

"Soul Traverse?" the confused Zhang Wuheng asked.

"In the first place, souls are formless and intangible. As long as one's will is strong enough, it's possible for a soul to break the restrictions of space and traverse freely through space, bypassing all restrictions that stand in its path. Of course, due to the limitations of one's strength, it's impossible for a soul to conduct long-distance teleportation similar to that of Teleportation Formations, but still, the ability to pull off short-distance teleportation can bring one a massive advantage in battles!" Luo Qingchen explained.

Due to the Luo Clan bloodline flowing through his veins, he had a higher grasp over the spatial laws compared to the other

cultivators gathered in the area, so he was able to see through Lu Chong's maneuver swiftly.

Teleportation was extremely taxing on one's body as one had to bear the brunt of the spatial storm while moving from one place to another, but due to the intangible and formless nature of souls, the effects of the spatial storm were significantly reduced for soul oracles, thus making it more feasible for them to traverse through space. Ren Qingyuan was indeed very powerful, but against an opponent capable of Spatial Traverse, it would not be easy for him to catch the other party.

Hu!

Right after those words were spoken, the disappeared soul oracle suddenly phased back into existence right in front of a 9-star master teacher.

Boom!

As soon as he appeared, he immediately channeled a powerful burst of energy right toward the chest of the 9-star master teacher.

Peng!

Before the 9-star master teacher could even react, he was struck squarely in the chest and knocked flying, destroying countless buildings in his path.

It was fortunate that Ren Qingyuan had been concerned that a huge commotion would break out while apprehending Zhang Xuan, so he had ordered the local Master Teacher Pavilion to evacuate ordinary citizens away from this area. Otherwise, who knew how many innocent lives would have been lost from that single attack?

"You... redirected my attack?" Ren Qingyuan hurriedly withdrew his attack as he glared at the soul oracle in front of him with fiery eyes.

With his eye of discernment, he could tell that the other party had swept away a portion of the might of his attack using his Spatial Traverse, which was how the other party had managed to severely wound his companion in a single strike.

“Not too bad! Come, let’s continue. I see that there are still many 9-star master teachers around, so I’ll be counting on your help to knock all of them out!” the soul oracle said with a chuckle.

“You...” Ren Qingyuan clenched his fists tightly together as he tried to suppress his rage.

The fact that the soul oracle was able to traverse through space swiftly meant that his attack would not be of much use. Not only so, if the other party redirected it toward his companions, would he not actually be harming his own comrades instead?

“In order to achieve Soul Traverse, one has to be a 9-star soul oracle at the very least, but wasn’t the heritage of the soul oracles completely destroyed by the Master Teacher Pavilion? Who in the world are you? Where did you come from?” Ren Qingyuan roared furiously.

Strength of the other party’s level could not be molded in just a day or two. If there was still a settlement of soul oracles existent in the world, there was no way that the Master Teacher Pavilion could have remained oblivious to it for so long!

“The Master Teacher Pavilion did utterly destroy the Soul Oracle Guild back then, but they didn’t manage to wipe away all traces of their heritage. Alright, hurry up and make up your mind whether you want to continue attacking me or not. Otherwise, I don’t really want to be wasting time on an old fart like you!” the soul oracle mocked in a contemptuous tone.

“Hand the Pavilion Master Seal over, or else the Master Teacher Pavilion won’t mind destroying the Soul Oracle Guild a second time!” Ren Qingyuan bellowed as he dashed toward the soul oracle furiously once more.

Si la!

The space around the soul oracle suddenly solidified as if someone had encased it in ice, preventing him from making any movement.

Battle technique, Frozen Space!

This was a technique that could seal all disturbances in space, thus rendering even Teleportation Formations completely ineffective.

The reason he had wasted so many words on the soul oracle earlier was to gather sufficient energy in order to cast this technique.

“Let’s see where else you can escape to this time around!”  
After sealing the soul oracle in place, Ren Qingyuan flicked his wrist and whipped out a sword.

Without any hesitation, he brandished the sword right toward the soul oracle ahead of him.

This sword carried an intense killing intent, such that even before the blade had arrived before its target, the killing intent was already stifling its target. Such an attack could easily inflict grievous wounds even to a soul oracle.

In face of the powerful sword strike, the soul oracle knew that he would not be able to escape, but he did not panic. Instead, with a mysterious smile, he swiftly compressed his massive body into the size of the Pavilion Master Seal before hiding right beneath it.

Weng!

Ren Qingyuan did not expect the soul oracle to compress himself at this point in time. At this rate, his sword strike would definitely land on the Pavilion Master Seal. Thus, he hurriedly redirected his attack and pulled back his sword.

As the redirection of his might happened too quickly, it resulted in a reflux in his zhenqi, causing an aching pain to strike his chest. Following which, fresh blood spewed out of his lips.

The soul oracle knew that Ren Qingyuan would try to grab the Pavilion Master Seal right after, so as soon as the latter’s sword flew past the Pavilion Master Seal, he immediately reverted to his original size, grabbed the Pavilion Master Seal, and retreated before Ren Qingyuan could do anything else.

“Hahaha!” The soul oracle chuckled triumphantly. “Feel free to make your move, but as long as the Pavilion Master Seal



remains with me, you won't be able to kill me!"

"You..."

Ren Qingyuan narrowed his eyes in fury as his chest puffed up and down from rage. His face was so red that it reminded one of a volcano on the verge of eruption.

First, the poison masters who had not dared to leave their headquarters for at least ten millenniums, and now, an occupation that should have already vanished in the annals of history. Nothing was really going his way that day, and words could not begin to describe how frustrated he was feeling.

Had someone told him that this would happen in the past, he never would have believed it!

Taking a deep breath, Ren Qingyuan suppressed his rage and said with forced composure, "The Pavilion Master Seal contains the will of generations of deputy pavilion masters. You might have used your soul energy to snatch it away and sever my connection with it, but you will never be able to truly control it. In fact, you have to constantly guard against it, fearing a rebound from it!

"I know that despite your leisurely appearance, the Pavilion Master Seal is searing your soul as if you are grasping onto lava itself!"

The Pavilion Master Seal was the symbol of authority for the Master Teacher Pavilion. If anyone could snatch it away that easily, what would that say about the Master Teacher Pavilion?

While the soul oracle might seem as if he was holding it with ease, in truth, he was under constant attack from the wills of preceding deputy pavilion masters, placing great strain on his soul.

"Well, I'll admit that your thing is indeed hard for me to handle..." The soul oracle chuckled. "However, it isn't time for me to return it to you yet!"

After saying those words, he turned his sights away from Ren Qingyuan and headed down toward the young man and the young lady standing in the midst of the rubble below.

He kneeled onto the ground and said, “Teacher, Lu Chong has returned!”

# 1537 Lu Chong's Transformation

“Good, good!”

Zhang Xuan watched as the soul oracle before him reverting to the size of an ordinary human, and the appearance of the slightly reclusive young man came clearly into his sight. He could not help but nod in gladness.

The soul oracle before him was none other than the student of his that had headed to the Ancient Domain of the Soul Oracles previously, Lu Chong!

When he had first taken the young man in as his student, the latter had been quiet and reticent. In fact, he had gone on not speaking a single word for years, fearing that his enemies would find him. Yet, he had become a man who dared mock even the deputy pavilion master of the Master Teacher Pavilion.

That was a sign that he had finally walked out from the trauma resulting from the massacre of his clan.

To be honest, Zhang Xuan was not bothered about the talents or even the strength of his students. With him around, no matter how strong his students currently were, he was confident that he could groom them into powerhouses of the world. As such, what he was the most concerned about was their character.

A person's character would ultimately determine their path and their fate.

Only a person driven to surpass themselves would be able to reach the peak and even beyond. To Zhang Xuan, that was really the only criterion that he felt one needed to become an expert.

On the other hand, a person who was unmotivated and indolent, spending precious time thinking only of how they

could brag to others instead cultivating, such a person would never become an expert even with the best teacher and best resources. The person whom he was speaking about was, of course, Sun Qiang.

Sun Qiang had followed him for the longest period of time and used the largest bulk of his resources. Yet, in the end, he was still the weakest of them all.

Hearing his teacher's compliment, Lu Chong's eyes lit up in agitation as he clasped his fist. "Teacher, I have successfully awakened the Combat Soul Constitution!"

"I've seen," Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

Back then, in order to save him, Lu Chong had charged into harm's way and ended up being severely wounded by the crown prince of the Xuanyuan Kingdom, thus ending in a deep sleep. It was after going through much trouble to wake him from his coma that he had found that Lu Chong's soul was incomparably large. Once it was awakened, there was no doubt that it would surely grant him tremendous strength.

Given how the current Lu Chong was able to fool around with even Ren Qingyuan, it was apparent that he had already successfully awakened his Combat Soul Constitution and gained full control over it.

There was no other way that he could have advanced his cultivation so much within the span of a single year.

"Un!" Seeing his teacher's smile, Lu Chong suddenly felt fulfilled within, as if the hard work that he had put in over the past year had finally come to fruition. Nodding, he quickly passed over the Pavilion Master Seal that he had taken from Ren Qingyuan. "Teacher, I'll leave this with you for now. If that old fogey gets it back, we won't stand a chance against him anymore!"

Understanding the logic behind that, Zhang Xuan reached out to take the Pavilion Master Seal from him.

The reason Lu Chong had been able to snatch the Pavilion Master Seal from Ren Qingyuan was not because he was stronger than him. Rather, when soul oracles intentionally hid

their presence, it would be difficult for any cultivator to find them. On top of that, Ren Qingyuan's attention had been completely focused on Wei Ruyan then. It was due to these two factors that Lu Chong had managed to catch Ren Qingyuan off guard and seize his Pavilion Master Seal.

Had Ren Qingyuan been guarded against him from the very start, even if Lu Chong had been two times stronger than he currently was, he still would have been unable to seize it the seal from Ren Qingyuan's grasp.

As soon as Zhang Xuan came into contact with the Pavilion Master Seal, he immediately felt a feeling of intimacy to it. It was almost as if the seal was made just for him, and he could tame it for his own use at any moment.

Zhang Xuan was taken aback. What's going on?

He was certain that this was his first time coming into contact with the Pavilion Master Seal, and he had thought that it would be difficult for him to control an artifact so much stronger than him. Yet, when he held it in his hand, it felt almost as if it was an artifact that he had personally forged. It was filled with fondness and affection for him.

Should I try assimilating it? Zhang Xuan wondered as he placed his hand over it, wanting to try to fuse his blood into it.

However, just as he was about to do so, he suddenly felt a heavy pressure weighing down from above. Raising his head, he found all of the 9-star master teachers gathering together as one, collaborating with one another to form a formation that manifested in the form of a massive light barrier in the air.

"Teacher, that's the City Defense Formation of the Empire Alliance! It's built with the Empire Alliance Master Teacher Pavilion at its very center, and it was constructed to defend against enemies that threatened the security of the Empire Alliance. It seems like the 9-star master teachers have activated it!" Wei Ruyan said grimly.

After learning that her teacher was in Empire Alliance, she had swiftly gathered all of the intelligence available on the Empire

Alliance so as to heighten the chances of success for the rescue operation.

“City Defense Formation?”

“Un. The formation isn’t really too powerful by itself, but with so many 9-star master teachers augmenting it with their zhenqi, it has formed a powerful force that we can’t afford to underestimate,” Wei Ruyan explained.

For many years, the Master Teacher Pavilion had succeeded in keeping the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe off the Master Teacher Continent. The strength of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters did play a part to that end, but more than that, the Master Teacher Pavilion had also set up many branches across the continent, and each of those branches had constructed massive formations in the cities that they resided in. Those massive formations had lain dormant for many years, nourished by the spiritual energy in the surroundings, such that when an invasion finally happened, they would be able to call forth devastating might once they were activated.

Such was the case at that moment. In the first place, the Empire Alliance was not a weak power, so its City Defense Formation was of considerable power. With so many 9-star master teachers working together to augment it, once it was activated, it formed a formidable force that even Yang Shi would have found hard to deal with.

“Teacher, rest assured. With my Soul Traverse and junior’s poison art, no matter how strong their formation may be, they won’t be able to keep us in here easily!” Lu Chong replied with a confident smile.

The journey to the Ancient Domain of the Soul Oracles had made him mature considerably as well. He was no longer the helpless young man that he had once been. Just like Wei Ruyan, he had also become a powerhouse on the Master Teacher Continent, and his every word and gesture carried an imposing air to it that commanded respect of others, making others dare not cross him.

“Indeed. Their formation might be powerful such that it would be impossible for me to face it straight on, but if it’s just

escaping, that won't pose a problem for me at all!" Wei Ruyan replied as the poison aura around her billowed, seemingly ready to sweep into the surroundings and corrode everything in its path.

Seeing how confident his students were, Zhang Xuan replied with a smile, "I have never been worried about escaping. While my cultivation might not be too high at the moment, if I really intend to escape, there's no way they would be able to keep me here!"

His cultivation might have been far beneath his students', but formations, to him, were really not much different from a free gift from the enemies. Ever since he walked out from the Tianxuan Kingdom, he had never seen a formation that could truly trap him before!

"Then..."

Perplexed looks surfaced on Wei Ruyan and Lu Chong's faces.

Since their teacher was able to escape from the encirclement by himself, why was he still idling around the area?

While they were able to hold their ground for the time being, the situation was really not in their favor.

"I can't afford to leave right now. Your Senior Zhao Ya is at a crucial period in her cultivation, and if we leave now, it'll be one thing for her efforts to be rendered futile, but she might even lose her life as a result of that," Zhang Xuan explained.

"Senior Zhao Ya? Cultivating? Where?" Hearing that their senior was here as well, the two of them were taken aback.

Zhang Xuan had wrapped Zhao Ya tightly using his zhenqi, forming something resembling a cocoon around her. Even the two of them could not fathom that the cocoon-like item emanating the killing intent of the Otherworldly Demons would actually be their senior.

"She's in there... Something happened with her meridians, and in order to increase the chances of success, I used the blueprint of a more efficient meridian network to reconstruct the meridians in her body, but a side effect of that is that she emanates such an aura!" Zhang Xuan explained.

“Reconstruct the meridians in her body?”

“Used the blueprint of a more efficient meridian network?”

Wei Ruyan and Lu Chong gasped in astonishment.

They had never even heard of such a thing before. Indeed, only their teacher would have the guts and ability to do something as bold as that.

“Since our senior is here, we’ll have to protect her even at the cost of our lives!” Wei Ruyan declared as she straightened her back imposingly.

Since their teacher was willing to face an army of so many master teachers fearlessly for the sake of their senior, as his students, what did they have to fear?

At most, they would just die together!

“I also swear to protect teacher and senior!” Lu Chong declared resolutely.

“I understand your feelings. Don’t worry, it won’t be easy for them to kill us even with the formation they have over there. For the time being, I need the two of you to protect me while I study this seal over here. I think that I might just be able to use this seal to get us out of our current quandary!” Zhang Xuan instructed before turning his sight back to the Pavilion Master Seal.



# 1538 The Master Teacher Pavilion Ran Away

Since it was the Pavilion Master Seal, it should have some kind of ability that allowed it to rally or command the master teachers. If he could tame it, he might just be able to find a way out of their difficult situation without causing bloodshed.

Grasping the token tightly, Zhang Xuan willed, Flaws!

Hu!

A book materialized in his head.

“The Pavilion Master Seal of the Master Teacher Pavilion, an artifact forged by an Ancient Sage. It’s created by fusing three droplets of Kong shi’s divine blood, and it wields formidable offensive prowess against souls... Flaws: Undetectable!”

Zhang Xuan froze on the spot. Undetectable? How could this be?

On his journey, he had seen a diverse range of weapons. Regardless of whether the weapon had been forged by a formidable master or a rookie blacksmith, he would be able to find the flaws in it easily. There were no secrets that they could hide from the Library of Heaven’s Path.

Yet, the book compiled on the Pavilion Master Seal actually reflected the flaws as undetectable.

What was going on?

A thought surfaced in Zhang Xuan’s mind. Could Kong shi be of the Discarnate Constitution of Divination as well?

The seers found those with the Discarnate Constitution of Divination unreadable, and even the Library of Heaven’s Path would have difficulties trying to peer into it. Both he and Luo Ruoxin possessed the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, and that would explain why the Library of Heaven’s Path did not work on either of them.

Considering that the Pavilion Master Seal was made from three droplets of Kong shi's blood essence, perhaps the reason that the Library of Heaven's Path was unable to find a flaw in the token was because of his Discarnate Constitution of Divination affecting the results.

Zhang Xuan pondered for a while before nodding. That should be the case...

Considering how even the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan possessed such a constitution, surely it should not come as a shock that a man as great as Kong shi would possess such a constitution as well.

That was also probably how he had managed to dominate the land, overcoming the countless traps that the Otherworldly Demons had laid for him, and eventually ushering in an era of prosperity for mankind.

But if I don't know the flaws in the seal, how am I to tame it? Zhang Xuan frowned.

In the past, whenever he tamed a weapon, he would first find a flaw in it before exploiting the flaw in order to tame it. Otherwise, going by normal means, even ordinary Saint artifacts would require a year or two before pledging their servitude. Clearly, he did not have that much time to waste.

Let me try my blood!

Zhang Xuan tapped his finger, and a droplet of blood dripped from the fingertip onto the seal.

Hulala!

As if a smooth lotus leaf, his droplet of blood simply flowed around on the surface of the seal, showing no signs of being taken in. After flowing for a while, the seal fell onto the floor.

Zhang Xuan's eyebrows leaped up.

Ordinary artifacts would swiftly absorb any blood that they came into contact with, thus taking in the will that was infused into the blood as well. However, for some inexplicable reason, the Pavilion Master Seal was not taking in his blood at

all. This was the first time that Zhang Xuan had seen such an artifact.

It expresses intimacy toward me, but it refuses to take in my blood. How in the world am I supposed to tame this artifact?

He had thought that given the surprising intimacy between him and the Pavilion Master Token, he should be able to tame it with ease. Yet, who could have known that it would turn out to be even more troublesome than any artifact he had seen before?

Hong long!

While Zhang Xuan was still distressed by the lack of response from the seal, he suddenly heard a resounding explosion, and raising his head, he saw that the City Defense Formation had already fully formed. Ren Qingyuan and the others stood loftily in the air above, and they gazed down on them with such coldness in their eyes that it almost seemed like they were helpless goats waiting to be slaughtered.

Forget it, there's no time to tame it anymore. I'll just have to look into it later... Zhang Xuan thought as he placed the Pavilion Master Seal into his storage ring.

In response to his act of putting it away, the Pavilion Master Seal obediently entered his storage ring, not resisting at all.

This reminded Zhang Xuan of an occurrence in his previous world. An ordinary looking fellow fell in love with a diva, and he could ask her out and chat with her. However, whenever he wanted to further their relationship, he would be heartlessly pushed back. In the end, what he thought was love was actually just a backup plan for the diva!

Such was the case with the Pavilion Master Seal. It was very obedient to his touch, and it did not resist even when he tried to stow it into his storage ring. However, when he tried to tame it, it simply refused to respond at all.

“Zhang Xuan, if you still have the slightest nostalgia for your identity as a master teacher, I ask you to hand the Pavilion Master Seal over. Otherwise, I shall make sure that the Poison

Hall and the soul oracles become a thing of the past today!”  
Ren Qingyuan bellowed coldly.

Previously, he had still been considering the possibility of capturing Zhang Xuan alive and forcefully putting him under control. However, the fact that the other party dared to snatch his Pavilion Master Seal and even stow it into his storage ring... there was no longer any room for reconciliation.

To have the Pavilion Master Seal snatched away in public was a huge disgrace to the Master Teacher Pavilion, and to make the situation worse, his two students were influential figures—one of them controlled the Poison Hall while the other one had inherited the heritage of the soul oracles.

If he did not exact swift punishment upon them, things could really blow up. For one, the enemies of the Master Teacher Pavilion could seek to ally themselves with the Poison Hall after hearing that they had succeeded in snatching the Pavilion Master Seal, thus bolstering their might. At the same time, the failure of the Master Teacher Pavilion in protecting their insignia of authority could result in their allies losing confidence in them, and that had to be avoided at all costs given the impending crisis looming ahead of them.

“Make us a thing of the past? Try it then! Let’s see how many people you are willing to offer as tributes for our deaths!” Wei Ruyan harrumphed coldly.

She flicked her wrist once more, and the poisonous aura around her swiftly diffused around the area to form something reminiscent of a barrier around her and the others.

Regardless of whether it was weapons or zhenqi, anything that came into contact with the light barrier would be afflicted by the poisonous aura. Not even 9-star master teachers would be spared from that.

“Fools!” Ren Qingyuan sneered coldly as he raised the sword in his hand. “Master teachers, activate the Kui Xing Formation!”

Hu la!

The 9-star master teachers swiftly got to action, and in the blink of an eye, an unimaginable amount of energy was channeled from the surrounding buildings and the formation into the tip of his sword, imbuing it with the air of a conqueror.

“Break!”

The energy focused on the tip of the sword shot forth as a golden ray of light, tearing a massive rift in space as it crushed downward. When it came into contact with the barrier of poisonous aura, it visibly paused for a brief moment, but the next instant, it pierced right through it as if tearing a sheet of paper in two.

“Humph!” With a furious bellow, Lu Chong expanded his soul to several dozen meters large once more, and he swiftly traversed through space consecutively, using his soul energy as a thread to forcefully stitch up the spatial rift so as to forcefully stop the ray of light.

“Using your soul energy to stitch the spatial rift? As expected of a soul oracle, you do have some unique means. However, I would like to see how long you can last!” Ren Qingyuan jeered as he pushed the sword in his hands downward along the ray of light.

Si la!

The sword descended with overwhelming might.

Pu!

Lu Chong’s face turned crimson as the stitches made out of his soul energy creaked under the immense pressure of the sword, visibly reaching the limits of its durability swiftly.

He was not weak by any means, but the formation that consisted of sixteen 9-star master teachers, including Ren Qingyuan, was simply something far beyond his league.

At the same time, the sword was also attempting to forcefully drill a way through the poison barrier that Wei Ruyan had formed, causing her face to turn pale and sweat to flow profusely from her forehead.

“Teacher, we are already reaching our limits!” Wei Ruyan exclaimed anxiously as she shot a swift glance toward Zhang Xuan.

“Un...” Zhang Xuan nodded.

While his two direct disciples were defending against the attack from the formation, he had not been slacking around either. He had made use of the time that they had bought to examine the formation closely, and he had managed to find quite a number of flaws that he could exploit. However, those flaws were some distance away, and given his current circumstances, he was not able to reach them.

“I’ll point a direction out to you two, and one of you will have to rush out to strike it hard. Once that’s done, the formation will immediately be undone...” Zhang Xuan said.

But halfway through his words, a resounding boom filled the air, as if something had broken. Following which, the imposing Ren Qingyuan from a moment ago suddenly lost all of his momentum, causing him to nearly plummet from the sky. The abrupt dissipation of energy from his sword caused his zhenqi to go into turmoil, and he spurted a mouthful of blood out.

Ren Qingyuan forcefully calmed down his jolted zhenqi before turning around to bellow, “What happened?”

Just a moment ago, the energy that the formation was supplying to him had suddenly halted. If not for his powerful cultivation, he could very well have died from the rebound.

“Reporting to Pavilion Master Ren, we aren’t too sure either.” A master teacher flew over and exclaimed with trembling lips, “The Master Teacher Pavilion that stands at the center of the formation... suddenly ran away!” Kui Xing refers to Dubhe, the handle of the Big Dipper Constellation, and at the same time, it’s also known as the God of Examination in Chinese mythology.

# 1539 Wang Ying Arrives

“The Master Teacher Pavilion ran away?” Ren Qingyuan’s body jolted at that completely unexpected answer. “Can you repeat that?”

The others also could not help but freeze upon hearing those words as well.

How in the world could the Master Teacher Pavilion run away?

Not to mention, at such a crucial juncture!

Even if the master teacher was pulling their legs, pulling like that was a bit much!

“I saw it with my own eyes! The Master Teacher Pavilion ran at a very fast speed, heading toward a specific direction as if it was obeying someone’s orders...” Seeing that the complete lack of trust from the surrounding crowd, the master teacher quickly explained himself anxiously. “It even grew legs! If you don’t believe me, take a look at it for yourself!”

As he spoke, he pointed into the distance.

Everyone quickly turned around, and the first thing that they saw was a huge sandstorm that seemed to be heading their way. Upon closer examination, they realized the sandstorm was actually caused by countless buildings sprinting in their direction, as if cavalry charging toward an enemy on a battlefield. Even the earth began trembling in fear at their imposing charge!

“The heck... Is that a cluster of houses?”

“Those buildings are actually charging right at us... What in the world is going on?”

“Is this a building stampede?”

“What the heck is a building stampede? I have only heard of beast stampedes before!”

All of the 9-star master teachers felt as if mini explosions had occurred in their minds, threatening to blast apart their rationality. Even Zhang Wuheng, Luo Qingchen, and the others were completely dumbfounded before that scene. They did not even realize that their beards were being blown up by their shocked gasps.

They had seen alarmed beasts running amok, and they had seen schools of fish and flocks of birds escaping frenziedly from their predators. However, this was the first time that they had seen an army of buildings charging in a neat formation.

At this point, they could not help but remember the old adage—as long as you live long enough, there is nothing that you will not see.

“Someone has enchanted those buildings...” Ren Qingyuan was the first one to realize what was going, and he immediately bellowed out to inform the others.

Of course, there was no way non-living things like buildings could possibly stand up and run of their own accord. The very fact that they could prance around and even make catcalls at them like street ruffians meant that someone had enchanted them to life!

“No, wait a moment... Those buildings over there... Aren’t those our Master Teacher Pavilions?”

“Now that you mention it, that is indeed the case. That’s the City of Glacier Master Teacher Pavilion, the Empire Alliance Master Teacher Pavilion, the Thousand Leaf City Master Teacher Pavilion, and the Violetaroma Quarters Master Teacher Pavilion... I have been to those places before! To think that a day would come when I would see them coming to life.”

“Wait! That particularly gigantic thing over there, why does it look so familiar?”

“Isn’t that the city wall of the Empire Alliance?”

As the buildings came closer and closer, the crowd managed to get a closer look at the buildings within the sandstorm, and their eyebrows immediately began twitching. As if their lower



jaws had dislocated, they could not close their gaping mouth at all.

There were Master Teacher Pavilions from within tens of thousands of li of the Empire Alliance amid the army!

These towering Master Teacher Pavilions were symbols of the highest authority within a region, and they were often viewed with deference. Yet, for those buildings to be making catcalls and even shaking their bottoms provocatively as they charged over...

“It must be the Spirit Awakener Guild! Just what kind of insanity has come over those women?” Ren Qingyuan cursed furiously.

Other than the Spirit Awakener Guild, there was no other power on the Master Teacher Continent that was capable of creating such a huge army of enchanted Master Teacher Pavilions!

But had the Spirit Awakener Guild not always lain low, trying to stay out of sight wherever possible?

Due to the nature of their occupation, their members numbered very few, and they were severely lacking in offensive prowess. In fact, they even had to ally themselves with other powers in order to protect themselves! Given so, they had always tried to stay out of conflict, never daring to offend any of the major powers, let alone the Master Teacher Pavilion. So, why would they suddenly enchant so many Master Teacher Pavilions and wreak havoc here?

“The Master Teacher Pavilions are made out of resilient materials, and each of them is shrouded by a massive formation, giving them a wholesome building structure. As a result, unlike most buildings, which would swiftly collapse soon after they started moving around, the Master Teacher Pavilions are significantly easier to enchant and maneuver around... But why did the Spirit Awakener Guild suddenly choose to do something like this? Aren't they afraid of offending the Master Teacher Pavilion?”

“Indeed. What in the world are those bunch of women up to?”

“I’ve heard that the Spirit Awakener Guild has just elected a rather young lady as their new guild leader. Could this matter have anything to do with this?”

“I have heard of that matter as well. If I recall correctly, her name seems to be Wang Ying... I have even relayed my congratulations to her over her inauguration. Could it be that their new guild leader intends to oppose the Master Teacher Pavilion? Aren’t they thinking too highly of themselves?”

The other master teachers also swiftly understood the situation, and they could not help but fall into a state of confusion.

While spirit awakeners wielded the ability to enchant spirits into all beings, there was really nothing commendable about their fighting prowess.

Spirit enchantment was a very consuming technique, and the long recovery period did not make things any better.

Furthermore, the stronger an artifact was, the harder it would be to enchant it. Sometimes, it might even take dozens of enchantments in order to fully enchant an artifact!

To make matters worse, most of the more powerful offensive artifacts of the Spirit Awakener Guild were highly consuming and had to be re-enchanted frequently, or else they might just return to being inanimate in the midst of a battle.

For such reasons, the Spirit Awakener Guild had always been one of the most docile and peaceful groups on the Master Teacher Continent. It was really hard to understand why they would suddenly be so brazen as to make a move on the Master Teacher Pavilion!

Hu la!

In the midst of their hesitation, the Master Teacher Pavilion building charging at the forefront of the army finally arrived before them, and without any hesitation, it banged its roof down upon one of the 9-star master teachers.

“You...”

Facing the attack of the Master Teacher Pavilion building, the complexion of the 9-star master teacher turned rather awful.

He raised his palm and thrust it toward the building before him.

Hu la!

His palm strike caused an entire half of the building to collapse to the ground, but even so, the building did not seem to be discouraged by its sudden weight loss. Instead, it rammed its body forward, cloaking the 9-star master teacher in a thick layer of dust.

With the weight of the Master Teacher Pavilion, even Saint 5-dan cultivators would sustain severe injuries under such a ram. Despite that, it was still far from being sufficient to deal with a full-fledged 9-star master teacher!

Looking at how one of the Master Teacher Pavilions had been reduced to rubble just like that, Ren Qingyuan could not help but anxiously bellow, “Don’t make a move on those buildings... Otherwise, we might just end up destroying all of the local Master Teacher Pavilions at this rate.”

Those buildings were the face of their Master Teacher Pavilion! Even if it was their own master teachers destroying it, it would not reflect well on them at all!

How humiliating would it be if others heard of the matter?

“But those buildings are attacking us! Are we to allow those buildings to do as they please?” a 9-star master teacher protested as he was struck in the face by one of the catcalling Master Teacher Pavilions.

Those enchanted buildings would not stop their attacks just because the master teachers were willing to make peace!

Of course, those buildings could not possibly kill them due to the limits of their offensive prowess, but it would not look good on them to be chased around by a cluster of buildings either, not to mention the collateral damage that it would cause the Empire Alliance!

“I know that! These buildings are bound to be controlled by spirit awakeners, or else they wouldn’t charge right at us either. As long as we can find the spirit awakeners behind this,

we will be able to force them to stop this farce!” Ren Qingyuan said as he swiftly scanned his surroundings.

Based on his deductions, it was likely for the spirit awakens responsible for this mess to be in the vicinity as well. As long he could find the spirit awakens and apprehend them, he would be able to resolve this problem.

While scanning his surroundings, his gaze suddenly halted on a specific location, and a glint flashed through the depths of his eyes. “There they are...”

He raised his palm in preparation to launch an attack against them.

Hu!

But before he could even make his move, a building suddenly rammed right into him, and its massive roof crushed right down on his body, pinning him forcefully onto the ground.

“You...” Ren Qingyuan’s rage immediately flurried at being treated in such a manner.

He raised his hands and released the entirety of his strength without reservation.

Si la!

The building exploded, sending countless rock shards shooting out into the surroundings.

Hu hu hu!

Right after that building was destroyed, another eight more buildings rushed right up to Ren Qingyuan.

It was almost as if those buildings were facing their archenemy. Countless tables, chairs, beds, and every type of furniture that one could think of were furiously tossed out of the windows and gates of the buildings, bombarding Ren Qingyuan. Despite Ren Qingyuan’s tremendous strength, he still flew into a brief fluster while trying to cope with the furious onslaught of so many buildings at once.

“The Spirit Awakener Guild, are you trying to start a revolt?” Unable to hold back his fury any longer, Ren Qingyuan roared

with a deafening voice that reverberated throughout the entire Empire Alliance City.

“The Master Teacher Pavilion has always been preached on the importance of respecting one’s roots and lineage. Someone is trying to frame my teacher for a crime that he hasn’t committed, and some ignominious organization is even seeking his life without bothering to conduct a thorough investigation of the incident. It’s precisely out of respect for Kong shi and the noble values that he has passed down that I have come here to save my teacher! Has Master Teacher Pavilion forgotten the teachings of the great Kong shi to view my actions as a revolt?” the powerful voice of a female responded.

Following which, on the great walls of the Empire Alliance City, a figure stood up. It was a young lady dressed in a long purple robe that flowed along with the wind. The swirling dust around her did not diminish her disposition in the least; on the contrary, the sharp contrast made her seem as if she was the valiant goddess of war descending upon a battlefield.

# 1540 Zheng Yang Appears

“Is she the newly-appointed guild leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild, Wang Ying?”

“That’s definitely her; I’ve met her before! She might be young, but her talent in spirit enchantment is definitely peerless in this world. It took her only a few months in order to raise her mastery in spirit enchantment to a level where she could clear even the Spirit Awakener Tower.”

“She mentioned that she came here to save her teacher. Does that mean that Zhang Xuan is her teacher too?”

“T-this... First, the head of the Poison Hall; then, a soul oracle expert; and now, the new guild leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild...”

All of the master teachers could not help but shudder as they lowered their gazes to look at the young man sitting on the ground beneath. No words could describe the shock in their hearts.

As 9-star master teachers, they knew very well just how difficult it was to groom a student to become an expert. Each of them had countless students all over the world, but hardly any of their students had succeeded in reaching the top echelon of the Master Teacher Continent like them.

This was apparent just by seeing how low the number of individuals who had reached a proficiency of 9-star in any occupation was.

Yet, the young man below, despite being only at Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm, actually had multiple powerhouses as his students. Just how in the world was this possible?

More importantly, those students were willing to even defy the powerful and influential Master Teacher Pavilion in order to save him. Just how deep did their feelings for him run?

While the prevalent culture on the Master Teacher Continent prompted one to remain loyal to one's lineage, there were still plenty of cultivators who paid it no regard. Furthermore, given that Zhang Xuan had been condemned by even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, no one would blame them for not coming to the rescue of their teacher.

They could have simply feigned ignorance and steered clear of this mess. After all, the verdict of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was absolute on the continent.

But for their teacher, those people were willing to disregard all rules and risk the bright futures that they had ahead of them to dive right into this mess. If things went wrong, they could very well lose their lives!

Just what in the world did Zhang Xuan impart to them for them to be so loyal to him?

Gritting his teeth tightly, Ren Qingyuan harrumphed with an utterly cold voice. "Guild Leader Wang, do you understand who you are going against at this very moment?"

"I do, but I am heavily indebted to my teacher. Whoever dares lay a finger on my teacher, no matter who they are, I'll pit my life against them without any hesitation!" the young lady replied calmly.

"So, if I understand your words correctly, you are saying that Zhang Xuan is your teacher. Is that right?" Ren Qingyuan asked.

"Indeed. Zhang Xuan is the name of my teacher, and he's the person who made me the person I am today!" the young lady replied once more.

The person who had just arrived with a huge army of buildings was none other than Wang Ying.

All of the buildings within a thirty thousand li radius from the Glacier Plain Court had been enchanted by the elders of their Spirit Awakener Guild, and together, they formed a massive army that even 9-star master teachers would have trouble dealing with all of a sudden.

“Zhang Xuan has willfully wreaked havoc in the Zhang Clan and injured dozens of their elders, including the First Elder Zhang Wuheng. After which, he went to the Sanctum of Sages and severely wounded its deputy sanctum head, Zhan shi. Following that, he ran over to the Glacier Plain Court, kidnapped their young court chief, and destroyed many of their buildings while doing so,” Ren Qingyuan spat coldly. “Even if we put all that aside for the moment, just the fact that he is the teacher of the vicious head of the depraved Poison Hall and a deplorable soul oracle, along with the existence of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe artifact that is placed right in front of him, is more than enough for the Master Teacher Pavilion to deem him an enemy of mankind. He might be your teacher, but his sins are unpardonable!”

“Vicious? Deplorable? Hahaha!” Wang Ying sneered coldly upon hearing those words. “You claimed that my Junior Wei Ruyan is a vicious person. Very well, why don’t you tell me what vicious deeds she has done? Has she massacred millions in cold blood?”

“Look at the poisoned master teachers in front of her! Is that not sufficient evidence to prove her vicious character?” Ren Qingyuan sneered.

“They might be poisoned, but aren’t they still alive? In fact, if my Junior Wei Ruyan hadn’t incapacitated them and used them as a chip to protect her and my teacher, you would have been the ones to murder them in cold blood! You claimed that my junior is vicious, but can you name anyone whom she has killed to date? I reckon that there’s probably more blood on your hands than hers!” Wang Ying snapped.

“This...”

Wang Ying’s outburst left Ren Qingyuan speechless for a moment.

The head of the Poison Hall had indeed gone around poisoning their master teachers one after another, but she had only knocked them out. Despite the terrible states that they were in, it did not seem like anyone had lost their life yet.



Even though they were on the opposing side, looking at it once more, it did appear that the head of the Poison Hall was not intending to kill any of their master teachers, at least not yet.

“You also mentioned that my Junior Lu Chong is a deplorable individual. Very well, why don’t you tell me what deplorable deeds he has committed? Just what great sin has he committed for the ‘impartial’ Master Teacher Pavilion to denounce him so?” Wang Ying asked imposingly.

Once again, Ren Qingyuan was rendered speechless.

To be honest, he would not even have known that there would still be a living soul oracle in the world if Lu Chong had not appeared there. From the fact that he had never heard of the young man before alone, it showed that the young man had not done anything wrong that was worthy of the Master Teacher Pavilion’s attention.

“Why aren’t you speaking?” After all the suffering that her teacher and juniors had gone through, Wang Ying was not intending to let Ren Qingyuan off just like that.

With a cold sneer, she continued. “The Master Teacher Pavilion has always prided itself on being just and impartial. Just when did it become so presumptuous as to state its own opinions as facts and pass judgement on others based on its own biases? You claimed that my teacher kidnapped the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court, but let me ask you one question. Do you know whom the young court chief is?”

“Whom the young court chief is?” Ren Qingyuan frowned. “She’s a cultivator who possesses the rare Pure Yin Body. The Glacier Plain Court went to great lengths in order to find her...”

Seeing that Ren Qingyuan really did not know any thing at all, Wang Ying did not have the patience to listen to him speak any longer.

“I don’t know what lengths the Glacier Plain Court has gone in order to find her, but there’s one thing I do know, and that is...” Placing her hands behind her back, she said, “... she’s my senior!”

“Your senior? You mean to say that... the young court chief of the Glacier Plain Court is Zhang Xuan’s student as well?” Ren Qingyuan narrowed his eyes in shock. He quickly turned his gaze toward You Ruoxin and asked lividly, “Is this true?”

The Glacier Plain Court had not mentioned this when they reported the matter to them back then.

“Zhang Xuan was indeed Zhao Ya’s teacher for a period of time, but it’s also a fact that he impersonated Yang shi, took away our young court chief, and wreaked havoc in the Glacier Plain Court! Furthermore... the fact that he’s the teacher of a poison master and soul oracle shows that he’s a person of questionable character. Pavilion Master Ren, I ask of you not to be blinded by the words of despicable scoundrels...” You Ruoxin quickly spoke up.

“Questionable character? Despicable scoundrels? How dare you use such words on my teacher and senior?”

Hu la!

Before You Ruoxin could finish speaking, a furious bellow suddenly echoed from afar. Following which, a spear burst forth from the distance, and before she knew it, it was already right before her chest.

“Ahhh!” You Ruoxin’s face turned pale, and her eyes widened in absolute fright as she desperately retreated.

As powerful as she was, she could tell that the might of that spear had already far surpassed her means to deal with. Even before the spear could reach her, she could already feel the force that it commanded threatening to pierce right through her heart.

Hu hu hu!

While retreating, she anxiously formed over a hundred hand seals in the blink of an eye.

Following which, a transparent barrier reminiscent of crystal materialized right in front of her.

The strongest defensive technique of the Glacier Plain Court, Immaculate Glacial Yin Wall!

Kacha!

The next instant, the flying spear collided head on with the wall, but the wall did not even last for a breath before cracks began appearing throughout it.

You Ruoxin could tell that the barrier that she had created would not be able to withstand the might of the spear, and once the spear penetrated her barrier, even if she survived the ordeal, she would be crippled for good.

Thus, she turned to Ren Qingyuan and shrieked, “Pavilion Master Ren, save me!”

“Humph!” Ren Qingyuan harrumphed coldly, and as if he had teleported, he appeared instantaneously before the spear with a powerful leap. He immediately swung the sword in his hand toward the tip of the spear, intending to forcefully change its trajectory.

Ding ding ding ding!

However, there was some kind of bizarre vibration to the spear that caused it to continuously strike down on his sword with incredible force, and every single tremor held such tremendous force that it felt as if entire mountains were ramming into his sword one after another.

Deng deng deng deng!

Ren Qingyuan was forced to retreat several steps under the formidable might of the spear, but fortunately, he still succeeded in altering the spear’s path.

However, he was in no mood to celebrate at all. Shaking his numbed hand, he stared at the deflected spear with a look of disbelief on his face.

That spear had come from a distance away, but even after piercing through You Ruoxin’s Immaculate Glacial Yin Wall, it still wielded enough strength to force him back. Just how powerful was the man who threw the spear?

His doubt did not last for too long. A young man flitted in from the distance, stopping right before the crowd. He stood

with a perfectly upright figure in the air, emanating an aura of sharpness that seemed as if it could pierce the heavens.

The young man raised his hand, and the spear that Ren Qingyuan had just deflected flew into his grasp. Following which, he turned his gaze toward Ren Qingyuan and said, “Pavilion Master Ren, I’ll be taking my teacher back. I presume that you have no objections.”

# 1541 Teacher, Allow Me to Vent Your Anger for You!

“Progeny of Combat, what do you mean by this?”

Recognizing who the other party was, Ren Qingyuan’s face twitched uncontrollably. Taking a deep breath to calm himself down, he said, “You have to remember that everything you have now was given by the Master Teacher Pavilion. As long as we will it so, the Master Teacher Pavilion can take away everything that you have anytime we wish!”

“Take away everything I have?”

Completely unfazed by what Ren Qingyuan had said, Zheng Yang waved his hand nonchalantly and replied, “Do whatever pleases you!”

After which, he descended toward Zhang Xuan.

“Progeny of Combat Zheng Yang, just what kind of attitude do you think you are showing us?” Unable to tolerate the young man’s unconcerned reaction, Elder Qu dashed forward and blocked his path.

Even though he had been poisoned by Wei Ruyan earlier, as a 9-star master teacher, he had a deep understanding of medicine, and on top of that, he was also a powerful cultivator himself. After recuperating for a moment, he had already recovered enough to move around without any trouble.

“Don’t block my way.” Zheng Yang glanced at the elder standing before him with narrowed eyes. “Scram.”

“Audacious! Is this how you address a 9-star master teacher?” the infuriated Elder Qu snapped as his face turned crimson.

Every single one of Zhang Xuan’s student was more arrogant than the last.

We might not have the influence to interfere in the affairs of the Poison Hall, soul oracles, and Spirit Awakener Guild, but

the Combat Master Hall is a subsidiary of the Master Teacher Pavilion! How dare you bite the hand that feeds you?

“Then how do you want me to address you? Shall I kneel to you?” Zheng Yang scoffed.

“You don’t have to kneel to me, but you should understand that the strength and influence you possess right now is all due to the credit of the Master Teacher Pavilion. You are indebted to us. Don’t bite the hand that feeds you and ruin your own future...”

Halfway through Elder Qu’s words, he suddenly felt his goosebumps rising up. The next instant, he saw a spear piercing right in his direction, and the powerful aura that it commanded seemed as if it would tear his Primordial Spirit to shreds.

“You...” Alarmed, Elder Qu quickly whipped out a sword to defend against the spear.

Ding!

As the tip of the spear and the sword collided with a metallic clang, Elder Qu felt overwhelming might surging up his arm, seemingly threatening to jolt his meridians into shreds.

Pu!

The sword flew out of his hands, and he spurted a mouthful of blood as he was forced back a couple of steps. But before he could regain his footing once more, he saw the body of a spear flicking forcefully in his direction.

He instinctively cowered in fear, and he hurriedly raised his palms to defend himself.

Kacha! Kacha!

Under the astounding might of the spear whip, Elder Qu’s body slammed right into the ground, creating a huge pit beneath him on impact.

“I am already sparing your pride, but you still want to lecture me?” Zheng Yang scoffed as he clapped the dust off his hands and put his spear back leisurely, as if he had just done something insignificant.

“Elder Qu!”

“Progeny of Combat, just what in the world are you doing?”

Not expecting the other party to knock Elder Qu flying without the slightest hesitation, the surrounding master teachers flew into an uproar. They rushed forward to surround Zheng Yang, seemingly intending to lynch him.

“Are you thinking of making a move on me?” Despite the precarious situation that he was in, Zheng Yang did not show the slightest hint of anxiety. Instead, he lifted his gaze and bellowed, “These people are thinking of killing your Progeny of Combat! If you don’t wish to be without a hall master, stop them!”

Huala!

Right after those words were spoken, the master teachers saw the scene before them blurring. The surrounding space distorted for a moment before revealing eight elders. Each of them emanated an aura of bloodshed, reminiscent of valiant warriors who had just walked out of a battlefield.

Weng!

The eight elders drew their swords simultaneously, and a massive spatial rift created a gap between the master teachers and them.

One of the eight elders swept his gaze across the master teachers before saying in a firm voice, “I’ll have to ask you all not to advance any further than this. It wasn’t easy for the Combat Master Hall to find a Progeny of Combat, and we don’t wish for anything to go wrong at this point.”

Hearing the words of the elder, Ren Qingyuan felt blood rushing into his head as he roared, “Preposterous... This is utterly preposterous! Are you all starting a mutiny here!”

Ever since the founding of the Master Teacher Pavilion many millenniums ago, it had always taken the role of the leader of mankind, standing in a position that commanded respect and deference from the masses. There had never been a single power who dared oppose it. Yet, in the course of a single day, four powers had raised their arms against them!

“Mutiny? Just like how water can float the boat, it can also devour it whole as well. If the Master Teacher Pavilion is just and impartial, no one will question its judgement. But if it has strayed from the principles that it embraced, it’ll find many standing up to oppose it!” Zheng Yang replied coldly before turning his attention away from the master teachers altogether.

He descended to the ground and kneeled on the floor.

“Disciple Zheng Yang pays respect to teacher!”

Zhang Xuan looked at his student from head to toe and nodded with a warm smile. “Get up.”

Over the past few months, Zheng Yang had grown far more than he had expected, reaching a level that even he could hardly see through.

“Teacher, I heard that the Master Teacher Pavilion has issued an arrest warrant on you due to the Zhang Clan reporting that you have utilized an artifact of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe...” Zheng Yang stood up and asked respectfully, “May I know if that’s true?”

After pondering for a moment, Zhang Xuan nodded. “That seems to be the case.”

To be honest, he was not too sure why the Master Teacher Pavilion had chosen to release an arrest warrant on him, but the cause should be tied to the incident that had happened back at the Zhang Clan.

Back then, he had been in a rush to save Zhao Ya, so he had ended up borrowing Vicious’ strength to deal with Zhang Wuheng. That could be the reason the Master Teacher Pavilion had ended up taking such a severe stance against him.

After all, the Master Teacher Pavilion had always been wary of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, and when the security of mankind was at stake, it was understandable that they would rather be safe than sorry.

“Teacher, you have fought against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and singlehandedly destroyed an entire Otherworldly Demon Emperor lineage. Yet, due to an inkling of doubt that had to be verified, the Zhang Clan insisted that you are guilty



and demanded your punishment. Years of holding onto their title as the number one Sage Clan sure has inflated their guts. They seem to think that they can do as they please without facing the consequences!” Zheng Yang sneered coldly before clasping his fist and bowing grandly to Zhang Xuan. “Teacher, please allow me to vent your anger for you!”

“You want to help me get back at them?” Knowing Zheng Yang’s hot temper, Zhang Xuan sighed deeply before nodding. “Don’t take anyone’s life. It will do just to teach them a lesson!”

“I understand, Teacher!” Nodding, Zheng Yang slammed the spear in his hand onto the ground, causing the ground to tremor.

He turned his gaze upward and scanned the crowd above before saying, “Ruyan and Lu Chong, the Zhang Clan, the Sanctum of Sages, and the Glacier Plain Court have framed our teacher and attempted to take our teacher’s life. Are you willing to help me exact vengeance for our teacher and bring honor and dignity back to his name?”

“Of course!” Wei Ruyan took a step forward.

“It’s my responsibility to do so!” Lu Chong replied as he walked forward, too.

“Good!” Zheng Yang replied heartily.

He directed a cold and severe glare toward an old man amid the crowd above and bellowed, “Zhang Wuheng, not only have you injured my teacher, you even issued an order to have him surrounded and killed! For the humiliation that you have caused to my teacher, I, Zheng Yang, shall challenge you to a duel in the stead of my teacher! Do you dare accept my duel?”

Hu la!

Zheng Yang flicked his spear to the side, and spatial ripples appeared along the movement of his spear.

“You are challenging me to a fight?” Not expecting a young lad who was not even in his twenties yet to dare challenge him to a duel, Zhang Wuheng sneered in disdain. “Very well, come...”

Boom!

Before Zhan Wuheng could finish his sentence, a piercing shrill like a sharp blast of wind suddenly echoed from above. He quickly raised his head, only to see a massive figure falling from the sky, heading right in his direction.

Kacha!

Before he could even react, a massive bottom had already slammed him down all the way into the ground, causing several of his ribs to fracture. A huge number of his teeth scattered all over the ground as he coughed mouthful after mouthful of blood.

“Seniors and Juniors, how can you leave me out for a gathering like this? It seems like I have arrived late to the party,” the owner of the massive bottom said with a bright smile, revealing his gleaming, white teeth.

# 1542 Unexpected Changes with the Pavilion Master Seal

Seeing the familiar face on the figure sitting on top of Zhang Wuheng, Zheng Yang replied with a heart chuckle, “You came at the perfect time!”

With his eye of discernment, he could tell that Yuan Tao was far from a match for Zhang Wuheng. However, it seemed like while the rest of them had been protecting their teacher from the master teachers, this junior of his had not been slacking. The latter had flown to the highest altitude possible given the limits of his strength, likely tens of thousands of meters up in the sky, and he had dived all the way down from that height toward them.

By the time Yuan Tao reached them, the speed of his fall had already reached several times the speed of sound. As the attack had come too quickly from an unexpected angle, not to mention that his attention had been captured by Zheng Yang, Zhang Wuheng had been caught off guard by the attack from above.

This brief lapse in attention had been more than enough for the swiftly plummeting Yuan Tao to get him. The impact of the fall from someone who had been accelerating furiously for tens of thousands of meters was not one to be underestimated. While it was not enough to kill Zhang Wuheng, it had inflicted grievous injuries that would incapacitate him in the short run.

Who could have thought that the First Elder of the Zhang Clan, one of the top experts in the world, would actually end up being incapacitated by someone’s bottom before he could even use his bloodline ability? This would really be a huge smirch on his reputation.

“That’s a relief!” Yuan Tao patted his bottom before getting to his feet. Then, as if suddenly realizing that someone was beneath his bottom, he turned around and exclaimed with an

exaggeratedly shocked expression, “Elder Wuheng, what are you doing under me?”

“You... Pu!” Seeing the innocent look on the fellow who had nearly crushed him to death, Zhang Wuheng spurted another mouthful of blood out of indignation.

“Elder Wuheng, our Yuan Clan has always been on close terms with Zhang Clan, and we have never crossed one another before. Why would you appear beneath my ass of all places? Do you know how many days it has been since I last washed my ass? Furthermore, I went to the toilet before this, and I couldn’t find any toilet paper... H-how embarrassing it is! Quick, come out, come out! I’ll heal you up right now...”

With an anxious look on his face, Yuan Tao stretched his hand forward to grab Zhang Wuheng’s head, and as if pulling a radish out from the earth, he plucked the latter out from the hole that he was in.

“Pu!” Feeling as if his neck was on the verge of snapping apart, the First Elder spurted another mouthful of blood.

The sheer embarrassment from the situation made his eyes red in anger, and he was on the verge of erupting at any moment.

He was the most authoritative individual in the Zhang Clan other than the clan head! How could he tolerate being humiliated by such a brat so much younger than him!

In a state of rage, Zhang Wuheng was just about to drive his zhenqi to teach the brat a lesson when the latter suddenly turned to Zhang Xuan and said, “Teacher, it seems like the First Elder’s injuries are really quite severe. I remember that you have a Pummeling Healing Therapy Technique. Can I ask you to impart it to me so that I can treat him so as to make up for my previous mistakes?”

“Pummeling Healing Therapy Technique?” Hearing those words, Zhang Wuheng nearly choked on his saliva.

Just that bottom landing on him had nearly knocked him out of shape. If the other party pummeled him on top of that...

Is this how you treat an elder from a clan that is close with your Yuan Clan?

“Junior Yuan Tao, your memory is really failing you! That skill is called Beast Taming Pummeling Technique, not Pummeling Healing Therapy Technique! No matter how formidable a saint beast it was, as long as our teacher gave it a good beating, it would submit to him obediently!” Zheng Yang kindly reminded by the side.

“Ah, yes, you’re right. It’s Beast Taming Pummeling Technique... Huh, how did I remember it wrongly? My apologies, I guess it might be because he doesn’t look too humane to me... But back to the topic at hand, I came out in such a hurry that I forgot to bring any recovery medicine with me.” Yuan Tao turned his sight to the young lady not too far away and asked, “Junior Ruyan, do you have any good ointment or the sort that you could lend me? You poison masters often concoct all sort of stuff, so you should have quite a few with you, right?”

“I do have quite a few incredible pills with me. Within ten breaths after consumption, the patient will be permanently relieved from all pain and suffering,” Wei Ruyan replied with a sweet smile as she passed a jade bottle over.

“You really are my savior, Junior Ruyan! I can tell that it’s an incredible medicine with just a glance. Elder Wuheng, I really didn’t do it purposely earlier... Eh, Elder Wuheng? Don’t run away, I haven’t treated you yet!”

After grabbing the jade bottle, Yuan Tao was intending to feed the pill to the First Elder when he found that the fellow whom he had just plucked out of the ground had already fled far away with a frenzied look on his face.

If not for the fact that he was severely injured, he would have torn Yuan Tao apart right there and then!

“What a pity... You do know this is really good medicine, don’t you? You sure don’t know how to appreciate good stuff,” Yuan Tao grumbled with a look of pity on his face. Shaking his head, he turned to Zheng Yang and asked, “Since I’m not late, whom shall I face?”

“You can just sit by the side and enjoy the show. That woman is mine to deal with!” With an imposing wave of her hand,

Wei Ruyan directed a piercing gaze at the First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court and said, “Elder You Ruoxin, you framed my teacher and incited the Master Teacher Pavilion to issue an arrest warrant on him. I’ll officially challenge you to a duel right now. Since you have the guts to harm my teacher, I believe that you should have the gut to face me in a battle too, right?”

“You...” You Ruoxin’s face paled.

She had already witnessed the young lady’s prowess earlier, and her poison art was truly indomitable.

You Ruoxin had confidence in her own strength, but she was not so arrogant as to think that she would be able to match someone who could poison even a 9-star master teacher to death with ease.

“Why? Getting scared now?” Wei Ruyan scoffed in disdain before turning her sights to Zhan shi. “What about you then?”

“I...” Zhan shi’s lips twitched, but he did not dare reply to Wei Ruyan’s provocation.

He was only at Saint 9-dan primary stage, a long way off from matching up to Elder Qu and the others.

If the young lady really made a move, he would probably be defeated in a heartbeat.

“Very well, I won’t take advantage of you all.” Wei Ruyan flung her sleeves and declared majestically, “Your Glacier Plain Court and Sanctum of Sages can rally all of your experts together; I’ll face them all at once!”

Unable to take the provocations anymore, You Ruoxin bellowed, “Hall Master Wei, don’t go too far!”

“Are you saying that I’m going too far? When you brought so many people to encircle my teacher, did you ever think that you were going too far? Whether you like it or not, none of you will be getting away from here unscathed!” Wei Ruyan harrumphed coldly as she dashed right for You Ruoxin.

Before she even arrived, her poison aura had already scattered into the surroundings in the form of a pink mist.

“Don’t think that I’ll be scared of you! Your poison art might be formidable, but I won’t allow you to humiliate me that easily!” Knowing that there was no way out of this, You Ruoxin bellowed furiously as she thrust a finger forth.

The surrounding temperature suddenly plunged along with her movement, and it almost felt as if everything within a radius of tens of li would be frozen.

She knew that Wei Ruyan would be a powerful adversary, so she had no intention of holding back at all. She drove her pure yin energy to its very limits and released it all at once.

“Seems like you can at least put up a fight...” Wei Ruyan scoffed.

Without paying any heed to the chilling energy that You Ruoxin was emanating, she continued dashing forward. When she was only two hundred meters away from the latter, she suddenly raised her hand and clenched it.

Boom!

A light-yellow shockwave burst forth, and when You Ruoxin’s chilling energy came into contact with it, it was first forcefully pushed back before abruptly sinking into the ground, as if infused with lead.

“What a formidable poison art that is...”

The surrounding crowd felt a numbing sensation on their scalps.

To be able to render even one’s zhenqi immobile, the reputation of the Innate Poison Body truly was not unfounded.

“These children have really grown up...” Zhang Xuan nodded with a heartened smile.

The previous time that his students had helped him exact vengeance was back when they were still in the Tianxuan Kingdom. It had taken every single one of them to collaborate with one another before they had been able to defeat Lu Xun then, but now, they had all grown into powerhouses that could fight toe-to-toe with even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters!

The rate that they had changed at left him feeling a mixture of happiness and nostalgia.

“At least, it seems like the effort that I have devoted toward them wasn’t wasted,” Zhang Xuan remarked.

As a teacher, there was probably no happier occasion than seeing one’s student maturing. In that moment, it would feel as if all of the hard work that one had put in was worthwhile.

All of a sudden, Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up. He flicked his wrist, and a seal appeared in the middle of his palm.

At this moment, the seal was trembling excitedly, such that it felt searing to Zhang Xuan.



# 1543 The Unreliable Kong shi

Zhang Xuan frowned doubtfully. It didn't take in my blood, and I have unable to delve my consciousness into it either. Why would it suddenly grow so hot?

Previously, he had been thinking of all sorts of ways in order to tame the seal, but no matter what he did, there was no response at all. Why would it suddenly grow so hot after being placed inside his storage ring?

It was the greatest treasure of the Master Teacher Pavilion, and it had been snatched away by Lu Chong so that Ren Qingyuan could not use it to deal with him. No matter how the matter was resolved, he would likely have to return it in the end. If the Master Teacher Seal was ruined in his hands, it might really result in a full-blown war with the Master Teacher Pavilion!

While it might seem that his direct disciples had managed to one up the Master Teacher Pavilion, the unfortunate truth was that they still came nowhere close to matching it. For countless years, the Master Teacher Pavilion had been the de facto leader of the entire Master Teacher Continent, and given its accumulation and influence, the couple of them there would still be far from sufficient to oppose it.

Since placing it in my storage ring, it has been completely silent. It was only when I was thinking of my student's growth that it suddenly grew warm...

Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before a thought came to his mind.

Could it be that the Pavilion Master Seal is not tamed through blood but through the virtues of a teacher? If that's the case... it should be easier for me to tame it if I use the Celestial Master Teacher aura, right?

The Celestial Master Teacher was an individual who was recognized by the heavens, such that even Yang shi dared not pull his weight before one. If the token was really related to the virtues of a teacher, who would be more qualified than a teacher recognized by even the heavens?

Let me give it a try!

With this thought in mind, he discreetly drove his Celestial Master Teacher aura and infused it into the token.

Due to the increment of his Soul Depth, he commanded a greater control over his aura compared to before. Through careful manipulation, he was able to limit the emanation of his Celestial Master Teacher aura to the area in contact with the Pavilion Master Seal, thus making it nigh impossible for any 9-star master teacher or even Yang shi to detect it.

Tzzzzzzz!

As soon as the aura came into contact with the Pavilion Master Seal, the latter immediately became even hotter. There was an abrupt burst of wind, and Zhang Xuan suddenly felt the weight in his hand disappearing entirely.

He hurriedly lowered his gaze, and it was indeed the worst-case scenario. The Pavilion Master Seal had vanished without a trace, as if it had never been there in the first place.

In an instant, goosebumps rose all over Zhang Xuan's body, and his vision turned dark as he nearly fainted on the spot. He quickly released his Spiritual Perception and searched his surroundings, but it was completely empty. There was no sign of the token anywhere at all.

It's over... Zhang Xuan nearly burst into tears.

The Pavilion Master Seal was supposed to be some Ancient Sage artifact forged using Kong shi's blood essence, and even Yang shi would have trouble dealing with it, right? Yet, why would it suddenly disappear after he grasped it for a moment, as if an ice cube?

Just by its name alone, Pavilion Master Seal, even a fool could figure out its deep significance to the Master Teacher Pavilion. Even when Lu Chong took it, while Ren Qingyuan did panic,

he could tell that it was out of apprehension that the Master Teacher Pavilion would be humiliated rather than the worry of never getting it back... But now that the Pavilion Master Seal had disappeared into thin air, how was he supposed to give it back to the other party?

While he did cause a huge fuss with the three powers, it was still something that could be resolved eventually. However, if he took away the Pavilion Master Seal as well, he would really be eaten alive.

What the heck was this?

“Hurry up and come out. Stop messing around,” Zhang Xuan muttered anxiously as he searched his surroundings frantically.

Soon, his eyes fell on his palm, and he froze.

He found that three conspicuous crimson droplet imprints had unknowingly appeared on his palm, and it felt like they harnessed some kind of mysterious power.

What is this? Zhang Xuan pondered as he tapped on one of the crimson droplets lightly.

Weng!

All of a sudden, with a resounding buzz amid a slight moment of disorientation, Zhang Xuan suddenly found himself being teleported into a void dimension.

In this dimension, the concepts of time and space did not seem to exist. All that could be seen around him was a glaring white background and a smiling elder.

Zhang Xuan jolted in astonishment upon seeing the elder’s face. There was no way he could not recognize the other party when his sculpture could be found in every single Master Teacher Pavilion across the continent.

“Kong shi?”

At that moment, Kong shi had a gentle and warm look on his face. A hint of agitation could be seen in depths of his eyes as he said, “Finally, after so many years... Pleased to meet you, the new Celestial Master Teacher!”

“Junior Zhang Xuan pays respect to Kong shi!” Zhang Xuan clasped his fist and greeted the elder before him.

Kong shi stroked his beard and nodded with a kind smile, acknowledging Zhang Xuan’s greeting. “The Pavilion Master Seal is an artifact that I forged with three droplets of my blood essence after founding the Master Teacher Pavilion. Only a true Celestial Master Teacher will be able to tame it. The fact that you can activate the seal and summon my will proves that you have met this condition...”

“Kong shi, pardon me for saying this, but would you allow me to speak first? There’s something urgent that I have to ask you...” Seeing that Kong shi was about to jump into his usual long speech once more, Zhang Xuan immediately interjected into his words and stopped him anxiously.

From past experience, he had come to learn that despite Kong shi’s great achievements, he was actually a particularly unreliable person. Each and every time that he managed to speak to Kong shi, the other party would vanish right before getting to the main point! If he allowed Kong shi to go first this time, chances were that the same would happen.

Having learned his lesson, Zhang Xuan was determined to go first this time around.

“Oh?” Noting Zhang Xuan’s anxiety, Kong shi looked at the young man for a moment before raising his hand. “Please, feel free to speak!”

“I am afflicted with the Innate Fetal Poison, and I heard that you underwent the same experience back then as well. May I know how you managed to resolve it?” Zhang Xuan asked anxiously.

“Innate Fetal Poison?” Kong shi frowned as he examined Zhang Xuan intently. A moment later, he nodded and said, “It’s indeed the Innate Fetal Poison! The poison itself isn’t too difficult to cure, but...”

“But?”

“The thing that is hidden inside the Innate Fetal Poison might not be that easy to get rid of,” Kong shi said with a grim look

on his face.

“The thing that is hidden inside the Innate Fetal Poison? What’s that?” Zhang Xuan asked in confusion.

He had noticed the Innate Fetal Poison early and used his Heaven’s Path zhenqi to have it suppressed in a corner, rendering it immobile. But from Kong shi’s tone... it seemed like there was more to the Innate Fetal Poison than met the eye.

“There’s no point talking about it now; you will come to know of it yourself once you cure yourself of the Innate Fetal Poison. It’s not that I want to conceal this matter from you, but there could be adverse consequences if I tell you in advance, so I can only seek your understanding for that. For the time being, let me tell you the method to resolving the Innate Fetal Poison first,” Kong shi said.

“Please enlighten me!” Zhang Xuan clasped his fist.

While he still had some years before the triggering of the Innate Fetal Poison, he still hoped to cure himself of it as soon as possible. Otherwise, he would be unable to shake off the tension coming from the feeling that he was already standing in death’s jaws.

“The Innate Fetal Poison is planted into the body of an expecting body in order to strip a fetus’ bloodline or to destroy its vitality. As the poison is planted during a fetus’ developmental phase, it’s viewed to be an inherent condition by the body, so ordinary medicines are ineffective on it. There’s only one way to resolve it for good, and that’s to become a 9-star master teacher and undergo the Tribulation of Heavenly Flames. If you can draw the flames into your body and use the heat to sear the poison aura, you’ll be able to resolve the poison easily. Of course, the heavenly flames are a violent and dangerous power to deal with, and the slightest carelessness could result in one being reduced to ash. I had to pay quite a heavy price in order to resolve the Innate Fetal Poison back then,” Kong shi explained.

“The Tribulation of Heavenly Flames... Got it. Thank you, Kong shi!” Zhang Xuan clasped his fists once more.

Given that these words had come from Kong shi himself, the Tribulation of Heavenly Flames should be effective. With this, he would finally have a concrete direction to work toward.

Given his current strength, he still had some way to go before becoming a 9-star master teacher. Nevertheless, with his rate of cultivation, it should not be too difficult for him to get there before thirty.

“The Innate Fetal Poison only triggers after stepping into your thirties, but still, it would be best for you to resolve it as soon as possible. You have just reached your twenties not too long ago, and if you can resolve it before twenty-five, you can avoid having your strength and potential compromised by it!” Kong shi warned grimly.

Zhang Xuan nodded. “I understand!”

Indeed, this matter should be resolved as soon as possible. After wrapping up the current mess that he was in, he should put his attention solely into raising his cultivation and strive for a breakthrough to 9-star master teacher within two months!

Once he succeeded, everything would swiftly fall into place.

“Now that we have resolved your problem, I would like to talk to you about the Pavilion Master Seal. This artifact is forged using three droplets of my blood essence, and once you tame it, it’ll assume the form of droplets on your palm. By touching it, you will be able to...”

Hu!

Kong shi’s figure suddenly flickered.

“Will be able to?” Zhang Xuan’s heart skipped a beat upon seeing this sight, and he hurriedly urged Kong shi to finish his sentence.

“... able to...”

Hula!

Reaching his limit, Kong shi’s silhouette dissipated into thin air.

Hong long!

Zhang Xuan's mind jolted, and he found himself still sitting right before Zhao Ya. Up in the sky, Wei Ruyan and You Ruoxin had barely begun their battle, and everyone was still where he remembered them to be. Nothing seemed to have changed at all.

It was as if that conversation had occurred in frozen time.

It was fortunate that was the case, or else it could have ended in a disaster for Zhao Ya.

“That fellow didn't finish his words again! Everyone says that he's the World's Teacher, but who in the world disappears halfway through passing down important information!” Zhang Xuan grumbled furiously beneath his breath.

How many times had this happened to date? To think that the founder of the Master Teacher Pavilion, a figure respected by so many people, would actually be so unreliable!

“Forget it...” Zhang Xuan glanced at the crimson droplets on his palm and murmured curiously, “He mentioned something about touching it earlier. If I really touch it, what will happen?”

# 1544 A Sudden Intruder

When he touched it previously, a Kong shi had popped up. Even if he touched it once more, nothing bad would happen, right?

With such a thought in mind, Zhang Xuan tapped his finger on the crimson droplet once more.

Hong long!

As soon as his finger came into contact with the crimson droplet, immense power suddenly began surging into his body. Following which, the crimson droplet that he touched began shrinking at a visible rate before vanishing without a trace.

T-this... Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in astonishment at the changes in his body.

His entire body was filled with power, and he felt as if he could command and destroy the world at his will.

What strength is this? Zhang Xuan thought in disbelief.

He was a Saint 8-dan primary stage cultivator, but after taking in the power from the crimson droplet, he found himself far surpassing his limits, reaching a level that was beyond his imagination.

Even though he could not clearly assess how powerful he was at the moment, he could feel that he wielded enough power to crush the space around him with ease.

Could this be what Ren Qingyuan said earlier about a level that is invincible among those beneath Ancient Sage?

Previously, when Ren Qingyuan first took out the Pavilion Master Seal, he had said that those who were able to tame it would be able to command strength invincible among those beneath Ancient Sage. He had thought that the other party was simply exaggerating, but to think that it would be true!

The crimson droplets in his palm seemed to be the blood essence that Kong shi had infused into the Pavilion Master



Seal, and by touching one, he would be able to take in the energy in the blood essence and command devastating power.

However... this power ultimately still isn't mine, so there should be a time limit to it, Zhang Xuan concluded after some thought.

As strong as this power was, it was different from Cultivation Impartation. Rather than saying that it had raised his cultivation, it was more like a cloak of power that he donned temporarily.

For a set amount of time, he would wield tremendous power. However, as time passed, the power would swiftly diminish, and once it had been depleted, he would return to how he originally was.

Three crimson droplets—that should mean that I can use this ability thrice...

Having made sense of the matter, Zhang Xuan finally understood what Kong shi wanted to say before disappearing.

Most likely, Kong shi was going to explain how the Pavilion Master Seal worked, but his unexpected question about the Innate Fetal Poison resulted in him not having enough time to talk about the matter.

No matter how powerful one was, as long as one successfully tamed the Pavilion Master Seal, one would have three opportunities to wield strength invincible beneath Ancient Sage. As expected of the World's Teacher! The artifacts that he created were indeed on a whole new level.

No matter what kind of mystical effects an artifact could have, nothing was safer than raw power.

With this trump card in his possession, his safety would be assured!

With such strength at my disposal, the Zhang Clan, the Glacier Plain Court, and the Sanctum of Sages won't pose a threat to me anymore! Zhang Xuan thought with a soft chuckle.

He had still been wondering how he should resolve the problem before him, but with such strength at his disposal, he

had nothing to fear anymore.

In the worst-case scenario, he would just have to force all of them to submit to him!

However, I still need to resolve the problem with Zhao Ya's meridians first...

As excited as Zhang Xuan was, he knew that his priority should be the tightly-wrapped young lady before him.

He continued to forge the pathways for Zhao Ya's meridians, but in the midst of doing so, he realized that due to the rise in his strength, he was able to control his zhenqi more finely, allowing him to hasten the process significantly.

Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. It should have taken at least two more hours, but with this, I should be able to complete it within ten minutes.

While Zhang Xuan was treating Zhao Ya, the battle in the sky came to an end as well. You Ruoxin's face had turned completely black from poison, and her convulsing body plummeted to the ground.

Be it in terms of poison art or even just raw power, she was far from a match for Wei Ruyan. In fact, had it not been for Zhang Xuan instructing his students not to kill anyone, she would have already been dead by now.

Seeing that her junior, Wei Ruyan, had dealt with one of the culprits, Wang Ying turned to Zhan shi and said, "If I recall correctly... Zhan shi, you issued an instruction to have my teacher arrested and killed as well, right?"

"I reckon that you wouldn't like it if my other juniors such as Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan were to challenge you... So, you won't turn down a fight from a spirit awakener like me, right?"

"I..." Zhan shi's face twitched in fright upon hearing those words.

Considering how Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan were able to stand squarely against Ren Qingyuan, he would indeed stand no chance against those two monsters. However, the young

lady in front of him was not a weakling either! She was the head of the Spirit Awakener Guild, and it would be foolish to underestimate the means that she had at her disposal!

“If you are unwilling to fight, there’s another way out of this. Apologize to my teacher now and retract your orders!” Wang Ying harrumphed coldly with a fling of her sleeves.

“Apologize? That’s impossible!” Zhan shi roared resolutely. “Even if I die, I won’t stand for anyone humiliating the Sanctum of Sages!”

“I see. I’ll fulfill your wish for a valiant death then!” Seeing that the other party’s mind was set, Wang Ying could not be bothered to waste her breath anymore.

She raised her palm, and one of the Master Teacher Pavilions immediately charged toward Zhan shi.

Hu la!

A huge gale roared under the Master Teacher Pavilion’s charge. The charge of something as colossal as an entire Master Teacher Pavilion was a rather imposing sight.

Zhan shi stood his ground and gathered his zhenqi to form an eight-meter-large palm print, and he thrust it right into the charging Master Teacher Pavilion.

Kacha!

The palm strike burst right through the Master Teacher Pavilion, causing it to collapse entirely. However, Zhan shi was also forced to retreat under the impact as well.

“Stop it! That’s our Empire Alliance Master Teacher Pavilion!” an 8-star master teacher yelled in despair by the side.

If you want to fight, do it somewhere else! Why do you have to use our buildings and property as collateral damage?

“He shi, I can’t care that much at this point,” Zhan shi replied helplessly as he leaped forward and dashed for Wang Ying.

Kill a cavalry by shooting down its horse; destroy a band of thieves by nabbing its leader!

If the situation continued, it would only be a matter of time before he was worn down by the endless assault of buildings. In order to get out of this quandary, he would have to nab Wang Ying first!

“Do you really think that my strength only comes from my enchantments?” Wang Ying scoffed as she looked at Zhan shi’s swiftly approaching figure.

Unlike Zheng Yang and Wei Ruyan, she had not met with any fortuitous encounters nor did she possess a unique constitution, but as the leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild, she had amassed the strength of her predecessors.

No longer was she that naive and powerless girl of the past.

She raised her hand and thrust her palm forward.

Her movements were not fast, but they carried fearsome might. In the midst of his charge, Zhan shi suddenly felt a shudder run down his spine. Knowing that he would not be able to withstand the attack head on, he quickly leaped upward.

But following his movement, he suddenly found his surroundings turning dark. Turning his gaze upward, he saw a massive puppet towering above him, and it was in the midst of swinging its fist toward him.

“It’s the Guardian Artifact of the Spirit Awakener Guild, the Empyrean Puppet!” Ren Qingyuan bellowed in shock.

Hula!

Unfortunately, his warning came too late. There was no way that Zhan shi could avoid the massive fist of the Empyrean Puppet anymore. Once it struck him, even though he was a Saint 9-dan primary stage expert, he would be inflicted with severe injuries that would leave him incapacitated for months on end.

At that crucial moment, a sharp, cold glint flashed across the sky, deflecting the puppet’s fist, accompanied by an imposing voice.

“Stop!”

# 1545 A Duel with the Sword Sain

That sword qi was powerful and magnificent, carrying a wholesome intent to it. Even though it had come from afar, it did not seem to be restricted by the concept of time. It seemed to have abruptly materialized right before the puppet's fist, thus saving Zhan shi in the nick of time.

That was a full might attack from the Empyrean Puppet, yet it had easily been deflected by the other party.

“An expert...” Wang Ying narrowed her eyes warily.

She hurriedly turned her gaze in the direction that the sword qi had originated from. At the same time, Zheng Yang also tightened his grasp on his spear, prepared to make a move at any moment.

To be able to deflect Wang Ying's attack from such a long distance away, the person's strength was at least on par with Ren Qingyuan's. In fact, in the field of swordsmanship, that person might even have surpassed Ren Qingyuan!

“It's the Speed Sword Quintessence!” Zhang Xuan, who was still in the midst of reconstructing Zhao Ya's meridians, suddenly spoke up at this point. With a nod, he answered the doubt that was in everyone's mind. “It's probably the head of the Zhang Clan, the father of the young prodigy, Sword Saint Xing!”

He had already learned the essence of the Zhang Clan swordsmanship back in the Zhang Clan, and he knew its capabilities very well. It was capable of allowing one's sword qi to break free from the restraints of time and reach one's opponents in an instant. However, the only one who could pull off such fine control of it even from a long distance away was the legendary head of the Zhang Clan, Sword Saint Xing!

I was intending to challenge him back when I was still at the Zhang Clan, but he was nowhere to be seen. Since he's here, it's a good opportunity to see if he's really as strong as the others make him out to be! Zhang Xuan thought with a smile.

During his trip to the Zhang Clan, he had managed to make an appointment to duel with Sword Saint Xing, but in the end, he did not get to meet the other party. Who could have thought that they would come by one another here?

Since that was the case, he could use the other party as a sparring partner to try out his newfound strength while exacting vengeance for Elder Jian. More importantly, he would make it clear to the other party that if his son wanted to marry Luo Ruoxin, he would have to get past him first!

Hula!

Barely after those thoughts surfaced in his head, the space ahead of him suddenly rippled, and two figures came into appearance—a middle-aged man and a middle-aged lady. They were the couple who had been going around in search of their son, Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng!

Those two had been going in the opposite direction from the Empire Alliance when they received Yang Shi's message and rushed over.

"Clan head..." Upon seeing the two of them, Zhang Wuheng immediately rushed up to them in agitation, as if he was looking at his savior.

"First Elder, what happened to you?" Sword Saint Xing's eyebrows twitched in astonishment.

As the number one clan on the Master Teacher Continent, even the Master Teacher Pavilion would have tread carefully around the Zhang Clan. Yet, for its First Elder to be pummeled to such a state, not sparing any heed for the Zhang Clan's dignity at all... Just who could the culprit be?

"It's all because of that darned Zhang Xuan and his students!" Zhang Wuheng spat as he pointed at the young lad below.

"Clan head, you must redress my grievances! Otherwise, what will others think of our Zhang Clan? If we don't deal with this

promptly, we'll become the laughingstock of the Master Teacher Continent!"

"Zhang Xuan?" Upon hearing Zhang Wuheng's words, Sword Saint Meng immediately followed the First Elder's finger, and soon after, a young man gazing in her direction appeared in her field of vision.

In that instant, her body began shuddering uncontrollably.

"It must be him! Dear, I am certain about it—it must be him!" Sword Saint Meng turned to her husband and exclaimed passionately through zhenqi telepathy.

Even she had no idea why she was so certain that the young man before her was her son. She was aware that her claims were unfounded, but she had always trusted her intuition, and she could feel an inexplicable connection with the young man.

Fearing that his wife might run amok, Sword Saint Xing hurriedly grabbed her hand and squeezed it. "Calm down, dear. As long as he's our son, we'll surely be able to reunite with him today..."

He had no idea what was going on, but given the fact the First Elder could still be pummeled to such a state despite the presence of so many 9-star master teachers, it would appear that Zhang Xuan was no ordinary figure.

It was one thing if the other party was really their son, but if he was not their son and they still rushed over to acknowledge him, that would really make things awkward.

In the first place, it was already a huge embarrassment for the Zhang Clan to be forced to such a position. If they made a mistake at this point, the Zhang Clan's reputation might really be lost for good!

Seeing right through her husband's concerns, Sword Saint Meng bellowed telepathically with gritted teeth, "Are you doubting my words? There's no way I would fail to recognize my own son! Even if he has matured, my blood still flows in his veins!"

"I know what you are feeling. As much as he's your son, he's my son as well! You are anxious to reunite with him, but so

am I! However, it's precisely at a time like this that we must remain calm and ensure nothing goes wrong! Isn't there a scarlet birthmark on our child's bottom? I'll find an excuse to ask about it later on, and as long as we can verify that, we'll reunite with him right away, alright?" Sword Saint Xing appeased his wife.

Even though their son was a Connate Saint, that did not change the fact that he had only been an infant when he left their side. Furthermore, the other party seemed to have a slightly different soul aura from their son, which made it more important to verify the matter.

And the easiest and least intrusive method to do so was through his birthmark.

All parts of a person's body could change over time, but one's birthmarks would never disappear.

"Very well!" Knowing that there was some sense in what Sword Saint Xing was saying, Sword Saint Meng nodded and composed herself.

Seeing how the couple had been mumbling between themselves intimately ever since arriving, Zheng Yang's eyebrows shot up, and he walked forward. "Are you the head of the Zhang Clan? You came at the perfect time. I haven't had a chance to make a move yet, so do you want to be my opponent?"

Fearing that Sword Saint Xing would not recognize the young man, Zhang Wuheng quickly reported telepathically, "That young man is Zhang Xuan's student, as well as the Progeny of Combat, Zheng Yang!"

"So, you are the Progeny of Combat, Zheng Yang! I have long heard your name, but I didn't think that you would be Zhang Shi's student..." Sword Saint Xing clasped his fist and greeted the young man.

"Don't bother wasting your breath on cr\*p like that; you just have to say whether you wish to fight or not! Your Zhang Clan has humiliated my teacher, but your First Elder still refuses to apologize for his misdeeds. If you don't wish to have a duel



with me, I'm willing to drop the matter at an apology from you as well!" Zheng Yang looked at Sword Saint Xing haughtily as he raised his spear imposingly, causing the air to moan under the pressure of his movement.

He knew that Sword Saint Xing was a formidable expert who had made his name ages ago, but as the Progeny of Combat, he had already resolved himself not to back down from any opponent. Courage and tenacity would be his strongest weapons.

Since he had gone there to vent his teacher's anger, he would have to make sure to beat the three powers into submission so that they would not dare utter another word.

"I'm fine with having a duel with you as well, but..." Sword Saint Xing paused for a moment as a smile surfaced on his lips. "... I happen to have an appointment for a duel with your teacher. Since the both of us are here, I would rather settle that matter first before dealing with whatever you have for me!"

"Do you think that any random person on the street is qualified to duel with my esteemed teacher?" Zheng Yang harrumphed. "Of course, if you can get past me, there will be nothing I can say about you challenging my teacher... but if you can't, just know that I won't stop until you finally apologize!"

"Your words do make sense. It's perfectly normal for a student to stand up on his teacher's behalf, and there's nothing I can say about it," Sword Saint Xing said. "However... the perpetrator behind the grudge with the Zhang Clan is your teacher, and only when he resolves it personally can others accept the outcome. As a student, don't you think that it might be too disrespectful of you to meddle in every single one of your teacher's affairs? If word spreads, people will think that the matter was resolved only because Zhang shi took in a good student, and that wouldn't look too good, right?"

"That..." Zheng Yang was put at a loss for words.

His mind had been preoccupied with how he could vent his teacher's anger, so he had not thought too deeply about the possible implications for his teacher as a result of his actions.

He hated to admit it, but Sword Saint Xing was right. Of course, there was no issue with a student stepping forward to protect their teacher, but if they went overboard, it would make the teacher appear incompetent instead.

And incompetence was one word that no master teacher would ever want their name to be associated with.

“Teacher, I...” Realizing all of these, Zheng Yang turned to his teacher in seek of his opinion, only to see the latter chuckling softly.

“It’s fine, I can handle this matter. It’s true that I had an appointment for a duel with the head of the Zhang Clan, and since he wishes to proceed with it, I’m more than willing to entertain him!”

# 1546 Zhang Xuan Offers His Pointers 1

“Teacher, your current cultivation realm...” Zheng Yang exclaimed anxiously.

His teacher was only at Dimension Sundering realm primary stage whereas the fact that the head of the Zhang Clan was able to execute a burst of sword qi to deflect Wang Ying’s puppet from such a long distance away showed that his cultivation was surely above Saint 9-dan!

Considering the huge disparity in their cultivation, how were they supposed to fight with one another?

Making use of the crimson droplets formed from the Pavilion Master Seal, Zhang Xuan currently wielded strength far beyond his limits, but due to his high Soul Depth, the nature of the Heaven’s Path zhenqi, and the fact that he had not showcased it at all, not even Zheng Yang was aware of the massive change in his teacher’s fighting prowess over the past few seconds.

Knowing what Zheng Yang was worried about, Sword Saint Xing added with a smile, “I can lower my cultivation to Zhang shi’s level, and it’ll only be a simple duel of swordsmanship, so you can rest assured that I won’t injure your teacher!

“If I lose, I’ll apologize to you on behalf of the Zhang Clan and not pursue everything that happened before. However, if I win, I’ll have to ask Zhang shi to abide by the agreement that we made previously!”

When Zhang Xuan challenged Sword Saint Xing to a duel back then, he had promised that he would join the Zhang Clan as an elder if he lost the duel.

“Of course, I won’t renege on my promise!” Zhang Xuan nodded. “However, since it’s a duel, I won’t take advantage of

you either. There's no need for you to suppress your cultivation. Just bring forth your strongest move against me!"

"You want me to use my strongest move against you?" Sword Saint Xing was taken aback.

Given his cultivation realm, if he used his strongest move, even Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan would have trouble dealing with it. Did the Dimension Sundering realm primary stage young man really mean the words that he said?

"Has that fellow gone mad?"

Ren Qingyuan, Zhang Wuheng, and the others were perplexed by Zhang Xuan's words as well.

They had seen the young man's strength earlier, and other than his many means and powerful students, there was really nothing spectacular about him at all. To actually ask Sword Saint Xing to use his strongest move against him without suppressing his cultivation... that was as good as asking to be killed!

"That's right!" Zhang Xuan nodded. "On top of that, I'll sit here and fight you with a single hand. If my body moves in the slightest or my other hand is utilized, I'll admit my defeat!"

"..." Sword Saint Xing's face twitched uncontrollably upon hearing those words.

He had two reasons for challenging Zhang Xuan to a fight. Firstly, he wanted to check if the young man was his son. Secondly, he could better resolve the enmity between the young man and the Zhang Clan through this manner, appeasing the elders of the Zhang Clan while carefully controlling his strength to ensure that the young man did not sustain any grievous wounds.

It was one thing for the young man not to reciprocate his goodwill, but to utter such arrogant words on top of that...

"He sure is like you..."

Just as Sword Saint Xing was just about to explode from rage, he suddenly heard his wife's voice in his ears, and his body twitched in horror. "Am I really that arrogant?"

“You were even more arrogant than him when you were younger!” Sword Saint Meng replied with a smile.

“This...” Sword Saint Xing scratched his head before looking at Zhang Xuan helplessly. “Alright then. Since that’s your request, I’ll do just that!”

After saying those words, he descended from the sky to the ground.

But the moment that his foot came into contact with the ground, the telepathic voice of his wife echoed in his mind. “If you so much harm a single strand of hair on my son, do not dream of getting into my bed in the future!”

“I...” Sword Saint Xing staggered upon hearing those words, and he nearly burst into tears.

Just what have I done so wrong to warrant such a fate?

Could the young man have expected this outcome when he proposed to face his attack with one hand while sitting on the ground?

“Teacher...”

In contrast to Sword Saint Xing’s tearfulness, Zheng Yang, Wei Ruyan, and the others directed worried gazes at Zhang Xuan.

Each of them had a fortuitous encounter of their own that had allowed them to improve swiftly. However, their teacher had not been lucky enough to have such an encounter, so his cultivation had ended up lagging behind them at Dimension Sundering realm primary stage. With his current strength, there was no way that he could stand a chance against the full-powered Sword Saint Xing!

There was absolutely zero chance of victory at all!

“Don’t worry. When has our teacher waged a war that he’s unconfident of winning? Since our teacher has said such words, he definitely has a plan in mind!” Yuan Tao said with a smile.

“I guess that’s true...” Zheng Yang pondered for a moment before nodding.

Wei Ruyan had come under Zhang Xuan's lineage a little late, so she was unaware of many of his past exploits. Nevertheless, she still had a rough grasp of the latter's temperament and character.

If there was one thing that she was certain about, this teacher of hers would never take the short end of a stick!

Those who dared challenge him would only end up tragically defeated!

"Wait a moment! Have any of you realized that our teacher's aura seemed to have... changed." Wang Ying suddenly spoke up. "I could still roughly gauge the depth of his strength earlier, but right now, no matter how I look at him, it's like staring into an endless ocean, unable to see the end of it no matter how one squints."

Those words prompted Zheng Yang, Wei Ruyan, and the others to take a good look at their teacher once more, and indeed, there were some significant changes with the latter. Even though he was still seated on the spot, the energy within his body appeared to have been amplified many times over, reaching a level that even they could not accurately gauge anymore.

"Our teacher might have made a breakthrough again..." Lu Chong suggested uncertainly.

As a soul oracle, his sensitivity to his environment was much higher than the others. Just a moment ago, his teacher had still been at a level that he could defeat easily, but right now... just by standing in the vicinity of his teacher, he felt a powerful pressure pressing down on him, suffocating him.

He had no idea just what could induce such a massive change in his teacher within such a short period of time, but considering that it was his teacher whom they were talking about, even the impossible did not seem too impossible anymore.

Seeing that his teacher was prepared, Zheng Yang was finally able to put down the worries in his heart. With a light chuckle, he ushered the others to the side and said, "Since that's the

case, there's no need for us to worry then. Let's just sit back and watch our teacher teach Sword Saint Xing a lesson!"

Remembering dearly his wife's threat, Sword Saint Xing took a deep breath before he flicked his wrist and whipped out his sword. "Make your move!"

"I fear that I might accidentally injure you if I wield my sword. Since it's a friendly duel, I'll pass on using my sword," Zhang Xuan glanced at Sword Saint Xing and spoke composedly.

"You aren't going to wield a sword? How are you intend to fight then?"

In that moment, Sword Saint Xing felt like clawing his hair out.

There was really no way to communicate with such arrogant fools!

Fine, he admitted that he had been pretty egoistical when he was younger, often trying to humblebrag whenever the opportunity arose. However, even he had not reached this level of boastfulness before!

It was almost as if the young man was trying to slap his face with his every sentence!

Anyone else in his shoes would have already turned irrational from rage at this point, but somehow, toward the young man sitting before him... he could not get angry even if he wanted to.

He still was not too sure whether the young man was truly his son or not, but he could grasp what his wife was saying. It was hard to put it into words, but it felt like there was an inseverable connection between him and the young man.

"I'll just fight you like this."

Oblivious to the thoughts running through Sword Saint Xing's mind, Zhang Xuan flicked his finger, and a surge of sword qi exactly three chi long gathered at the tip of his finger, emanating a cold glint.

“Very well then, do whatever pleases you. Just... try to avoid getting hurt, alright?”

It was hard to tell if it was out of rage or frustration, but Sword Saint Xing heaved a deep sigh.

Following which, he flicked his sword and pierced it right toward Zhang Xuan.

He had only used a tenth of his might, but he did not hold back on his Sword Intent at all. The moment that the sword stabbed forth, it transcended through space and appeared right in front of Zhang Xuan’s glabella the next moment.

“Not bad, I have to say that your swordsmanship is quite decent!” Zhang Xuan chuckled softly.

As expected of the number one expert of the Zhang Clan swordsmanship! As soon as he made his move, it was immediately apparent that his swordsmanship had reached a much higher level than Zhang Xu and the others.

Without bothering to dodge, Zhang Xuan remained seated on the spot. He continued to reconstruct Zhao Ya’s meridians with his left hand while raising his right hand and tapping the space in front of him.

A burst of sword qi shot forth from his fingertip, and it transcended the limitations of space in an instant.

Be it the initiation move, the intent, or the release of the technique, the sword art that Zhang Xuan had just executed was completely identical to that of Sword Saint Xing. If the others were not aware of the hostile relationship between Zhang Xuan and the Zhang Clan, they would have thought that they were brothers from the same lineage sparring with one another.

However, even though it was the exact same move, Zhang Xuan’s attack managed to reach its target first despite its later release. From the looks of it, Sword Saint Xing’s swordsmanship would be undone before it could push even the slightest centimeter further.

“This...” Sword Saint Xing’s body recoiled in astonishment at the unexpected turn in events as he gasped in disbelief. “How



is this possible?"

# 1547 Zhang Xuan Offers His Pointers 2

Sword Saint Xing's understanding of the Zhang Clan's swordsmanship had already reached an inconceivable level. Every subtle movement that he made was in alignment with the essence of the Speed Sword Quintessence, yet the young man was still able to get to him faster despite releasing his sword art later. Not only so, the young man's strength had also far surpassed his!

If he failed to dodge this move, the young man would swiftly nullify any strength that he commanded, such that his sword would not be able to deal any damage even if it fell on the young man's body.

"Humph!" Knowing that he was facing a true expert, Sword Saint Xing decisively gave up on the idea of going easy on the young man.

He took a deep breath before sliding his feet half a step back. After which, his sword curved in a unique and bizarre trajectory, forcefully transforming a pierce into a hack.

"You are going to the extent of executing the Dragon Slaying Sword? You..." Upon seeing the move that her husband had executed, Sword Saint Meng nearly exploded on the spot.

If there was anyone in this world who knew Sword Saint Xing the best, it was indubitably her. The two of them had practiced the Dragon Slaying Sword for quite some time before they had been able to achieve some level of accomplishment in the sword art. While it was not the strongest sword art that they had, the might that it commanded was mind-boggling. Even Ren Qingyuan would fluster in its face!

To execute such a move against him barely after the battle had started... didn't I tell you to go easy on him?

Is that how you take my instructions?

Sword Saint Meng gnashed her teeth furiously. If I allow you to even come close to my bed, I'll write my surname upside down from this day forth!

“You reacted faster than I thought!”

While Zhang Xuan had managed to outdo the head of the Zhang Clan at the first encounter, he had to admit that the other party was a pretty formidable opponent. The other party was actually able to instantaneously determine that his defense would arrive faster than his offense, and he decisively changed his assault and launched a counterattack.

Chuckling softly, Zhang Xuan raised his right hand once more and tapped his finger forward.

It was the same move as before; however, this time, the target was not Sword Saint Xing's glabella but his shoulder.

Under normal circumstances, Sword Saint Xing's strike would have struck down on Zhang Xuan's head first due to the longer distance from Zhang Xuan's finger to Sword Saint Xing's shoulder. However... from the trajectory of his hack, if Sword Saint Xing continued with his offense, his wrist would cross paths with Zhang Xuan's burst of sword qi.

With the sharpness of his sword qi, there was no doubt that Sword Saint Xing's wrist would be severed before his sword could manage to strike down on Zhang Xuan's head.

Sword Saint Xing's face twitched upon realizing this fact, and his face turned even more severe than before.

He had thought that given the disparity in their cultivation, he should be able to defeat the young man easily. Who would have thought that even when he utilized his full strength, he would still be unable to outdo the young man?

The young man might have been young, but his eyes seemed to see right through his sword arts and maneuvers. Each and every time, the young man was able to read his movements and seal his offense swiftly.

Not only so, the worst thing was that... the other party was still using the exact same move!

That move was the most basic sword art of the Zhang Clan swordsmanship, and it was known as the Probing Sword.

Just as the name suggested, the purpose of this was to probe the other party's moves and gauge the depth of the other party's strength before launching a decisive counterattack at the critical moment...

Yet, using such a basic move, the young man had actually managed to seal off his offense twice. Just how deep was his mastery in swordsmanship?

"I don't believe this!"

Sword Saint Xing knew that his wrist would be sliced right off if he forcefully pushed on with his current assault, so he took half a step back and flicked his sword once more. In an instant, innumerable cold glints flashed across Zhang Xuan's eyes, reminiscent of the countless stars in the sky, and they darted right for Zhang Xuan's eyes.

Falling Sword of Starry Sky!

This was a sword art that had taken him three years to create. It still was not his strongest move, but it was at least two times stronger than the Dragon Slaying Sword that he had executed previously.

This move consisted of countless pierces from differing directions, which made it extremely difficult to deal with. On top of that, it also had a beguiling effect on one's mind and soul.

The first time that he had executed it, even Sword Saint Meng had suffered a bit under its incredible prowess.

Since his first two moves had been foiled, Sword Saint Xing had no intention of holding back anymore.

As soon as the attack was executed, Zhang Xuan felt as if he was standing amid countless stars. His surroundings seemed to have emptied out, and it felt as if he was standing in the midst of a void devoid of the concepts of time and space. In such a state, it was difficult for him to even perceive his directions clearly, let alone determine where the attacks were coming from.

To make an analogy, it was similar to how a celestial body looked the exact same no matter how fast it was approaching one, making it hard to gauge its exact distance away from one using one's eyes.

This was currently the kind of attack that Zhang Xuan was facing. In the face of the sword art, he found himself unable to accurately perceive how far he was from the sword pierces, and that was something extremely dangerous in battle.

“Teacher...”

Zheng Yang grasped onto his spear tightly as cold sweat trickled down his body.

Even he could not say for sure if he would be able to overcome that sword with his current strength. Would his teacher be in danger then?

Before the many anxious gazes centered on him, Zhang Xuan finally moved. No different from his previous movements, he executed another Probing Sword right toward Sword Saint Xing.

Huala!

The sword qi flew forth, but just when it was some distance from reaching its target, it suddenly seemed to have struck something.

Following which, all of the stars collapsed, and the phenomenon that the sword art had created vanished without a trace.

Deng deng deng deng!

Sword Saint Xing felt his blood churning furiously as he retreated eight steps, and his widened eyes stared intently at Zhang Xuan in disbelief and shock.

“The Probing Sword was actually able to overcome my Falling Sword of Starry Sky... How is this possible?”

While this move was not the strongest sword art that he had cultivated, its might was still not to be underestimated. He could not accept the fact that his Falling Sword of Starry Sky could actually be overcome by such a simple technique—it

was no different from a Mortal battle technique overpowering a Saint battle technique!

“Hehe!” Zhang Xuan chuckled softly. With the voice of a wise elder, he said, “The sword is the extension of one’s strength. As long as one is able to bring it to a certain point at a certain moment, it will be able to defeat any enemy. Sword arts are auxiliary maneuvers that serve to achieve that aim. The Probing Sword might be the simplest move in the Zhang Clan’s swordsmanship, but it’s precisely due to its simplicity that it’s flexible enough to be used in many unpredictable situations.

“In the hands of an expert, its strength can be truly fearsome. It’s similar to a drunkard holding a sword, hacking around randomly. There might not be any order of any sort to it, but it’s fearsome precisely because of its unpredictable nature. It’s impossible to fathom the intention of the attacker, along with when and where the next attack will land.

“Of course, just the randomness and unpredictability of one’s offense isn’t enough. The reason why a cultivator is able to curb an armed drunkard easily is due to the lack of purpose in his offense. Only when one could grasp the enemy’s intents and attack trajectory would one be able to launch attacks purposefully to curb the enemy’s offense!

“I have to admit that your Fallen Sword of Starry Sky is formidable. It locks onto its target’s mind, spirit, and psyche, making it difficult to escape from it. However, in order to lock onto the target’s mind, spirit, and psyche, there must be some kind of intermediary to establish a connection, and that intermediary is the very opening in your move. My counterattack was simple, but it accurately struck the intermediary.

“Given so, it’s inevitable that your sword art would collapse altogether! To make an analogy, this is similar to the concept of bringing down a fortress. It might seem impregnable on the surface, but as long as one strikes it at its crux, one can easily bring an entire fortress to the ground!

“Simplicity in one’s swordsmanship might not necessarily be a bad thing. If utilized well in the right manner, it can achieve spectacular results.”

At this point, Zhang Xuan turned to Sword Saint Xing and sighed deeply before saying, “Sword Saint Xing, it’s not that I want to lecture you, but you are overly obsessed with the form and movement of your sword, to the extent that you’ve lost sight of what swordsmanship truly is!”

“I...” Sword Saint Xing’s face reddened.

As one of the strongest sword practitioners in the world, he had actually ended up being lectured by a young man who could very well be his child. His face immediately burned bright red from embarrassment.

“There’s no need to be embarrassed by that. It’s already very rare for someone of our age to be able to come up with such a sword art and Sword Intent...” Zhang Xuan consoled with a smile.

“If you are willing to learn, I can offer you some pointers in your swordsmanship so that you can further your skills!”

# 1548 Admits Defeat

“Pfft!”

Hearing Zhang Xuan’s words, Sword Saint Meng began trembling uncontrollably, and eventually, she could not hold herself back and burst into hearty laughter.

As expected of her son, he sure was gutsy!

“Well said!” she shouted.

Her husband had grown too arrogant from being in a high position for too long. For some reason, she felt exceptionally refreshed to see him getting pummeled by their son.

“This...” Hearing Sword Saint Meng’s words, many of the 9-star master teachers and the experts of the Zhang Clan exchanged glances.

Just whose side was the matriarch of the Zhang Clan on?

Wei Ruyan, Wang Ying, and the others were dumbfounded as well. Despite seeing her husband getting pummeled and lectured, she was still able to cheer the other party on so happily.

Those of the Zhang Clan sure were peculiar!

“...”

Sword Saint Xing looked at his wife, who was laughing so hard that she seemed about to fall from the sky, before turning his sight to the young man, who was staring at him earnestly, and he suddenly felt so frustrated that he could spurt blood. His complexion was as poor as it could be.

Were it not for his cultured upbringing, he would have been hurling vulgarities at this moment.

“It just so happens that my mastery of swordsmanship surpasses yours a little, and I wish to trade some insights with you. There’s no need to get too nervous,” Zhang Xuan said.



“There’s no need for that!” Sword Saint Xing flung his sleeves and harrumphed. “We can trade insights after the duel is over. I still have another move here, and if you can block it, I’ll consider it your victory!”

Hu la!

Without waiting for the other party to respond, Sword Saint Xing harrumphed coldly and thrust his sword straight forward.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan shook his head and tapped his finger over once more.

It was still the same Probing Sword, but this time, his sword qi was much sharper than before. It pierced right through space as soon as it appeared, creating a pitch-black trail along the path of its movement.

“Is that... Dimension Severing Sword Qi?”

“To be able to cleave space with his sword qi... But that’s an ability that only the strongest Great Sages possess!”

“Isn’t he only in the Dimension Sundering realm? How is he that powerful?”

The expressions of all those present warped in shock.

This was especially so for Zhang Wuheng, You Ruoxin, and the others. Their faces had turned ghastly white in disbelief.

All along, they had attributed the damage that Zhang Xuan had caused due to his ability to command lightning tribulation. His strength should have been nothing of concern to them at all. When in the world did he become so powerful?

Had they known in advance, they would have simply left the matter be instead of causing such a huge fuss only to embarrass themselves!

“T-this...” Ren Qingyuan also widened his eyes in horror.

If he had known that Zhang Xuan was such a powerful master teacher, he never would have issued an arrest warrant on him.

Just the ability to pull off Dimension Severing Sword Qi meant that the strength that Zhang Xuan wielded was already comparable to the grand elders, and even as the deputy

pavilion master, he had no right to deal with a master teacher of that caliber.

It's no wonder he was able to groom so many formidable students... Ren Qingyuan swallowed a mouthful of saliva as he turned his gaze to Zheng Yang and the others.

However, he swiftly noticed something peculiar among the group of students. There was completely no sign of surprise on their faces, as if Zhang Xuan's abrupt power growth was perfectly normal.

It was almost as if they felt that it was only a given for Zhang Xuan to be that powerful!

Monsters... Those are really a bunch of monsters... Ren Qingyuan thought as his body shuddered in fear.

Huala!

Before everyone's shocked gaze, Zhang Xuan's sword qi finally arrived before Sword Saint Xing.

Sword Saint Xing did not seem to be intending to go down without a fight either. He flicked his sword, and with a silver streak of light, it flew right for Zhang Xuan's throat.

"Three Swords of the Grim Reaper!" Upon seeing that move, Sword Saint Meng widened her eyes in horror.

The Three Swords of the Grim Reaper was the ultimate technique that she and Sword Saint Xing had cultivated for many years in order to serve as their ultimate trump card, only to free themselves from the direst of situations. So far, they had not been cornered to the point where they had to use it, but to think that its first use would actually be on their son!

Sword Saint Meng immediately whipped out her sword and prepared to dash forward to save her son. However, at that moment, she saw a smile creeping onto the edges of the young man's lips, and he calmly opened his mouth to speak.

"Stop!"

Huala!

Everything in the surroundings seemed to come to a halt along with his word. The incomparably sharp sword that Sword Saint Xing was dragging toward Zhang Xuan's neck abruptly froze in midair, as if a fish frozen within a block of ice.

“Go!”

With another calm word, the sword qi gathered at Zhang Xuan's fingertip shot outward, and the Three Swords of the Grim Reaper immediately unraveled. At the same time, Sword Saint Xing sustained a heavy blow, and he was forced to retreat several steps.

“Y-y-you... Was that Dimension Sealing Diction?” Sword Saint Xing widened his eyes in shock as his body trembled in fear.

Only a demonic tunist who had refined their art to the level of an Ancient Sage should be able to wield the ability to seal space at their word. No one in the Demonic Tunist Guild had achieved it in countless millenniums, yet Zhang Xuan had actually managed to pull it off. How could that be possible?

“That isn't exactly Dimension Sealing Diction. It just happens that your state of mind is a little weak, so I'm able to easily influence you with my words and force you to stop driving your zhenqi!” Zhang Xuan said.

He might have wielded powers invincible beneath Ancient Sage after taming the Pavilion Master Seal, but it was still beyond his means to execute the demonic tunist's Dimension Sealing Diction.

The reason he could get the other party to stop was through his Impartation of Heaven's Will, augmented by his exceptionally high Soul Depth and Heart of Teacher, thus compelling Sword Saint Xing to follow his bidding without any questions asked!

In truth, even if he did not use this move, given his current strength, he would still have been able to defeat Sword Saint Xing with ease. However, this was the method that would bring the most shock to the crowd, and knowing that there was a limit to the duration of the droplet of power, this was what he needed as well.

“Incredible! Incredible!” Sword Saint Xing pondered for a moment before making sense of what had happened.

His eyes glowed in agitation as he turned his gaze to the young man. The fury in his eyes had subsided, and replacing it was pride and delight instead.

A huge commotion had occurred when his son was born, and that was more than enough to tell anyone of the extraordinary fate that had lain ahead of his son. However, several unfortunate events had occurred afterward, and he had thought that his son’s talents would forever be buried in the dust, never to shine brightly.

Who would have thought that when they met once more, his son would be stronger and more talented than he had expected?

There’s no need to test him out anymore, he’s definitely my son! Only my son could wield such capabilities and means...

This thought sent surges of exhilaration through Sword Saint Xing’s veins, and he began laughing heartily. When he finally calmed down once more, he looked at Zhang Xuan and said, “Since you were able to overcome even my strongest Three Swords of the Grim Reaper, I’ll admit defeat!”

“You’re going to admit defeat?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

Going by previous scripts, the opponent should have continued provoking him out of concern for their dignity and reputation, all the way till they were severely wounded and incapacitated. He did not think that Sword Saint Xing would give up so easily.

This was a matter that concerned the entire Zhang Clan, but Sword Saint Xing was still able to remain rational and not allow the weight of his responsibility to blind himself. This gave Zhang Xuan a very favorable impression of him.

“I would only embarrass myself further at this point. Since that’s the case, I might as well admit defeat!” Sword Saint Xing laughed.

As one of top sword practitioners on the Master Teacher Continent, his pride would not allow him to lose to others.

However, if it was his own son, he would be more than delighted to do so.

“But clan head...”

By the side, Zhang Wuheng did not expect such an outcome, and a look of panic surfaced on his face.

Sword Saint Xing’s admittance of defeat meant that not only would the Zhang Clan have to drop all charges against the young man, it would even have to apologize to him! As the number one Sage Clan with a heritage that could be traced back many millenniums, it had never suffered such humiliation before!

“I know what you want to say, but my decision is the clan’s decision. Nothing you say will change anything!” Sword Saint Xing waved his hand to stop the First Elder from speaking anymore.

After which, he turned his sight back to Zhang Xuan and hesitated for a moment before switching over to zhenqi telepathy. “Zhang shi, there’s something that I would like to ask you!”

“Sword Saint Xing, feel free to ask. If it’s something I can speak of, I’ll answer your doubts!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

To be willing to take the initiative to admit defeat and even shoot down Zhang Wuheng’s words... Zhang Xuan’s impression of him was getting more and more favorable.

“It’s like this...” Sword Saint Xing stared at him with a slightly awkward and nervous look as he asked, “Is there... a scarlet birthmark on your bottom?”

# 1549 Zhang Xuan Is My Son!

“Birthmark? On my bottom?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

After transcending over to this world, he had washed his body innumerable times, and he had spent some time examining and learning his body before. Indeed, there was a scarlet birthmark on his bottom, but this should have been something that only he would know of. How would this middle-aged man before him know about it?

Zhang Xuan eyed the middle-aged man before him suspiciously.

Could he possess some ability similar to the Library of Heaven’s Path that would allow him to look at his opponent’s body?

But having a birthmark was not a flaw, so it would be impossible for the Library of Heaven’s Path to detect it! Moreover, he possessed the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, so if by any chance any seers tried to divine his body, they would not be able to find anything at all!

Thinking again, it was not that rare for a person to have a birthmark on the bottom either, right?

“You...” Zhang Xuan could not help but look at Sword Saint Xing doubtfully, uncomprehending of the intention behind his question.

Seeing the implicit admittance from Zhang Xuan, Sword Saint Xing’s heartbeat quickened, and with irrepressible agitation, he continued asking, “Is your birthday on the tenth day of the ninth month, Teacher Appreciation Day?”

“Birthday?” Zhang Xuan shook his head in response. “I am an orphan, so I’m afraid I don’t really know when my birthday is.”

His previous self had been wandering in the world as far as he could remember. Nowhere in his recollections had his father, mother, or any clues to his birthday appeared. As such, the

only thing that Zhang Xuan knew was that he was twenty-something this year. Anything other than that was really beyond his knowledge.

“I’ll just be perfectly honest with you...” Noticing the confusion on the young man’s face deepening, Sword Saint Xing decided not to beat around the bush anymore and got straight to the point. “If I’m not mistaken, you are very likely to be my long-lost son!”

“Your son?” Zhang Xuan was stunned for a moment before a miniature explosion happened in his head. “By your son... are you referring to the young prodigy?”

Sword Saint Xing was not only the head of the Zhang Clan but also the father of the young prodigy. As far as he knew, Sword Saint Xing seemed to have only a single son, so the other party’s words would mean that... he was the young prodigy.

Zhang Xuan’s mind was immediately plunged into chaos.

For the past few months, he had been cursing the young prodigy for being engaged to Luo Ruoxin and yet never being around for her, and if he could, he would have already pummeled him into the ground several times by now. Never had he thought that... the young prodigy would actually be him!

“No, that’s not right. I’ve checked for the presence of the Zhang Clan bloodline in me as well, but it has been shown that there’s no relationship between me and the Zhang Clan!” Zhang Xuan swiftly raised his rebuttal.

He had once wondered if he was from the Zhang Clan as well, and for that, he had even ‘borrowed’ Zhang Jiuxiao’s blood essence to conduct a blood test. The result from that test showed that there was absolutely no relationship between him and the Zhang Clan at all!

Taking a step back, even if that blood test was inaccurate, he did enter the Zhang Clan’s Blood Reservoir at one point in time, but he did not feel the slightest resonance with it at all. All of the clues went to show that there was no relationship

between him and the Zhang Clan. So, how could Sword Saint Xing possibly be his father?

“The matter concerning your Zhang Clan bloodline has serious implications, so I’ll explain it to you when we are in a more private setting. However, if you still harbor any doubts regarding the matter, you can verify your blood with my wife. Even if you have lost your Zhang Clan bloodline, your mother’s blood should still flow through your veins!” Sword Saint Xing said as he gestured for Sword Saint Meng to come over.

Sword Saint Meng could tell that the two men had been communicating telepathically with one another, so she swiftly flew over with an agitated look on her face.

Zhang Xuan hesitated for a moment before asking, “How do we conduct the test?”

Given Sword Saint Xing’s strength and standing, there was no need for him to cook up such a lie. Furthermore, to point out that there was a scarlet birthmark on his bottom, while that might not be conclusive evidence, it might be good to check it. Whether it was real or not, at least there would be some closure for him and the Xingmeng Sword Saints.

Otherwise, this matter would weigh on their minds.

If, by chance, he really happened to be the missing young prodigy, there would no longer be anyone to stop him from marrying Luo Ruoxin. Everything would fall into place, and it would be a happy ending.

Of course, it would be a little awkward for him to suddenly find himself with two parents, but perhaps because he had been an orphan in his previous life as well, he was not too put off by the notion of it. It would not be too difficult for him to accept the matter with time.

Even if that was not the case, it would not make any difference to his plans anyway. After the other party apologized to him, he would have nothing to do with the Zhang Clan anymore. The current him already wielded sufficient power and influence to stand against the Luo Clan and the Zhang Clan.



If they were not willing to budge, he would just have to force them. This was one matter that he simply was not willing to relent on.

“Give me a droplet of your blood!” Sword Saint Meng told Zhang Xuan telepathically.

Zhang Xuan tapped his finger forward, and a droplet of blood flew forth from his fingertip. Taking in a deep breath, Sword Saint Meng took out a jade token and carefully placed the blood droplet on it. After which, she made a small incision on her finger and squeezed out a droplet of blood on the jade token as well.

Weng!

As the two droplets of blood made contact with one another, they swiftly fused together. With a light buzzing sound, the jade token exuded a blinding crimson light.

“T-this...” Sword Saint Meng’s eyes immediately reddened, and her body trembled from agitation. “Your name is Zhang Xuan, right? My son, I have finally found you!”

“...” Zhang Xuan was still in a dumbfounded state. He turned his gaze toward the jade token to examine it closely.

He recognized the artifact—it was a tool used to test one’s bloodline. Those who had direct blood relations would not only have their blood droplets fusing together, the jade token would also emanate a blinding crimson light.

In other words... he had direct blood relations with Sword Saint Meng!

Could this mean that he was really the son of the Xingmeng Sword Saints?

So, he was the very same young prodigy whom he had hated with a passion.

Could this be the will of heavens? Not only was Yang shi, whom he had mentioned on a whim, a real person, even his fate with Luo Ruoxin was also predestined.

Sword Saint Xing was also stunned by the results before he took in a deep breath and burst into hearty laughter. “Hahaha,

we have finally found him!”

He had still been uncertain before this. After all, what were the odds of finding the son whom they had lost many years back amid the massive Master Teacher Continent? However, seeing the two droplets of blood fusing perfectly with one another, even this final sliver of doubt vanished from the bottom of his heart.

After the two men were done fighting with one another, they had begun communicating telepathically with one another. Then, all of a sudden, everyone had become agitated at once. Unable to take the suspense any longer, Ren Qingyuan hurriedly asked, “Sword Saint Xing, what’s wrong?”

“Pavilion Master Ren, our Zhang Clan shall drop all enmity with Zhang Xuan! We’ll no longer pursue the previous matters... Also, I hope that the Master Teacher Pavilion will sell our Zhang Clan a favor and retract the arrest warrant!” Sword Saint Xing clasped his fist.

“You want us to retract the arrest warrant? This...” Ren Qingyuan could hardly believe what he was hearing.

Previously, it was the Zhang Clan who had stirred the pot the most violently. Why would they suddenly drop the matter and even request him to retract the arrest warrant?

“Once the Master Teacher Pavilion issues an arrest warrant, it cannot be retracted easily, unless... there are some kind of unique circumstances. What has happened?” Ren Qingyuan asked once more.

If the Master Teacher Pavilion issued and retracted its arrest warrant lightly, that would be as good as undermining the authority of its words.

Even if they wanted to retract it, they would have to find a valid reason to do so!

It was not so cheap as to be retracted after the two of them fought a battle and decided to make peace!

“Zhang Xuan is the missing young prodigy of my Zhang Clan! We have just verified it with a blood test, so there’s no mistake about it!” Sword Saint Xing said.

“Our teacher is... the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan?”

Zheng Yang and the others stared at one another in shock.

They had followed their teacher ever since their time in the Tianxuan Kingdom, and they were painfully aware just how poor their teacher was. He had slowly paved his way forward with his own strength, having no one to rely on at all. How in the world did he become one of the core members of the Zhang Clan within such a short period of time?

Not to mention, the legendary figure who was born as a Connate Saint, the young prodigy!

With an incredulous look on his face, Zhang Wuheng roared in disbelief, “That’s impossible! I tested his bloodline, and he definitely has no relationship with the Zhang Clan at all!”

“Zhang Wuheng, are you insinuating that I can’t even recognize my own son?” Sword Saint Xing harrumphed coldly. “As the First Elder of the Zhang Clan, you actually tried to assassinate and issued an arrest warrant on your own clan head... Return to the clan right now and await your punishment! Don’t force me to make a move!”

“I...” Zhang Wuheng staggered weakly on the spot, and his face became ghastly pale.

If Zhang Xuan was truly the young prodigy, that would mean that he was the real clan head of the Zhang Clan! Even as the First Elder, the crime for attempting to kill the head of the Zhang Clan was more than enough to put him to death multiple times!

“He’s your son?” Ren Qingyuan widened his eyes in disbelief as well.

He had run a check on Zhang Xuan’s background before issuing the arrest warrant, and it was stated that the young man was an orphan from the Tianxuan Kingdom, having no background at all. Yet, in the blink of an eye, they were actually telling him that he was the head of the Zhang Clan.

If that was true, the Zhang Clan was perfectly justified in requesting for the retracting of the arrest warrant!

# 1550 Sword Saint Meng's Temper

“Indeed, there’s no mistake about this!” Sword Saint Xing roared in laughter, his delight showing clearly on his face.

Ever since his son disappeared, they had traveled far and wide in search of him. The past twenty years had not been easy for them at all; they had lived in trepidation, uncertain of the fate of their child. It was fortunate that the heavens had not abandoned them yet—they had managed to find their child in the end!

Furthermore, not only had their child managed to grow to become an outstanding individual wielding power stronger than them, the students that he had groomed had also become powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent. With such a son, what more could they wish more for?

All of a sudden, they felt as if they were the most blissful people in the world.

Ren Qingyuan pondered for a moment before replying. “Since your Zhang Clan has decided to make peace with Zhang Xuan, and he’s the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan as well, it would indeed be illogical for the Zhang Clan to continue pursuing this matter... If the other two powers are willing to settle this matter peacefully, I have no qualms with retracting the arrest warrant!”

Were it anyone else, even if both parties had decided to settle the matter peacefully, the Master Teacher Pavilion would surely have made him pay a hefty price. However... the five students that Zhang Xuan had raised were the head of the Poison Hall, an expert of the soul oracles, the future hall master of the Combat Master Hall, the young master of the Yuan Clan, and the head of the Spirit Awakener Guild... and now, it had even been revealed that Zhang Xuan himself was the head of the Zhang Clan.

Even the Master Teacher Pavilion would find it difficult to punish such a person!

Before they could even lay a finger on him, more than a dozen 9-star master teachers of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had already been incapacitated. If they insisted on dealing with Zhang Xuan, even if they won the war, the Master Teacher Pavilion would surely be in shambles afterward!

By requesting for the arrest warrant to be retracted, Sword Saint Xing had effectively provided a platform for the Master Teacher Pavilion to back out of this mess without suffering a heavy hit to its reputation. Naturally, there was no reason for him not to grab this opportunity.

“Simple!” Chuckling softly, Sword Saint Xing turned to You Ruoxin and said, “Elder Ruo, we were once sparring partners, and I already consider you an old acquaintance of mine. Will you be willing to sell me this favor and let this matter go? I’ll surely pay you a visit in the future and compensate the Glacier Plain Court’s loss!”

“Sword Saint Xing, this is no longer a matter about compensating our loss anymore but our dignity!” You Ruoxin harrumphed furiously. “So what if he’s the young prodigy of the Glacier Plain Court? He has destroyed the many millenniums of heritage of our Glacier Plain Court and kidnapped our young court chief! The grudge between the Glacier Plain Court and him is already irreconcilable!”

With the severe damage that it had suffered this time around, along with the loss of its future court chief, it was only a matter of time before the Glacier Plain Court was reduced to a third tier power.

A power that had enjoyed many millenniums of glory had ended up falling so far in her hands...

The greatest pride in her life was when she had been chosen to become the First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court. She had become a celebrated figure on the Master Teacher Continent, respected wherever she went. However, beneath this glorious exterior, she knew that she had to shoulder the hopes and

dreams of everyone in the Glacier Plain Court. Thus, she had vowed solemnly to bring the Glacier Plain Court to a height that it had never seen before, and she viewed it as her purpose in life.

But that day, when everything had been destroyed by lightning, her hopes and dreams had been utterly crushed, and all that was left was raging fury for the culprit behind it.

As such, even though she knew that the winds were no longer in her favor, her anger and indignation still bit tightly into her rational mind, not allowing her to let this matter go.

Seeing the infuriated state that You Ruoxin was in, Sword Saint Xing was just about to placate her when another wrathful voice sounded.

“So what if it’s irreconcilable? Are you planning to make a move on my son? Just try touching a strand of his hair, and I’ll make sure the entire City of Glacier is dyed crimson. My son might have been kind enough to only destroy your buildings, but I won’t be as compassionate as him! If you don’t back down here, you can rest assured that there won’t be a tomorrow for your Glacier Plain Court!”

The one who had just spoken was Sword Saint Meng.

She had just been rejoicing over the fact that her son was still alive when You Ruoxin suddenly uttered such words. Seeing that there was someone threatening the life of her son, how could she possibly remain calm?

It was only in view of the pathetic state the Glacier Plain Court was in that she chose to let them off despite their attempts to kill her son. Yet, who could have thought that they would still be so unrelenting on this matter?

Why? Do you think that my son is a pushover or that I’m a pushover?

“I know that I’m no match for Sword Saint Meng, and if you wish to massacre our Glacier Plain Court, there’s nothing I can do to stop you. But justice is in the hearts of every single one of us here. The Zhang Clan might be powerful, but the world

won't turn a blind eye to you abusing your power in such a manner!" You Ruoxin gritted her teeth.

"Sure, let the world look with their eyes wide open as I massacre your Glacier Plain Court!" Seeing how You Ruoxin was still trying to play the role of a victim after what she had done, Sword Saint Meng flew into a state of rage.

In this moment, she was not in any mood to catch up with Zhang Xuan anymore. She raised the sword in her hand up high, ready to make a move on You Ruoxin.

Seeing his wife flying into a fit of anger, Sword Saint Xing was shocked. He hurriedly rushed ahead to stop her. "Dear, calm down! Calm down!"

You Ruoxin might not pose any threat to them at all, but she represented the entire Glacier Plain Court. If she was killed right before Ren Qingyuan and the others, not even the Zhang Clan would be able to resolve this matter easily.

"Are you still a man? Someone is bullying your son! It's one thing for you to not stand up for him, but you are even stopping me too?" Sword Saint Meng's eyebrows shot up in fury.

"I..." Sword Saint Xing's face turned bitter. "Look, aren't I trying to mediate the situation here?"

"If mediation works, why the hell would we still need to cultivate?" Sword Saint Xing flung her sleeves furiously. "If she doesn't agree to it, we just have to beat her into submission! I, Wang Mengya, have dominated the continent for so many years, and I can tell you that my fist and my sword have won others over, not my virtue! If anyone dares oppose me, I'll just have to beat them till they cave in!"

"This..." Sword Saint Xing's eyebrows twitched uncontrollably, not knowing how to respond to that.

He knew his wife's character very well; in fact, her hotheaded temper had thrown the Zhang Clan into disarray on multiple occasions in the past too. If You Ruoxin continued pursuing this matter, there was no doubt that his wife would really wipe out the entire Glacier Plain Court!

“Our teacher’s mother sure is formidable...”

Zheng Yang and the others gulped as they watched the sight with widened eyes.

To threaten to even destroy the entire Glacier Plain Court... It was no wonder their teacher was never on the losing end of things! With such domineering genes in his body, it was a given that those who intended him harm would end up paying the price instead!

Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows twitched slightly upon hearing those words as well.

To be honest, he had still been a bit skeptical about the sudden appearance of his father and mother. He had never experienced any familial relationships before, be it in his current life or the previous one, so he had no idea how it would be. However, watching at Sword Saint Meng stepping forward domineeringly to protect him, he suddenly felt that it might not be that bad after all.

“Sword Saint Meng, please calm down. Fighting will not resolve anything here...” Ren Qingyuan stepped in to defuse the situation.

“Hah! Ren Qingyuan, you still have the cheek to say those words!” Sword Saint Meng immediately turned her head over and glared daggers at Ren Qingyuan. “Since you know that fighting won’t resolve anything, why did you bring so many 9-star master teachers here to encircle my son? Is it because he looks weak to you? Since you want to speak up on You Ruoxin’s behalf, why don’t you take her place instead then? I haven’t settled the score with you for making a move on my son yet!”

“Cough cough... Carry on, carry on. Treat it as if I never said anything...” Ren Qingyuan’s hair stood on end upon hearing those words.

Sword Saint Meng was like a bucket of oil, triggering at the slightest spark. Her character had already been so back in her younger years. Back when she was still a student at the Sanctum of Sages, she had caused many uproars among the



student populace, and when the elders lectured her for it, she simply told them that she would quit the Sanctum of Sages and stomped out without any hesitation. Many had thought that she would tone down after marrying and having her own child, but who could have thought that not even time or motherhood could calm her temper!

And if it was only Sword Saint Meng, Ren Qingyuan still would not have been that fearful. The problem lay in Sword Saint Xing... If the two of them collaborated together, he really would not stand much of a chance!

As the head of the Zhang Clan, Sword Saint Xing was an intelligent and rational person who knew what to do and what not to do in a situation, but when it came to matters concerning his wife, his rationality would be blown away like a straw hut in the face of a hurricane. There was no one among the upper echelon of the Master Teacher Continent who did not know how doting he was of his wife, and if anyone dared hurt her, he would immediately go berserk!

Back then, while they were roaming the continent, there had been an elder from a minor power who was foolish enough to insult Sword Saint Meng. Without any hesitation, Sword Saint Xing had flown right over to his sect and wiped it out entirely!

In any case, it would be best to avoid provoking this couple as much as possible.

“Sword Saint Meng, I know that you are strong, but our Glacier Plain Court won’t back down! Unless you kill every single last one of us, there’s no way we’ll let this matter go!” You Ruoxin spat as she looked at Sword Saint Meng with deep resolve.

She knew that her deeds would earn the ire of the young court chief, and she would suffer the consequences for her actions once the court chief fully awakened her Pure Yin Body, but as long as the Glacier Plain Court could rise to the top, her sacrifice would have paid off.

However, Zhang Xuan had reduced the Glacier Plain Court to rubble and kidnapped the young court chief, dashing every last

hope that she had. Her desire for vengeance had already exceeded her fear for anything.

Even at the cost of her life, she was determined to bring Zhang Xuan down!

“Very well, let me see how deep your resolve runs!” Seeing that You Ruoxin was still obstinately holding on, Sword Saint Meng raised her sword high in the sky.

But in that moment, a cold voice suddenly echoed in the air.

“Sword Saint Meng, please calm down. Allow me to settle this matter instead...”

Hong long!

As soon as those words were spoken, the cocoon-like object in front of Zhang Xuan suddenly emanated an astounding aura that pierced straight through the clouds, seemingly tearing the heavens apart.

Zhao Ya’s meridian reconstruction was complete!

# 1551 The True Sanctum

## Head 1

“Y-young court chief!”

Upon hearing that voice, You Ruoxin’s eyes narrowed in shock. She quickly turned her gaze over, only to see the cocoon blasting apart layer after layer. At the same time, the Otherworldly Demon aura that was emanated a moment ago swiftly transformed into a pure yin aura, and it felt as if everything within tens of thousands of li would be turned into ice under the aura.

Hu!

A slender figure burst forth from the cocoon and rose into the air. The surrounding spiritual energy swiftly surged toward her, forming a huge vortex with her at its center. At the same time, the water vapor in the air formed into a glistening icy robe around her, emanating a bone-freezing chill.

“That is... the perfect awakening of the Pure Yin Body?” You Ruoxin’s body stiffened in astonishment.

While the preceding court chiefs had managed to awaken their Pure Yin Bodies, most of them had still been far from achieving a perfect awakening.

There was a legend in the Glacier Plain Court that if one achieved a perfect awakening of the Pure Yin Body, one would be able bring frost to over ten thousand li with just a wave of one’s hand. It would not pale in comparison even against the Innate Poison Body; if anything, its prowess might exceed it even!

Even the founder of the Glacier Plain Court had failed to achieve this level, only barely managing to awaken it through the reconciliation of yin and yang. Who could have thought that Zhao Ya would actually successfully awaken it!

Did her meridians not collapse completely, causing her cultivation to be destroyed?

What in the world happened?

“It’s our First Senior!”

Zheng Yang and the others clenched their fists in agitation.

“Not bad...” Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

Using the new meridian network to reconstruct Zhao Ya’s meridians was a risky move, but it had paid off. Not only had her cultivation been restored, her Pure Yin Body had also been fully awakened. With this, she would be able to push her cultivation up to an unfathomable level.

It was fortunate that his effort had not been in vain.

“It’s me!”

As the vortex of spiritual energy vanished, the young lady’s figure appeared before everyone’s eyes. She wore a robe made purely out of white snow, and the cold air in the surroundings seemed to bend to her will, as if she was the overlord of ice.

You Ruoxin watched the imposing figure in a daze for a moment before hurriedly falling to her knees. “You Ruoxin pays respect to the new court chief of the Glacier Plain Court...”

With the complete awakening of her Pure Yin Body, Zhao Ya would be officially viewed as the court chief of the Glacier Plain Court. This was the rule that had been passed down by the ancestors.

Not to mention, Zhao Ya had even achieved a perfect awakening! With this, there was no longer anyone in the Glacier Plain Court—and this was including the wills of the preceding court chiefs—who would dare oppose her!

“Very well, it seems like you still recognize me as your court chief. Right now, I shall make my decree!” With her hands behind her back, Zhao Ya gazed down coldly on You Ruoxin. “From this day forth, my teacher, Zhang Xuan, will be the greatest benefactor of the Glacier Plain Court. Any disciples of the Glacier Plain Court must accord him with the respect

toward a teacher. Should anyone fail to abide by this decree, she shall be expelled from the Glacier Plain Court and executed upon sight!”

“Yes, court chief!” You Ruoxin replied with a forceful yet slightly quivering voice.

“My teacher has devoted his time and effort in order to awaken my unique constitution, but you abused your authority and influence to frame him for sins that he hasn’t committed, compelling the Master Teacher Pavilion to issue an arrest warrant on him. I hereby order for You Ruoxin to be imprisoned in the Chanting Serenity Hall, and she’s not to leave the compounds without my command!” Zhao Ya spat coldly.

“Also, you are to release my mother and return her freedom!”

Her mother had been imprisoned by the First Elder for willfully escaping from the Glacier Plain Court. Now that she had become the court chief and wielded unparalleled authority, it went without saying that the first thing that she should do was have her released!

“Yes, court chief!” You Ruoxin hurriedly nodded.

“Very well, go on and execute my orders!” Zhao Ya waved her hand authoritatively.

You Ruoxin might have been hostile to her and her mother previously, but her loyalty to the Glacier Plain Court was unquestionable. Zhao Ya had no doubt that You Ruoxin would abide by her commands now that she had become the court chief.

Thus, she turned her sight to Ren Qingyuan and said, “Pavilion Master Ren, I believe that you should have heard my decree as well. Zhang Xuan is my teacher and my benefactor, and the Glacier Plain Court will do everything within its means to protect him, even if it means going against the Master Teacher Pavilion. I ask of you to reconsider your options!”

“This...” Ren Qingyuan’s eyebrows shot up.

Who could have thought that the court chief of the Glacier Plain Court would actually become his student too?

The Glacier Plain Court, the Poison Hall, the Zhang Clan, the Spirit Awakener Hall, the Combat Master Hall, the Yuan Clan... Those were behemoths that could send tremors running through the Master Teacher Continent just with a stomp of their feet, and yet, they had all bowed to the command of a single man.

“Zhan shi...” Sighing helplessly, Ren Qingyuan turned his sight to the deputy sanctum head of the Sanctum of Sages and asked, “The Glacier Plain Court and the Zhang Clan have already expressed their intentions to reconcile with Zhang shi. May I ask what the stance of your Sanctum of Sages is?”

“I...” Zhan shi lowered his gaze in a dilemma.

This was really a difficult position for him to be in.

The Sanctum of Sages was indubitably weaker than both the Glacier Plain Court and the Zhang Clan, but it still had to uphold its long legacy as the number one academy where countless powerhouses had originated from. Considering the devastation that had occurred to it, if they let the matter go so simply, what right would they have to serve as the teachers of the geniuses of the world?

More importantly, he would not be able to face those injured elders back in the sanctum either!

“If I drop the matter at this, the preceding generations of sanctum heads will never forgive me... So, I can only stake my life in the end. Even if I die from this, at the very least, I won’t have let the ancestors down!” Zhan shi said resolutely.

He could chicken out, but the Sanctum of Sages could not!

If others learned that the Sanctum of Sages had bowed down to another person, even if the other party was the head of the Zhang Clan and had many formidable experts, what authority would it have left?

“This...” Knowing Zhan shi’s thoughts, Ren Qingyuan also did not know what he could say to dissuade the other party.

Zhang Xuan was a student of the Sanctum of Sages, yet he had refused to abide by its orders and even injured the elders and the deputy sanctum head, not to mention that he had destroyed many buildings. If they let this matter go just like that, the Sanctum of Sages would really lose its dignity!

“Given that even Sword Saint Xing isn’t your match, there’s no way that I’ll be able to defeat you either.” Zhan shi flew into the air and declared resoundingly, “Zhang shi, I have brought the Deputy Sanctum Head Token here, and as long as you withstand its attack, the Sanctum of Sages will let this matter go!”

“Deputy Sanctum Head Token?”

“That’s right,” Zhan shi said. “This token represents my identity, and it harnesses the wills of the predecessors. It’s one of the Guardian Artifacts of the Sanctum of Sages, which only generations of deputy sanctum heads are qualified to wield. I wouldn’t be a match for you given my limited cultivation, but through the Deputy Sanctum Head Token, I will still be able to put up a fight against you. If you are able to withstand my strength even then, it can only mean that you are already beyond the Sanctum of Sages’ current means to deal with, and there will be no purpose in it pursuing this matter any longer!”

Zhan shi did not think that it was too likely that he would be able to defeat Zhang Xuan even with the Deputy Sanctum Head Token, but this was something that had to be done in order to make the Sanctum of Sages’ stance clear.

If he was still unable to defeat Zhang Xuan with the strength of the Deputy Sanctum Head, that would mean that even the predecessors were unable to defeat him. It would show that while the Sanctum of Sages had no choice but to back down due to its lack of strength, by no means had it grown cowardly or lost its dignity!

“Alright!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

He was currently invincible against all beneath Ancient Sage, so no matter how powerful the Deputy Sanctum Head Token was, he was confident that he would be able to withstand it with ease.

“Good.”

Zhan shi tapped his finger forward, and a token emanating a faint violet glow appeared before him.

Zhan shi bit his finger, and a droplet of blood fell on it. In an instant, the token turned burningly hot, and a powerful, formidable aura burst forth from it.

Countless experts had risen from the Sanctum of Sages over its many years of history, and it was with their wills that the Deputy Sanctum Head Token was created. While it came nowhere close to matching up to the real Sanctum Head Token, its power was not to be underestimated.

Noticing the hint of the anxiety of Sword Saint Meng’s face, Sword Saint Xing grabbed her hand and squeezed it tightly. “Rest assured, given that even I am no match for him, he should be fine...”

“Go!”

Boom!

Under Zhan shi’s control, the Deputy Sanctum Head Token released a light buzz, and unbelievable burst of energy shot forth from it. Even before reaching its target, the space in its path was already crumbling inch after inch.



# 1552 The True Sanctum

## Head 2

“Not bad!”

In face of the immense pressure exerted by the Deputy Sanctum Head Token, Zhang Xuan did not panic in the least. Instead, with a light smile, he raised his finger in preparation to deal with the attack before him.

In this moment, he had already fully reconstructed Zhao Ya’s meridians, so there was no longer any need for him to remain seated on the ground. Straightening his back, he swiftly drove the energy within his body, intending to seal off the space ahead of him to seal the advancement of the Deputy Sanctum Head Token. However, before he could do so, his eyes suddenly narrowed, and his body stiffened in horror.

“Cr\*p...” he muttered.

Following that, he felt strength receding from his body like an ebbing tide, vanishing in an instant. At the same time, his spirit also seemed to have been sapped from his body, and he nearly collapsed to the ground.

At this crucial moment, the power that he had gained from the Pavilion Master Seal actually vanished!

Could this be what Kong shi wanted to say previously, that the power only lasts ten minutes? Zhang Xuan nearly burst into tears on the spot.

The unreliable Kong shi had vanished without explaining the use of the Pavilion Master Seal, and it was the first time that he had used it as well. He had thought that he would still have enough time in order to overcome the current crisis, but who could have thought that he would only have a short ten minutes!

It would have been perfectly simple for him to deal with this attack when he was infused with the strength from the Pavilion

Master Seal, but now that it had disappeared, as a Dimension Sundering realm primary stage cultivator, he might just end up being squashed into meat paste!

Boom!

Such thoughts swiftly flashed across his mind before vanishing. By this point, the token had already arrived right before him.

Geji Geji!

Even under the pressure of the token, he could already feel his bones creaking in protest, and his head was squeezed to the point that it seemed almost as if it would burst at any moment. Any more than that, and he would really be exceeding the limits of his body.

It looks like I can only try to escape...

Knowing that the current him did not wield the strength to overcome the Deputy Sanctum Head Token, Zhang Xuan took a deep breath and prepared to flee.

However, as he was about to do so, a brilliant light suddenly glowed from his body, and following which, the imposing token charging at him in the sky started vibrating intensely.

Padah!

It fell to the floor and lay down on the ground, not daring to raise itself in the slightest, almost as if a servant paying respects to its master.

“This...” Zhang Xuan was struck dumb for a moment before discreetly heaving a sigh of relief.

The close shave with death earlier had already left his back drenched with sweat.

While he was still trying to make sense of the situation that had just happened, in the sky, Zhan shi narrowed his eyes in shock after seeing what had happened, and his face immediately turned utterly pale.

Despite not exerting the slightest strength, he was still able to force the Deputy Sanctum Head Token to bow subserviently to

him... There is only one possibility for such an occurrence—the Deputy Sanctum Head Token has viewed Zhang Xuan to be a person more esteemed than me and dares not make a move on him! However, the Deputy Sanctum Head Token harnesses the wills of countless experts, and to make them bow so deferentially... could it be that... But how could that be possible? Isn't it Feng Ziyi? How could it be him?

Zhan shi shook his head vehemently in disbelief.

There was only one thing in the world that could make the Deputy Sanctum Head Token submit completely, and that was the Sanctum Head Token!

While they had learned that Sage Kui had chosen a new sanctum head candidate recently, they had always thought that the person was Feng Ziyi. Yet, contrary to their expectations, it turned out to be Zhang Xuan instead!

After all the mess and damage that you have caused to the Sanctum of Sages... After making an enemy out of the entire Sanctum of Sages... Are you seriously telling me now that you are actually the sanctum head?

This massive shock left him feeling as if he would explode on the spot.

Since you are the sanctum head, the entire Sanctum of Sages is yours... Why did you cause such a huge fuss then?

How is this different from destroying your own home?

In his moment of distress, Zhan shi turned his head and saw Zhang Wuheng, and all of a sudden, he felt much better.

Indeed, no matter how vicious Zhang Xuan had been with the Sanctum of Sages, at the very least, it was not as bad as with the Zhang Clan. The fellow would go to the extent of destroying his real home, let alone the Sanctum of Sages!

The dismal Zhan shi could not take it any longer and sent a telepathic message over. "Zhang shi, you are the sanctum head..."

"Yeah." Zhang Xuan nodded.

After receiving the Sanctum Head Token, Sage Kui had warned him not to tell anyone of his identity until the three seals had been deciphered. However, in this case, it was Zhan shi who had guessed the truth himself, so it could not be considered a breach of the rules.

This was just like how Yang shi had guessed it back then on himself as well.

“As expected...” Hearing the confirmation, Zhan shi’s body staggered weakly.

For a deputy sanctum head to actually issue an arrest warrant on the real sanctum head... that was truly a count of insubordination!

It was fortunate that Zhang Xuan had managed to get away then! Otherwise, if he had really killed the sanctum head, he would have become a great sinner!

Seeing that there was a lack of movement from Zhan shi after the Deputy Sanctum Head Token fell to the ground, Ren Qingyuan turned his gaze over and asked, “Zhan shi, are you admitting defeat?”

While the Deputy Sanctum Head Token had been launched with astounding force, it had fallen to the ground before it even reached Zhang Xuan. In the eyes of the outsiders, it appeared as if Zhan shi was intentionally going easy on him.

“I admit defeat!” Zhan shi hurriedly nodded.

“You said earlier that your grudge with him is irreconcilable, and yet, you went easy on him as soon as the battle started. Aren’t you taking this matter too lightly? Is that all there is to the dignity of your Sanctum of Sages?” Elder Qu sneered coldly by the side.

The Glacier Plain Court and the Zhang Clan had already submitted so far. He had thought that at least the Sanctum of Sages would push its case to the very end, but who could have thought that it would be the one most lacking in backbone!

“Elder Qu, this is an internal affair of our Sanctum of Sages. An outsider like you should hold your tongue and refrain from

interfering in our issues!” Zhan shi replied sharply before pocketing the Deputy Sanctum Head Token and backing away.

Then, he turned around to face the crowd from the Sanctum of Sages and declared, “From today onward, our Sanctum of Sages shall be under Zhang shi’s leadership. His words are the very decree of the Sanctum of Sages itself, and if anyone dares oppose him, that person will be banished from the Sanctum of Sages and never to be recruited again!”

His voice resounded across the entire city, carrying a firm resolve behind it.

“This...”

“Zhan shi, even if you choose to let him off, surely our Sanctum of Sages hasn’t lowered so much as to have to submit to a person like him!”

“Why? I can’t accept this decree!”

The elders who had followed Zhan shi there looked at one another, flabbergasted by what they had just heard.

Even if you can’t defeat Zhang shi, surely you didn’t have to make the entire Sanctum of Sages bow down to him, right?

This is illogical!

“Do you want to know the reason?” Zhan shi asked.

“Yes, I want to know! Without a convincing reason, there’s no way I can follow such an order!”

“Indeed! Even if our Sanctum of Sages isn’t a match for him, we still can’t bow to another man so easily, let alone someone like him!”

The elders of the Sanctum of Sages protested indignantly.

“Very well, I’ll tell you the reason then...” Hearing those words, Zhan shi shook his head. With a resounding voice, he revealed the truth. “Zhang Xuan is our new sanctum head!”

“Our new sanctum head?”

“W-what does that mean?”

Everyone was stupefied.

“It means exactly what it sounds like. He’s the sanctum head that Sage Kui has chosen, and that’s why my Deputy Sanctum Head Token submitted to him, not daring to injure him. Naturally, as the real sanctum head, his authority over the Deputy Sanctum Head Token is greater than mine, so it heeded his orders instead!” Zhan shi said.

“Our sanctum head... But...”

All of the elders were not able to process the shocking revelation that they had just heard.

Not only them, Sword Saint Xing, Ren Qingyuan, and the others were also shocked silly as well, and they stared at Zhang Xuan as if they were looking at a monster.

The head of the Zhang Clan, the teacher of Glacier Plain Court’s court chief, and now, he had another identity to his name... the sanctum head of the Sanctum of Sages!

From a man who the three powers had been dying to tear apart, within less than a single hour, he had become a man who commanded all three of them.

Could there be anything more dramatic than this?

“My son has become the head of the Sanctum of Sages?” The Xingmeng Sword Saints stared at one another with eyes widened in shock.

Just finding their son was able to bring them utmost bliss, but who could have thought that their son would be like a pile of mystery boxes, bringing them surprises from unexpected corners one after another!

“H-how is this possible?”

Elder Qu’s body twitched, and before that moment, he had never felt so tearful in his life.

# 1553 Senior!

Elder Qu had never had a good impression of Zhang Xuan. The first time that they met at the conference room of the Glacier Plain Court, the young man had disguised himself as Yang Shi and discreetly poisoned him. Everything that the young man had done was at odds with the conventions and formalities of the Master Teacher Pavilion, which only furthered his hostility for the young man.

As such, when he reported the matter to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, he had intentionally exaggerated certain matters and twisted some facts in order to convince Pavilion Master Ren to issue an arrest warrant on the young man.

He had thought that with so many master teachers after him, that young man would never be able to get away. Yet, who could have thought that his students would suddenly appear, and each of them was stronger than the last!

But even if his students were powerful, as long as the three powers stayed united on the same front and insisted on punishing the young man, they would still have been able to get him in the end. Yet, moments later, he had been revealed as the true head of the Zhang Clan and the Sanctum of Sages. Even the court chief of the Glacier Plain Court turned out to be his student too.

At this rate, the Master Teacher Pavilion might really turn out to be young man's before he knew it!

He turned his head to look at the crowd. Every single person in the area had a dazed look on his face, completely shocked by the revelation.

“Hahaha! Well done, my son!” Sword Saint Xing's hearty laughter broke the silence.

“My son is a person bound for great things! Putting aside how you were at his age, even the current you can't match him!” Sword Saint Meng boasted proudly.

Her son had still been an infant when she lost him, and for the years after that, there had been many times that she had woken up frightened after dreaming of her son being put through all kinds of hardship and suffering, living a life worse than death.

But when they met once more, her son had already become the head of the Sanctum of Sages, and his students had all become powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent, figures who could stand their own ground in the world without fearing anyone.

In fact, it might not be an exaggeration to say that he was one of the most influential figures on the Master Teacher Continent at this moment!

“I almost forgot! Son, to tell you the truth, we betrothed you to someone else before you were even born,” Sword Saint Meng told Zhang Xuan hesitantly.

Then, she decisively turned her head to the First Elder of the Luo Clan, Luo Qingchen, and harrumphed. “Luo Qingchen, what should we do about the engagement then? I heard that your little princess already has someone whom she fancies. This doesn’t seem to be what we have agreed on back then!”

“We’ll go ahead with the marriage as soon as possible!” Hearing those words, a chuckle escaped from Luo Qingchen’s mouth. “As for the person whom our little princess fancies, I suppose there won’t be any problem with that anymore. You can ask Zhang Shi about that; he should be clearer about that than any one of us here!”

Sword Saint Meng turned her gaze back to her son and asked doubtfully, “Do you know of the matter?”

She had heard rumors that the little princess of the Luo Clan had someone whom she liked, but as the Luo Clan had insisted that they would deal with the matter themselves, she still had no idea whom the little princess’ lover was.

“This...” With a slightly awkward look on his face, Zhang Xuan scratched his head and replied, “If I’m not mistaken, her person whom she likes should be me.”

“You?” Sword Saint Meng widened her eyes in bafflement.



“That’s right!” Zhang Xuan nodded with a helpless smile.

Thinking back, the entire course of events seemed almost like a bad joke that the world was playing on them.

First, the Luo Clan had found out that the little princess had someone whom she liked and dispatched Luo Xuanqing to assassinate him. Afterward, Luo Xuanqing delegated the task to him, wanting him to do the deed on his behalf... And after several incidents, it turned out that he was actually the young prodigy that was supposed to marry the little princess!

In this moment, it felt as if he had been cheated of his emotions. If, in the first place, he was Luo Ruoxin’s fiancé, why the heck did he need to undergo all that anxiety, desperation, and hostility over the past few months?

Everything would have simply ended with a happy ending with his identity exposed!

“Oh? When did you manage to seduce her? Quick, share the story with your mother...” Sword Saint Meng immediately cast aside her expert-like aura and put on her gossip face.

“Seduce... Can’t you use a better phrase than that?” Zhang Xuan stared at Sword Saint Meng speechlessly before shaking his head. “Let’s talk about that later. There’s still a few more things that we have to settle first!”

After saying those words, he turned his sights to Luo Qingchen not too far away and said, “Elder Qingchen, since I am the young prodigy and the head of the Zhang Clan, your Luo Clan should be able to accept my relationship with the little princess, right? If that’s the case, I believe that there shouldn’t be any need for you to put her under house arrest anymore, am I right?”

“Of course!” Luo Qingchen hurriedly nodded.

Previously, he had still been afraid that the relationship that the little princess had outside would foil the Luo Clan’s ties with the Zhang Clan. Who could have thought that the person whom she liked would so coincidentally be the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, whom she had an engagement with?

Since that was the case, why would the Luo Clan have to restrict their relationship anymore? Let their love take flight!

They would not bat an eye even if a baby popped out that instant!

Luo Qingchen stroked his beard as he asked Sword Saint Xing, "I'll return right now to ask for her release. When does your Zhang Clan intend to proceed on with the marriage?"

This future son-in-law of the Luo Clan was not only the head of the Zhang Clan but also the sanctum head of the Sanctum of Sages. On top of that, his students governed the Poison Hall, Combat Master Hall, Spirit Awakener Guild, Glacier Plain Court, and the Yuan Clan!

If the Luo Clan could ally together with those powers, its standing would be far stronger than before!

Naturally, they could not let go of such good son-in-law material. If possible, they would prefer the marriage to happen as soon as possible.

Otherwise, once news spread, who knew how many clans would attempt to betroth their daughters to the Zhang Clan?

"I'll first bring him back to the ancestral hall to acknowledge the ancestors before preparing the betrothal gifts to be sent over!" Sword Saint Xing replied.

The matrimony of the Zhang and the Luo Clan was extremely important. Initially, they had still been a little worried about how it would go, especially considering that the young prodigy was missing, and the little princess was reluctant. Such unhappiness could eventually culminate into a tragedy. Since all those problems had been resolved, and both parties were intent on getting together, it would be best to put them together as soon as possible.

"Very well. I'll head back to make preparations as well!" Luo Qingchen chuckled before bidding his farewell and leaving.

"Alright, we should be making a move!" Sword Saint Xing turned to Zhang Xuan with an expectant smile.

“This...” Knowing that his father was inviting him back to the Zhang Clan to acknowledge the ancestors, Zhang Xuan hesitated for a moment, but eventually, he still nodded in consent.

Since his previous self was really the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, there was no qualms with him acknowledging the ancestors of the Zhang Clan.

Besides, he had a very favorable view of his parents. He was not too certain how the relationship between a parent and a child should be like, but he could feel how protective they were of him. He was also fond of their decisive character, never allowing conventions or formalities to blindly guide their actions.

Just as the group was about to leave, Elder Qu suddenly stepped forward and bellowed, “Hold on a moment! You can’t leave yet!”

“What’s wrong?” Sword Saint Xing turned around and directed a hostile frown at Elder Qu.

“H-he has only resolved the problem concerning the three powers, but the conflict between him and the Master Teacher Pavilion hasn’t been resolved yet!” Elder Qu exclaimed.

“Look at the mess that his students have caused! The head of the Poison Hall, Wei Ruyan, has poisoned so many experts of our Master Teacher Pavilion, and the leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild, Wang Ying, has enchanted all of the Master Teacher Pavilions in the area, resulting in massive losses on our part. How should we settle this problem?”

“Indeed! There’s the matter of the Pavilion Master Seal as well. Clan Head Zhang, I have to request you return it to me. This concerns the honor and prestige of our Master Teacher Pavilion!” Ren Qingyuan added.

“This...” Hearing the other party demanding the return of the Pavilion Master Seal, Zhang Xuan’s face twitched slightly. He turned to Wei Ruyan and the others and said, “Ruyan, release the poison that you have placed on these master teachers! Wang Ying, get your spirit awakeners to place all of the

buildings back to where they belong. As for the Pavilion Master Seal... pardon me, but I can't return it to you yet!"

"You can't return it to me? Why?" Ren Qingyuan frowned in displeasure.

"Rest assured! Since no one is able to tame the Pavilion Master Seal, no one will bother to steal it from him either. I really have no idea how you can find the courage in you to talk about honor and prestige after sullyng my son's innocence. Come back to ask for it after you have reinstated his master teacher identity and restored his reputation!" Sword Saint Meng interjected impatiently.

"You..." Ren Qingyuan glared at Sword Saint Meng furiously.

"Pavilion Master Ren, we mustn't reinstate his master teacher identity! A master teacher must be virtuous in order to serve as a role model for the rest of the world. Just the fact that he dared pass off as Yang shi's student shows that he has absolutely no regard for the sanctity of lineage at all. We can't let someone who has blatantly crossed the rules of the Master Teacher Pavilion remain as a master teacher..." Elder Qu argued vehemently.

But before he could finish his words, the space ahead suddenly warped, and two figures came into appearance. One of them was an elder—Yang shi!

"Yang shi, you came at the perfect time! Zhang Xuan over here has claimed to be your student, and not only so, he even attempted to pass off as you..."

Seeing that it was Yang Xuan, Elder Qu immediately called out excitedly, only to see Yang shi walking up to Zhang Xuan and bowing with clasped fist. "Senior!"

# 1554 Apologize, Master Teacher Pavilion! 1

“Senior?”

It was as if a bolt of lightning had struck Elder Qu, and his body wobbled unstably on the spot.

What the heck was going on?

Yang shi was not only the strongest cultivator in the entire Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, he was also considered the most senior of them all as well. Despite being the deputy pavilion master, even Ren Qingyuan would still have to address Yang shi as his Senior Uncle.

One thing that Yang shi was known for was how forbidding he could become when it came to rules and formalities, so Elder Qu had thought that the other party would fly into a rage and teach Zhang Xuan a lesson once he heard of this matter.

But Yang shi simply walked straight up to Zhang Xuan, bowed to him, and addressed him as ‘Senior’!

If Zhang Xuan is your senior, doesn’t that make me... his junior?

Not only him, Ren Qingyuan nearly keeled over after hearing those words.

Having students as the head of the Combat Master Hall, chief of the Glacier Plain Court, master of the Poison Hall, leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild? Fine, I can accept that. His true identity being the head of the Zhang Clan? Alright, there might really be such a coincidence in the world... But to having Yang shi address him as his senior? What the heck?

When did the most senior member of the Master Teacher Pavilion become your junior?

Going down this road, doesn’t this mean that all of the master teachers on the Master Teacher Continent are actually your

juniors?

A mouthful of blood welled up at the back of Ren Qingyuan's throat, ready to spurt forth at any moment. He felt so stifled within that he might just explode from the inside.

Having served as the deputy pavilion master for several centuries, he had seen all kinds of geniuses and experts, but this was the first time that he had seen someone like that.

To be honest, he had intended for the Master Teacher Pavilion to be the first one to get to Zhang Xuan so that he could force the young man to spit out his secret to advancing his cultivation so swiftly. As for whether the young man should be punished or not, that was just a secondary concern of inconsequential importance. However, in the end... not only did he suffer trauma after trauma, the other party even became his Senior Uncle in the blink of an eye.

To have a twenty-year-old lad as his Senior Uncle... something felt very off!

Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng traded gazes too, and they could not help but gulp in shock.

They had thought that the greatest shocks were already over, but from the look of it, what they had encountered previously was nothing at all. To actually be Yang shi's senior, that was truly insanity!

If that was the case, would that not put them a generation more senior than Yang shi?

Paying no heed to the astounded crowd, Zhang Xuan shot a glance at the plump man following behind Yang shi, and after confirming that the latter was still fine, he heaved a sigh of relief.

“Young Master, I thought that I would never see you again...”  
Upon seeing Zhang Xuan, Sun Qiang immediately rushed forward, and tears and snot dribbled down his face.

It might just have been a single day, but not once in his life had he ever felt so frightened and helpless before.

When he heard Yang shi say that the Old Master did not truly exist, he had realized that he had been living in a web of lies all along. All of the confidence that he had built up collapsed in an instant, and his mind had nearly broken down.

He had no idea how he arrived in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, but he had found himself surrounded by many 9-star master teachers. Their words wielded some compelling power, forcing him to cultivate according to his words, and eventually, his cultivation had ended up going berserk. He had thought that he would really meet his end then, but who could have thought that Yang shi would return at that moment?

This time, Yang shi was much more amiable than before. Without the severity in his voice, the other party told him warmly that he had made a mistake and that his Young Master was actually his senior.

In that instant, Sun Qiang felt as if he had been pulled out from the abyss of despair and placed on cloud nine. All those twists had happened one another so quickly that he almost felt as if it was all a dream.

If not for the fact that they were in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, he would have really thought the Yang shi whom he had met there was a fake.

Seeing that the fellow had grown slightly plumper compared to when they last met, Zhang Xuan waved off Sun Qiang's agitation and instructed, "Make sure to cultivate properly in the future, got it?"

"Yes!" Sun Qiang hurriedly nodded.

Turning to his students, Zhang Xuan said, "Zheng Yang, I'll be leaving Sun Qiang in your hands. If he doesn't listen to your instructions, you are free to use the torture tools in the Combat Master Hall to force him to submit. Make sure to train him well!"

"Yes, Teacher!" Zheng Yang clasped his fist. After which, he turned his gaze to Sun Qiang and chuckled softly. "Uncle Sun, this way please!"

Hearing that he would have to cultivate, Sun Qiang's agitation swiftly waned, and it did not take long for him to become completely spiritless.

After dealing with Sun Qiang, Zhang Xuan turned to Yang shi and said, "I have troubled you, Junior!"

"There's no need to stand on ceremony! It's my pleasure to be able to do something for you," Yang shi replied.

Seeing how the number one expert in the world was so courteous to Zhang Xuan, the Xingmeng Sword Saints remained in their stunned state.

"You're too polite!"

Given that he was a Celestial Master Teacher, Zhang Xuan was not too surprised by the incredibly respectful attitude that Yang shi was treating him with. However, he shot a glance toward the latter to gesture for him to be low profile.

The sharp Yang shi swiftly understood the gesture, and his face reddened a little. After which, he turned his gaze to Zhao Ya and nodded in amazement. "Incredible! Senior, your means are indeed formidable. It hasn't been long since I left, but Zhao Ya has already fully recovered, and her cultivation has even advanced a notch..."

He had checked on Zhao Ya's personally, and he knew that all of her meridians had ruptured. Even with his abilities, he would have had no way of treating her at all. Yet, this senior of his had only taken two hours to completely heal her. As expected of a Celestial Master Teacher, his means were indeed unfathomable!

Zhang Xuan was silent for a moment before recalling that he had not resolved the problem concerning the Pavilion Master Seal yet. He turned back to Ren Qingyuan and said, "Pavilion Master Ren, it's not that I don't want to return the Pavilion Master Seal to you, but..."

"I was the one who asked my senior to take possession of the Pavilion Master Seal," Yang shi abruptly interjected. "Ren Qingyuan, you issued an arrest warrant without careful investigation, placing the Master Teacher Pavilion's



impartiality and capability under question. With what you have done, if you continue holding onto the Pavilion Master Seal, you'll only diminish the Master Teacher Pavilion's authority and honor!"

"I... I understand..." Knowing that he was at fault for this matter as well, Ren Qingyuan could only shake his head. He beckoned the elders behind him and said, "Let's go!"

After mobilizing such a huge group of 9-star master teachers simultaneously, who would have thought that the matter would end in such a manner?

"Hold it right there!"

The master teachers barely managed to move a few steps before the crowd from the Combat Master Hall abruptly surrounded all of them.

Ren Qingyuan turned to Zheng Yang and asked with a livid expression, "Progeny of Combat, what do you mean by this?"

"You did manage to resolve your issues, but my teacher's matter isn't over yet! You pinned such a grievous crime on my teacher, ordered his arrest, and even attempted to take his life. If we hadn't come in time, you would have already killed him in cold blood! After sullyng my teacher's reputation, trampling on his dignity, and trying to assassinate him... don't you think that it's too convenient for you to leave just like that?" Zheng Yang glanced at the master teachers coldly as the spear in his hand trembled with a buzz.

"Just because my teacher is compassionate enough to forgive the Master Teacher Pavilion doesn't mean that the rest of us are magnanimous enough to allow that. If you don't give us a good explanation today, don't dream about taking a single step out of here!" Wei Ruyan stepped forward as her poison aura billowed around her.

The Master Teacher Pavilion might have chosen to drop the arrest warrant on Zhang Xuan after he came to a peaceful agreement with the three powers, but that did not change the fact that the Master Teacher Pavilion had incompetently framed their teacher of crimes that he did not commit, sullyng

his innocence. There was no way that they could allow them to get away that easily!

Otherwise, their teacher's reputation would forever be stained by this incident!

Since they had gathered together to bring their teacher justice, they should go all the way. Otherwise, what if others attempted it again in the future?

Huala!

After those two spoke up, Zhao Ya, Wang Ying, Lu Chong, and the others also walked over to encircle the master teachers. Powerful auras burst forth from them, sending a clear message to the Master Teacher Pavilion that they would not be allowed to leave until they gave a satisfactory answer.

“This...” Ren Qingyuan's face twitched upon seeing this side.

When had the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters fallen so far as to be cornered in such a manner?

“Just what do you want?” a 9-star master teacher bellowed furiously.

“Nothing much, we just want you to apologize, and the apology must reach every single Master Teacher Pavilion on the continent. Also, throw in ten million or so pinnacle spirit stones, and we'll let this matter go!” Yuan Tao said.

# 1555 Apologize, Master Teacher Pavilion! 2

“Ten million or so pinnacle spirit stones?” The 9-star master teacher from before nearly exploded on the spot. “This is daylight robbery!”

The other 9-star master teachers also glared at Yuan Tao furiously.

Pinnacle spirit stones were an extremely rare commodity, such that not even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters had the ability to take out ten million or so pinnacle spirit stones. In their eyes, Yuan Tao’s request was an insult to them!

“Daylight robbery? How could that be? We are all very reasonable people, and there’s no way we’d resort to something as despicable as that!” Chuckling softly, Yuan Tao turned around and said, “Comrades, if they aren’t able to take out that many pinnacle spirit stones, let’s just make do with taking their storage rings. While their master teacher robes are specially tailored by the headquarters and are bound to be very expensive, let’s spare their dignity and not strip them clean, alright? After all, we are reasonable people, not common thieves!”

“You...” Hearing those words, the crowd from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters nearly blacked out.

Is this still not considered daylight robbery?

You are worse than a common thief, do you not know that?

Unable to take it any longer, Ren Qingyuan turned to the young man idly watching the scene from afar and bellowed, “Zhang shi, is this your intention as well?”

“Alright, you lot should stop messing around!” Seeing how mischievous his students were, Zhang Xuan waved his hands helplessly and said, “Junior Qingyuan, pardon me. It seems like I have failed to keep my students in line!”

“Junior?” Ren Qingyuan’s goosebumps rose upon hearing that term.

“The matter regarding the storage rings is of course a joke. However...” Placing his hands behind his back, Zhang Xuan said, “I stand by what my students have said. I, Zhang Xuan, have always lived by my principles. I wouldn’t be so brazen as to say that I have never faulted, but I have always tried my best to uphold the virtues of a teacher.

“Yet, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters has issued an arrest warrant on me, making me out to be an immoral villain who willfully caused damage and kidnapped others. If the Master Teacher Pavilion simply walks away after all the mistakes it has committed, I think that would really chill the hearts of the master teachers around the world!”

“You... Very well, I admit that I have done you wrong this time around, and I am willing to accept my punishment. Speak your mind. As long as it’s something that the Master Teacher Pavilion can afford, I’ll try my best to compensate you.”

As furious as Ren Qingyuan was, he knew that what Zhang Xuan had said was right. Thus, he suppressed his anger and lowered his head.

“I don’t ask of you to compensate me, but it happens that there’s something that the Master Teacher Pavilion has that I am deeply interested in. Having governed the Master Teacher Continent for many years, the Master Teacher Pavilion has amassed countless cultivation technique manuals. To be honest, I have long desired to access your collection so as to further my studies. If the Master Teacher Pavilion could be so kind as to provide me with a copy of all of its cultivation technique manuals from the Dimension Sundering realm to just before the Ancient Sage realm, I would be extremely thankful!” Zhang Xuan said.

To him, there was no compensation that was as practical as cultivation technique manuals.

With those, he would be able to compile corresponding Heaven’s Path Divine Art manuals and advance his cultivation swiftly.

“The cultivation technique manuals of the Master Teacher Pavilion are confidential, so I can’t show them to an outsider. I will have to ask you to request something else of me,” Ren Qingyuan replied.

One of the reasons that the Master Teacher Pavilion was able to remain at the top of the continent for so many years was due to its massive repository of top-notch secret arts. Knowledge would only be powerful in the right hands, so the Master Teacher Pavilion only imparted the cultivation technique manuals to those with exceptional talent and good character.

Furthermore, most of those secret arts were too domineering, such that without the guidance of the predecessors, not only would it be unlikely for one to master it, the chances of one’s cultivation going berserk was extremely high as well. Even a 9-star master teacher would have to study the insights of the predecessors before carefully practicing it bit by bit.

Thus, there had never been an occasion when all of the secret arts were copied down and given to someone!

“I won’t demand those cultivation techniques that are too profound or confidential. I’ll just take those that the Master Teacher Pavilion is willing to impart to others, but I want as many of them as possible!” Zhang Xuan said.

While master teachers did embrace the idea of impartation to all without discrimination, there were limitations to how far they could do so. Most of the confidential secret arts passed down only within the lineages were extreme profound, and they would require special guidance in order to master.

Carelessly passing on their secret arts to others would only encourage others to incorrectly practice the secrets that they had devoted their lives to developing and refining, and that was not something that they wanted to see!

Back then, Kong shi had taught three thousand students and seventy-two direct disciples, and the cultivation techniques that he had imparted to each of them was different from one another.

The same went for Wang Ying, Zheng Yang, and the others. In fact, when he lectured all of them together back when they were still in Hongtian Academy, he had only imparted the most basic knowledge concerning cultivation to them. Beyond that, he had always chosen to tutor each of them individually.

“This...” Hearing that Zhang Xuan did not require the more confidential cultivation techniques, Ren Qingyuan hesitated for a moment before nodding. “Very well then. However, I’d like to inform you beforehand that the Master Teacher Pavilion only has Saint 8-dan and 9-dan cultivation technique manuals... Beyond this realm, every cultivator will have to find their own way to forge a path forward, so there aren’t any established cultivation techniques anymore. Furthermore, all of the cultivation technique manuals beyond the Saint realm that our Master Teacher Pavilion has are locked in the Azure Vault. If you wish to browse through it, you will have to enter the premises yourself!”

“This...” Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan shot a glance at Sword Saint Xing, and the latter confirmed Ren Qingyuan’s words with a slight nod. Thus, he could only turn his gaze back and sigh helplessly. “Alright then!”

“We have quite a number of Saint 8-dan cultivation technique manuals on hand, so we can pass them over to you right now. As for the Saint 9-dan manuals, most of them are in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, so you will have to wait patiently for a moment as we copy them for you!” Ren Qingyuan said.

Considering the standing of the Master Teacher Pavilion, they would not stoop so low as to renege on their own words. Thus, Zhang Xuan gave a nod of agreement. “I understand.”

So, Ren Qingyuan turned around and instructed, “Everyone, please pass all of the Saint 8-dan cultivation technique manuals that you have to me!”

“Yes, Pavilion Master Ren!”

The 9-star master teachers hurriedly took out their Saint 8-dan cultivation technique manuals, and they added up to several thousand books.

Ren Qingyuan stowed the books into a storage ring before passing them over to Zhang Xuan.

“Zhang shi, I’ll take responsibility for the injustice that you have experienced today. Once I return to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, I’ll resign from my position as the deputy pavilion master. I hope that this will be able to resolve the grudge that you have with the Master Teacher Pavilion.”

Knee-deep in this mess, the Master Teacher Pavilion could no longer make a clean getaway from this matter. In order to restore the dignity and reputation of the Master Teacher Pavilion, Ren Qingyuan had no choice but to shoulder all of the blame so as to absolve the Master Teacher Pavilion.

But once he did that, there was no way that others would allow him to remain as the deputy pavilion master. Rather than be criticized by the masses afterward, he decisively chose to resign from his position.

After bowing deeply to Zhang Xuan and Yang shi, Ren Qingyuan left with all of the 9-star master teachers.

On the other hand, Zhang Xuan had not expected Ren Qingyuan to actually resign from his position over this matter, and he shook his head and sighed. At that moment, he suddenly recalled Yang shi’s abrupt interjection earlier, so he turned a doubtful gaze over to the latter. “Junior...”

He had not told the other party anything about the Pavilion Master Seal, so why would the other party suddenly speak up on his behalf?

Knowing what he wanted to ask, Yang shi sent a telepathic message over. “As a Celestial Master Teacher, you should be able to easily tame the Pavilion Master Seal. The reason you are unwilling to hand it over is because you have already tamed it, and it has already fused into your palm in the form of three droplets, right?”

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

It seemed like Yang shi did know about the Pavilion Master Seal, so there was no need for him to waste his breath explaining the matter to him.

“Through the power of the droplets, you will be able to wield power unmatched by those beneath Ancient Sage. If I’m not mistaken, you were planning to reveal your identity as the Celestial Master Teacher earlier, right?” Yang shi continued.

Zhang Xuan nodded before asking, “Is there anything wrong with that?”

The reason he had not dared to reveal his identity as a Celestial Master Teacher before was because he had been too weak. He had been afraid that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe would devote its effort to assassinating him once they learned of the matter, and he did not feel safe entrusting his safety to others.

However, having tamed the Pavilion Master Seal, as long as he activated the power of the droplets, he would be able to wield strength unmatched by all beneath Ancient Sage! Surely, it should be fine for him to reveal his identity as the Celestial Master Teacher with the strength he currently possessed, should it not?

After all, he would be granted access to the massive trove of resources that the Master Teacher Pavilion had once he revealed his identity, thus allowing him to advance his cultivation faster than ever! Was there really a need for him to continue concealing the matter?

“Senior, I know what you are thinking, and I’ll be very frank with you. We have recently found that one of the strongest Otherworldly Demonic Emperors is currently on the Master Teacher Continent,” Yang shi said grimly. “At this point, we are still unable to confirm the intention behind this course of action. However, if the news concerning you being the Celestial Master Teacher is leaked now, there’s no doubt that you will be in grave danger!”

“Grave danger? How powerful is the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor?” Zhang Xuan asked.

He was invincible among those beneath Ancient Sage, and while he was not too sure of the matter, it seemed like it was impossible for any cultivators to make a breakthrough to Ancient Sage anymore.



With that, there should be no one on the Master Teacher Continent who was more powerful than him!

“I’m afraid that the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor’s cultivation has already reached...” Yang shi looked in the sky with an apprehensive frown on his face.

“Ancient Sage!”

# 1556 The Secrets of the Master Teacher Continen

“Ancient Sage?” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in shock, not daring to believe what he had heard. “Didn’t you say that it’s impossible for anyone to make a breakthrough beyond Ancient Sage anymore?”

Previously, Yang shi had stated that it was no longer possible for anyone to make a breakthrough to Ancient Sage. Even he himself had reached a bottleneck in his cultivation, and the reason he had chosen to roam the world was to search for inspiration that could possibly allow him to make a breakthrough. Since that was the case, how could that Otherworldly Demonic Emperor be so powerful?

“When I said that he has reached Ancient Sage, I fear that’s only a conservative estimate on my part.” Yang shi shook his head worriedly. “There’s a good chance that his cultivation is far higher than that!”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan was confused by the seeming contradiction in his words, Yang shi paused for a moment before explaining, “It’s true that it’s nigh impossible for cultivators to make a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, but the Otherworldly Demons are of a different level of existence from us humans. Given the difference in our constitutions, how they achieve a breakthrough is drastically different to how we break through, so I can’t say for sure whether they are still able to make a breakthrough to Ancient Sage or not. However, I can tell you for certain that this particular Otherworldly Demonic Emperor did not make a breakthrough in the last ten thousand years!”

“What do you mean by that?” Zhang Xuan was still unable to make sense out of what he was hearing.

If the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor did not make a breakthrough in the recent ten thousand years, did that not

mean that the other party had already been an Ancient Sage ten thousand years ago?

But surely that could not be!

As powerful as Ancient Sages were, there was still a limit to their lifespan. Otherwise, Kong shi and his disciples would not have disappeared without a trace either!

“In fact, I suspect that this Otherworldly Demonic Emperor could very well be the same one that fought with Kong shi back then!” Yang shi said with deeply narrowed eyes.

“The one that fought with Kong shi back then? T-this...” Zhang Xuan’s eyes widened in shock. “But Kong shi departed from the continent tens of thousands of years ago, no?”

Was it really possible for the Otherworldly Demon Emperor who had fought with Kong shi tens of thousands of years ago to still be alive?

“In the first place, the Otherworldly Demons enjoy greater longevity than us humans, and they might have used some sort of secret art that allows them to hibernate for long periods of time. As such, we can’t discount the possibility that this Otherworldly Demonic Emperor is still alive!” Yang shi explained. “In fact, there are many powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent that have lived through the ages in such a way as well!”

Those words immediately rose a great storm in Zhang Xuan’s heart.

It seemed like he had underestimated the Ancient Sages. He had thought that once a person reached the limits of their lifespan, whether they were a human or an Otherworldly Demon, they had no choice but to accept his death. Who would have thought that there would actually be such a secret art to extend their lifespan!

Then again, Vicious was the very embodiment of this. He had fought with Kong shi back then, but even tens of thousands of years later, he had still successfully been brought back to life.

He had no idea how powerful Vicious was in the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, but considering the high opinion that Yang shi

had of that Otherworldly Demonic Emperor, they should be of equal standing at the very least. Given so, it should not come as much of a surprise that this Otherworldly Demonic Emperor was still alive.

“My guess is that this Otherworldly Demonic Emperor has sneaked into the Master Teacher Continent for the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn. Currently, not even the Master Teacher Pavilion has been able to acquire any information concerning his whereabouts. As such, it would be best to remain prudent! You are only mankind’s second Celestial Master Teacher, and if that Otherworldly Demon Emperor catches wind of your existence, I’m afraid that it will be difficult for us to stop him with our current strength!” Yang shi said worriedly.

“I understand...” Zhang Xuan nodded.

Given that he had hidden his identity as the Celestial Master Teacher for so long, he had no qualms with keeping it a secret a little bit longer.

Just that, he really did not expect the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe to still have such a powerful expert among them!

“But if the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor is that powerful, and the Master Teacher Continent no longer has any Ancient Sages, why hasn’t the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe conquered it yet? It’s their dream, isn’t it?”

Considering that mankind was already without Kong shi and his disciples, it should not be too difficult for that Ancient Sage Otherworldly Demonic Emperor to lead his men over to conquer the Master Teacher Continent once more! That should be the rational course of action, should it not?

“They have tried to invade the Master Teacher Continent many times, but it isn’t as easy as that. While it’s possible for the Otherworldly Demons to slip through the seals in the Subterranean Galleries, they have to pay a heavy price for that. As such, it isn’t easy for them to amass their armies in the Master Teacher Continent,” Yang shi explained. “Furthermore, while no humans have been able to achieve a breakthrough to

Ancient Sage anymore, that doesn't mean that we don't have any Ancient Sages among us..."

"What?" Zhang Xuan blinked blankly, not following Yang shi's words.

If it was impossible to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage, how could there still be any human Ancient Sage cultivators in the world?

"Didn't I say it earlier? There are many powerhouses on the Master Teacher Continent that have used a secret art to survive through the ages. In fact, the reason even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters has to tread prudently around the Zhang Clan is because the Zhang Clan also has an Ancient Sage who survived in such a way! However, the Ancient Sages are in a state of hibernation most of the time, and only when the Master Teacher Continent is truly in danger will they be awakened!" Yang shi replied.

"The Zhang Clan... also has an Ancient Sage?" Zhang Xuan was shocked.

He had always thought that the strongest experts in the Zhang Clan were Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng. Who could have thought that they would actually have such a powerful trump card?

"Indeed. This is one of the greatest secrets of the continent, and only 9-star master teachers are qualified to learn of the matter. Senior, I have to ask you not to speak of it lightly to others..." Yang shi clasped his fist.

"Rest assured, I understand!" Zhang Xuan replied.

"The Ancient Sages of mankind are usually in a state of hibernation. They are woken only when there's a battle to be fought, and they return to hibernation right after. For every battle they undergo, their lifespan will be reduced significantly. Eventually, they will run out of time and breathe their last breath.

"Every single Ancient Sage is of the utmost importance to the safety of mankind, so we can't afford to wake any of them up in order to protect you. Since your identity as the Celestial

Master Teacher hasn't been leaked yet, it would be best to keep it a secret for as long as we can. Furthermore, we still have no idea what the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor looks like, where he currently is, and in what form the danger from him will manifest. Even if we had an Ancient Sage constantly following you around, it would still be difficult to guarantee your safety!"

Speaking up to this point, Yang shi suddenly paused for a moment as he looked at Zhang Xuan earnestly. "Any of us can die, but Senior, you must continue living. You are the Celestial Master Teacher, an existence on par with Kong shi. You are the hope of mankind. Whether mankind will be able to rise once more and enter another era of prosperity depends on you!"

Zhang Xuan's heart jolted in astonishment. He did not think that Yang shi would have such a high opinion of him.

He was silent for a moment before nodding. "I understand."

At the same time, he felt incredibly relieved that he had never revealed his identity as the Celestial Master Teacher carelessly. Otherwise, if he had really caught the eye of that Otherworldly Demonic Emperor whom Yang shi had mentioned, he would probably have been killed in a heartbeat.

"Junior, you said earlier that this Otherworldly Demonic Emperor has come for the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn. Can you explain more about that matter?" Zhang Xuan asked.

The Great Codex of Spring Autumn was known to be the strongest artifact that Kong shi had created, and it wielded unimaginable capabilities. Previously, he had come across the Qingtian Emperor, who had been searching for the Celestial Amulet of Legacy for this very purpose.

"As you might have heard, the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn is an unparalleled artifact that Kong shi left behind. It has the ability to affect the weather and control time. Before Kong shi left the continent, he placed the artifact in the Temple of Confucius in Qufu... Unfortunately, no one knows the exact location of where the Temple of Confucius is.

Countless master teachers have attempted to find it, but none of them succeeded.

“Legend has it that only by gathering all of the Celestial Amulets of Legacy together will the road leading to the Temple of Confucius finally appear. However, a year ago, we detected some spatial distortions in Qufu, and someone reportedly witnessed a mirage of the Temple of Confucius. As soon as the news came out, it caused a huge commotion among the upper echelons of the Master Teacher Continent. The Master Teacher Pavilion moved quickly to seal the news completely, but unfortunately, it seems like the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe still managed to catch wind of it.

“The Great Codex of Spring and Autumn is an unparalleled treasure, and if we successfully obtain it, we’ll have a powerful weapon in our hands to protect ourselves. However, if the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe obtains it instead, there’s a good chance that they could use it to tear down the seals in the Subterranean Galleries and march back into the continent. If that happens, it would be a catastrophe!” Yang shi said grimly.

“If it’s an artifact that Kong shi forged, why did he choose to seal it in the Temple of Confucius instead of entrusting it to the Master Teacher Pavilion?” Zhang Xuan asked with a doubtful frown.

Since it was a creation from Kong shi, it went without saying that he intended to pass it down to future generations so as to benefit mankind. Yet, instead of handing this artifact over to the Master Teacher Pavilion to use it, he chose to seal it up instead. This did not seem to make sense.

“I don’t know the exact reason either. Most probably, we’ll only know after entering the Temple of Confucius!” Yang shi said. Qufu is Kong Zi’s real hometown, and it’s a real city in China. By the way, the real Temple of Confucius is in Qufu as well.

# 1557 Returning to the Zhang Clan

A matter concerning the Temple of Confucius was already way beyond what Yang shi could access. The matter had happened tens of thousands of years ago, and no matter how carefully the Master Teacher Pavilion passed down its heritage from one generation to the next, there was still bound to be some information that was withheld or lost in the process. With the limited information he knew, all he could do was speculate.

And since it was just mere speculation, it would be better for him to hold his tongue than to spread uncertain information.

On the other hand, seeing that Yang shi was uncertain of the matter, Zhang Xuan decided to ask no more as well.

The two of them chatted a while longer before Sword Saint Xing suddenly walked over and said, “Yang shi, we are very thankful to you for helping us reunite with Xuan-er. We wish to bring him back home now to acknowledge the ancestors. Would you be interested in following us along so as to witness the process?”

Yang shi nodded. “I happen to have something that I have to do back at the Zhang Clan. Let’s head over together.”

“Great. Let’s set off then!” Seeing that Yang shi was coming along as well, Sword Saint Xing inwardly heaved a sigh of relief before turning to Zhang Xuan. “We’ll first be heading to the Glacier Plain Court to teleport to the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters before teleporting to the Zhang Clan.”

“There’s no need to go through that much trouble. I can just set up a Teleportation Formation straight back to the Zhang Clan here,” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

While the power from the droplet had already faded, with his current Dimension Sundering realm primary stage cultivation



and the assistance from Yang Shi and the Xingmeng Sword Saints, it would not be too difficult for him to construct another Teleportation Formation.

In any case, he had been to the Zhang Clan once before, so he knew its coordinates very well. As long as he calculated carefully, he should be able to arrive at the destination with pinpoint accuracy.

“That would be great!”

It was only after hearing those words that the crowd suddenly remembered the young man’s ability to set up Teleportation Formations with a wave of his hand, and they quickly nodded in agreement.

“Before that, allow me to talk to my students a while first!” Since Zhang Xuan had already decided to head to the Zhang Clan, there was no longer any need for him to hesitate.

He quickly headed to where Zhao Ya, Zheng Yang, and the others had gathered.

“Teacher...”

With the crisis resolved, they were no longer able to suppress the longing that they felt, and they quickly gathered around Zhang Xuan in agitation.

If not for their teacher, they would still have been living their lives groggily in the remote Tianxuan Kingdom. They would never have grown to become the formidable powerhouses that they were that day.

They would never forget what their teacher had done for them.

“Not bad!” Looking at the faces before him, Zhang Xuan could not help but smile hearteningly.

Those immature children that had waddled behind him in the past had become figures who could stand their own ground. There was indeed nothing constant in the world except for the passing of time.

After chatting for a bit, Zhang Xuan turned to the spear-wielding young man and asked, “Zheng Yang, how did you manage to grow so quickly?”

Wei Ruyan had been able to advance her cultivation swiftly due to her Innate Poison Constitution, and the same applied to Zhao Ya, Lu Chong, and Yuan Tao as well. While Wang Ying did improve considerably, her strength was mainly derived from her spirit enchantment art and the puppet that she commanded.

Yet, it was Zheng Yang, who only had hard work to count on, who had improved the quickest among them, such that even Ren Qingyuan would hesitate to face him.

“Teacher, I only managed to improve so quickly due to the Master Teacher Pavilion’s Hall of Spring and Autumn!” Zheng Yang replied honestly.

“Hall of Spring and Autumn?” Zhang Xuan muttered.

“It’s a unique artifact of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, and it’s said to have been left behind by Kong shi as well. It’s somewhat similar to the Blood Reservoir of the Zhang Clan, but it’s more advanced than that. A year inside the Hall of Spring and Autumn translates to only the passing of a month outside... I spent a total of three months inside, which is equivalent to the passing of three years, with the Combat Master Hall generously supplying whatever I needed for my cultivation!” Zheng Yang said.

“I see...” Zhang Xuan nodded in realization.

It was no wonder the other party had grown so much within just a couple of months, such that even Zhao Ya and the others were not able to catch up to him. It turned out that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters still had such a formidable artifact with them.

With the slowing of time, Zheng Yang’s diligence, the heritage of the Combat Master Hall, and the vast resources devoted to him, it was understandable that he had grown so quickly within such a short period of time.

The Zhang Clan’s Blood Reservoir only allowed one to cultivate mentally, but the effects of the Hall of Spring and Autumn applied to the cultivator as a whole. Naturally, there was a vast difference in the effects as well.

As they chatted and chatted, before they knew it, the sky had already begun to dim. Seeing that it was getting late, Zhang Xuan said, “All of you are already leaders of your respective organizations, so you can’t follow me as you did in the past anymore. Your people need you, so return to them. I’m not in any danger anymore, so there’s no need to be worried about me!”

He knew that his students missed him, and he missed them as well. However, their circumstances were different from before, and they could not afford to act willfully. They had each found their own way forward, so it was inevitable that their paths would have to diverge.

“We understand, but it’s just that we can’t bear to...”

The thought of separation after barely reuniting with one another made Zhao Ya’s eyes redden slightly.

She had thought that she would be able to remain with her teacher a little longer, but to think that they would have to separate so soon again.

“Zhao Ya, even though I have helped you reconstruct your meridians, your foundations are still a little weak at the moment. Here is a cultivation technique manual that I have just written. Cultivate according to it, and it’ll do you much good for your future cultivation.

“Zheng Yang, the heritage of the Combat Master Hall isn’t too bad, but due to the swift advancement in your cultivation, you ended up incurring some traumas. I have a prescription over here. Get a skilled apothecary to forge the pills for you according to my prescription. Consume one a day for a week straight, and it should resolve the traumas that you have sustained and advance your cultivation further.

“Wang Ying, your talent is lacking in comparison to Zhao Ya and the others, and you haven’t been blessed with the same fortuitous encounter as Zheng Yang. Here are the cultivation technique manuals that I have compiled for you recently, as well as the insights I have regarding spirit enchantment. I’ll entrust all of them to you, and as long as you practice them diligently, you should be able to improve quickly as well!

“Lu Chong...”

“Wei Ruyan...”

“Yuan Tao...”

Zhang Xuan carefully went through the problems with each of his students' cultivation, but even after doing so, he still felt a little worried. Thus, he left several surges of Heaven's Path zhenqi in each of them before finally heaving a sigh of relief.

They might have matured and grown even stronger than him, but somehow, he could not help but see them as children that needed taking care of.

“Teacher, since you are intending to head to the Luo Clan very soon to seal your engagement, let's meet again in the Luo Clan!” Zheng Yang said with a smile. “I'll bring a huge present then to celebrate the occasion!”

“Indeed! How can we be absent for our teacher's marriage?” Wei Ruyan chuckled softly.

“We'll definitely be there!”

Zhao Ya and the others nodded in agreement.

Seeing the earnest faces all around him, Zhang Xuan shook his head helplessly and said, “Alright, feel free to come if you want to. Right, there's a matter that I need to entrust you all with. Liu Yang disappeared after leaving Qingyuan City, so I would like you to help me keep a lookout for him. If you find him, make sure that no danger befalls him!” Recalling that disciple of his who had left to venture into the world, Zhang Xuan could not help but feel a little worried.

“Alright!”

The others nodded in agreement.

While they had been chatting, the elders of the Spirit Awakener Guild had already moved the enchanted buildings back to where they belonged, and the experts of the Poison Hall had also cured the poisoned master teachers and released them.

By the time that Zhang Xuan parted with his students, night had fallen.

“Let’s go!”

Knowing that Zhang Xuan was not in a mood to chat, Sword Saint Meng did not bother him too much. She took out a bunch of grade-9 formation flags and passed them over.

Taking the formation flags, Zhang Xuan quickly calculated the coordinates of the Zhang Clan and began constructing the Teleportation Formation.

Due to his lacking cultivation, he still needed Yang Shi’s assistance before he finally activated the Teleportation Formation successfully.

Hu!

The group vanished on the spot, and the next instant, they were standing right before the Zhang Clan’s entrance formation. Usually, you only address someone with -er if you are their senior and on close terms with them. In Yu Fei-er’s case though, -er simply part of her name.

# 1558 News Reaches the Luo Clan

In the Luo Clan, before a massive seal, a young lady pleaded with a desperate look on her face, “Elder Brother, please let me go. I’ll come right back after saving him...”

With her black, silky hair and a delicate complexion that looked as if it would tear with a gust of wind, she was indescribably beautiful, almost as though a goddess that had descended to the mortal world. Words could not even begin to describe her ravishing looks.

Standing before her was a young man in his early thirties—Luo Xuanqing!

“You should abandon that thought, Yuxin. The only reason I was allowed to return using the Teleportation Formation was to stop you from messing around...”

Looking into his younger sister’s pleading eyes, Luo Xuanqing’s heart ached a little. However, he still toughened his resolve and shook his head adamantly. “He brought this upon himself. If he’s able to survive the ordeal, I’ll believe that he truly has the ability to marry you. However, there’s no need for you to be too worried about him. Since the Master Teacher Pavilion has gotten involved, I don’t think that they will go too far. At the very most, they will only punish him harshly. There shouldn’t be any threat to his life!”

“Is that so?” Hearing her elder brother’s words, the young lady heaved a sigh of relief. “As long as there’s no danger to his life, I believe that he will be able to overcome the crisis eventually!”

“You... Jeez! I really don’t know what kind of sorcery that lad used to charm you so!” Staring at the infatuated look on his younger sister’s face, Luo Xuanqing could not help but shake his head.

He had interacted with Zhang Xuan on many occasions, so he had a clear idea about the means that the young man possessed. While he was formidable, faced against a behemoth like the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, it was unlikely that he would stand much of a chance.

Even if there was no danger to the young man's life, chances were that he would be put through great suffering!

He really could not understand why his younger sister had so much confidence in him.

"It's not sorcery. I simply trust him," the young lady replied.

"It doesn't matter whether you trust him or not. It's not as if you don't know our clan's resolve on this matter, and you should understand the severe implications that could arise from this matter. They won't allow you to marry anyone other than the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan. There's no future between you and him!" Luo Xuanqing sighed as he lowered his gaze to the ground, not wanting to see his younger sister's disappointed face.

The deeper the feelings his younger sister had for that fellow, the greater the disappointment she would eventually face. The marriage between the Zhang and the Luo Clan would affect the Master Teacher Pavilion, the Celestial Amulet of Legacy, and the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn. They would not allow any problems to occur just because of her personal feelings.

"I know... I know that there's no future between me and him. As long as he's safe, I'll be content," the young lady replied quietly as she hugged her knees to her body.

"You... Jeez!" Luo Xuanqing wanted to knock some sense into his younger sister, but seeing the forlorn look on her face, he really could not bring himself to put her down any more than that.

She had always been lonely despite the crowds of people that swarmed around her. It had not been easy for her to find someone whom she truly liked. Even if there was nothing but

tragedy in the end, perhaps it might be good to allow her to live in the moment.

In that moment of heavy silence between the two of them, flurried footsteps sounded from the distance, and soon, a figure could be seen rushing over.

“Young Master, Little Princess...”

Upon catching a clearer sight of the figure, Luo Xuanqing anxiously asked, “Elder Chengxin, what’s wrong?”

He was none other than the Luo Clan expert who had threatened Zhang Xuan back in Qingyuan City—Luo Chengxin!

At this moment, his face was flushed red in agitation, as if he had heard some news that even he had difficulty believing.

“Young Master, I have been keeping a close eye on the situation over in the Empire Alliance, and I have just received some news from my men there. After Zhang shi was cornered by the experts of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, there should have been no way that he could have escaped. However, at the crucial moment... his students appeared!” Luo Chengxin reported.

“His students? Are you referring to Wang Ying and the others?” the young lady asked anxiously.

“That’s right! The first one to arrive was the head of the Poison Hall, followed by a soul oracle, the leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild...” As he reported the news that he had just received, Luo Chengxin could not help but gulp unconsciously.

He had verified the matter again and again, but still, he could not help but find it too incredible to be true.

“You are telling me that the students that fellow took in have become the head of the Poison Hall, the leader of the Spirit Awakener Guild, the master of the Combat Master Hall, the head of the Yuan Clan...” Luo Xuanqing widened his eyes in disbelief.



Those were major powers that did not pale much in comparison to the Luo Clan... and yet, they were all headed by his students!

Was Zhang Xuan not only a Phantasmal Space realm cultivator himself?

How could his students be so formidable?

“That isn’t all! Sword Saint Xing and Sword Saint Meng from the Zhang Clan also arrived shortly afterward...” Luo Chengxin continued. “After fighting an intense battle with Zhang shi, Sword Saint Xing admitted his defeat and said that... that...”

Seeing how Luo Chengxin was stuttering to no end, Luo Xuanqing frowned in displeasure. “What did he say?”

“He said that... Zhang shi was actually... his son! In other words, he’s the young prodigy who hasn’t appeared all this time!” Luo Chengxin exclaimed with eyes widened in disbelief.

When he first saw this piece of news, he had thought that his eyes were playing tricks on him. He had needed to carefully read it eight times and verify it again and again before he was able to confirm that there was no mistake. Nevertheless, he still could not help but feel as if he was in a dream when speaking of it. It was simply too unbelievable!

It had not been easy for the little princess to find someone whom she fancied, but the heavy responsibility that she shouldered had made it impossible for them to come together. Yet, who would have thought that her fiancé would turn out be the person whom she fancied!

“What did you say?” Luo Xuanqing fell into a daze.

The little princess’ body also stiffened upon hearing those words. Her voice quivered in disbelief as she asked, “Did you say that... Zhang shi is the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan?”

“Yes! I have verified the information many times, so there can’t be any mistake with it. I’ve heard that our First Elder is rushing back to the clan because of the matter, and I believe it

won't be long before news spreads all around our clan!" Luo Chengxin nodded in agitation.

He was the old butler of the little princess, and he had been taking care of her ever since she was young. Due to that, he had a clear idea of what her temperament was like.

It was precisely out of worry for her that he secretly went to look for Zhang Xuan in order to warn him. He had thought that since it was impossible for them to get together, it would be better to sever their relationship as quickly as possible so as to lessen the pain.

However, when he found out that the little princess could really be together with the person whom she liked, the excitement and delight that he felt was no less than what the two people in question felt.

"T-this... That fellow is actually the young prodigy!" Unable to contain his agitation, Luo Xuanqing punched the air excitedly.

In his head, the image of the young prodigy whom he had hated with a passion slowly overlapped together with Zhang Xuan's figure, and soon, an indescribable sense of joy rippled through his body, washing away all of his fatigue.

The reason he hated the young prodigy previously was because he knew that his younger sister was likely to suffer in this political marriage. Marrying someone whom she did not love, she could come to regret it for life.

However, if Zhang Xuan was the young prodigy, that would no longer be the case. They had mutual feelings for one another, and as an elder brother, it went without saying that his younger sister finding her own happiness was something that was worth celebrating.

"Zhang shi..." Upon learning that the person whom she was engaged with was actually the person whom she fancied, the worries and hesitation that had plagued the young lady in recent days were suddenly swept clean.

Before she knew it, her vision blurred. Tears were already streaming down her face.

With this engagement between them, she would finally be able to be with him openly. There was no need for her to be afraid of anything anymore.

All of a sudden, she remembered something and hurriedly wiped away her tears. She turned to Luo Chengxin and asked nervously, “How... did he react after learning that he’s the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan?”

“It goes without saying that he’s overjoyed! It seems like he has even made a promise with our First Elder that after acknowledging the ancestors of the Zhang Clan, he will immediately head over to ask for your hand in marriage!” Luo Chengxin said.

“He’s heading over to ask for my hand in marriage?” The young lady’s face instantaneously turned bright red, but her brilliant eyes reflected deep expectations for the future ahead.

“I’ll be waiting...”

# 1559 The Whole World in Uproar

As a newly-promoted empire, the Xuanyuan Empire did not stand out among the many empires. However, it was one of the few empires that were extremely successful at attracting talents all over the world, allowing it to develop at an incredible pace.

In just half a year, it had already become one of the more outstanding Tier-2 Empires, well beyond the league of the Myriad Kingdom Alliance.

At this very moment, Empress Mo Yu was seated on her royal throne, assessing the crowd beneath her regally.

“Don’t you all have a lot of opinions usually? Why aren’t any of you speaking today?”

One of the officials stepped forward and exclaimed, “Your Majesty, we can’t afford to interfere recklessly in this matter! If we help Zhang shi, that would be equivalent to opposing the Master Teacher Pavilion! That could very well revert our newly-promoted empire back into a mere kingdom!”

“I disagree with Minister Chen’s viewpoint. Were it not for Zhang shi, our Xuanyuan Kingdom never would have been successfully promoted into an empire. If we remain silent while our benefactor is being insulted by others, how will our people view us?” said another official as he stepped forward.

“I am of the same opinion as Censor Li’s opinion. If it had been another master teacher, we might still have been able to turn a blind eye to the matter, but it’s Zhang shi that we are talking about over here! Back then, he went to great lengths in order to develop our Xuanyuan Kingdom into an empire, so we can’t simply leave him in the lurch now that he’s in need of help! That would chill the hearts of our people!”

“Given our strength, what can we possibly do for Zhang shi? Do you think that our Xuanyuan Empire has the power to oppose a decision made by the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters? We’ll only be destroyed!”

“Even if we can’t do anything much, I don’t want others to view our Xuanyuan Empire as an ungrateful country that forgets its benefactors...”

“Even if you wish to repay the debt, you can’t just drag our entire Xuanyuan Empire into the flames like that!

...

“Enough!”

Looking at the chaos below, Empress Mo Yu abruptly rose to her feet and bellowed, “Zhang shi must be saved; this is my decision. Censor Li, I want you to start a petition using my name and rally everyone in the empire who is indebted to Zhang shi! So what if the other party is the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters? If they have made a mistake, we ought to speak up against them!”

“Yes...” Hearing that the empress had already made her decision, the arguing officials lowered their heads subserviently, not daring to argue anymore.

“Your Majesty!”

Just as Censor Li was about to begin drafting a petition, a fully-armored general rushed into the palace and anxiously reported, “I have just received news that Zhang shi... Zhang shi has managed to resolve the crisis and is fine!”

“You said that Zhang shi is fine?”

Mo Yu hurriedly took the letter that the other party was passing over and opened it. Slowly, her eyes widened in disbelief.

“Zhang shi is actually... the head of one of the Premier Sage Clans, the Zhang Clan?”

“And Zhao Ya is the court chief of the Glacier Plain Court, wielding strength that even Pavilion Master Ren had trouble dealing with? That lass, Wang Ying, has become the leader of

the Spirit Awakener Guild? Zheng Yang is the new Progeny of Combat of the Combat Master Hall, and that fatty, Yuan Tao, had actually become the head of the Yuan Clan... Even Lu Chong has grown into a master soul oracle, capable of standing his ground against 9-star master teachers!”

Mo Yu could not help but wonder in her heart, If I had relinquished my royalty and followed him back then... would I have already become a top-notch expert of the continent, too?

Back then, Zhao Ya, Wang Ying, Zheng Yang, and the others had been far weaker than her, not even coming close to being a match for her. Yet, in the short span of a single year, they had become figures whom she could only look up to.

She had known all along that it was only a matter of time before someone of Zhang Shi's caliber rose to the top, but who could have thought that even his students would become experts standing at the zenith of the continent as well?

It's a pity, but it seems like I have already missed my opportunity to do so... Mo Yu lowered her head with a hint of sorrow in the depths of her eyes.

She had viewed being the empress of the Xuanyuan Empire as a great honor, but it was becoming apparent that even this honor might not come close to being a humble student behind Zhang Xuan.

Mo Yu shook her head and muttered, “It looks the Master Teacher Continent will be Zhang Shi's in the future.”

...

White clouds drifted amid the mountain range.

By a mountain stream, a young lady was seated atop a small boulder with a worried look in her eyes.

Yu Fei-er.

Shortly after leaving Qingyuan City, Yu Fei-er stumbled by 9-star Master Teacher Ji Ruochen and became her student.

“Junior, our teacher told me to bring this letter to you!”

A young man suddenly flew over from the distance and placed an envelope in her hand.

Yu Fei-er anxiously tore it open, and upon swiftly browsing through it, her body stiffened in shock.

“If he’s the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, doesn’t that mean that...”

“Indeed, Junior! Zhang Xuan is indeed a person of great talent. Not only does he possess extraordinary abilities, all of his students are outstanding. Even our teacher is filled with respect and praise for him!” the young man exclaimed in agitation. “It won’t be long before his name is known throughout the entire continent!”

“Y-yes, you’re right...” Yu Fei-er replied with a dazed look on her face, seemingly contemplating something deeply.

...

In the Jiang Clan, a middle-aged man turned around with a flabbergasted look on his face after hearing an elder’s report.

“You said that Zhang Xuan singlehandedly fended off the pursuers from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, and in the blink of an eye, he became the head of the Zhang Clan. Furthermore, his students are also powerhouses of the continent, possessing great power, too?”

“That’s right, clan head!”

“Prepare some gifts and send them over to the Zhang Clan to congratulate them for finding their son... Wait, they are intending to head to the Luo Clan to ask for the little princess’ hand in marriage, right? Deliver the presents straight to the Luo Clan and relay my blessings to them... No, that won’t do either.” The middle-aged man waved his hand grandly. “I shall make a trip personally!”

...

In the Mu Clan, Mu Yuan had been kneeling outside the manor, not moving in the slightest.

In order to be accepted back into his clan, he had been kneeling on the spot for ten days straight, but not a single

person had bothered to pay him any heed.

Even when he tried to beg with the butler, the latter had simply disregarded him.

He had never faced such treatment back when he was still a genius from the Mu Clan.

However, he could not complain about it. He knew that he was the one who had done wrong back then. As long as the Mu Clan was willing to take him back, putting aside ten days, he would wait for as long as he needed.

Enduring the fatigue in his body, Mu Yuan gritted his teeth tightly.

Jiya!

Just as he was about to reach his limit, the massive doors of the Mu Clan suddenly creaked open, and the head of the Mu Clan rushed out.

“Quick, get up...”

The clan head quickly walked over to Mu Yuan to support him up before feeding him a recovery pill.

As soon as he swallowed the pill, Mu Yuan immediately felt incredible energy coursing through his body. In an instant, the fatigue that he had accumulated over the past few days vanished without a trace.

“This is... a grade-9 pill?” Mu Yuan jolted in alarm.

Even when he was still a genius of the Mu Clan, he had not been qualified to consume such pills. Yet, after his heinous deeds, the head of the Mu Clan had still fed such a pill to him.

“Mu Yuan, I have looked through your experiences over those years, and I noticed that you were under Zhang shi’s care for some time... Alright, I’ll allow you to return to the Mu Clan and grant you a suitable position within the clan! Zhang shi will be heading to the Luo Clan to ask for the little princess’ hand in marriage, so I want you to head over in representation of our Mu Clan and present him with our congratulatory gifts!” the clan head said with a smile.



“Zhang shi? Which Zhang shi?” Mu Yuan was a little overwhelmed by the situation.

“Who else could I be referring to other than Zhang Xuan? You probably haven’t heard yet. He’s actually the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, as well as its clan head!” the clan head replied.

“Z-Zhang shi has become the head of the Zhang Clan, and he’s actually the young prodigy at that?” Mu Yuan was stunned.

All of a sudden, he understood the reason behind the clan head’s abrupt change in attitude. It turned out that the turning point of the matter was his link with Zhang shi!

It was Zhang shi who had changed the course of his destiny.

...

The same scene was playing out among most powers in the top echelons of the Master Teacher Continent.

On that day, there was a name that was imprinted in the minds of those all across the Master Teacher Continent.

Everyone had come to know of the master teacher named Zhang Xuan.

Some were delighted to learn of the matter, some despaired after hearing about it, and some were simply nonchalant, but without a doubt, his name would continue to resound on the Master Teacher Continent for many years to come!

# 1560 I Didn't Hear Clearly

Seeing the newly repaired buildings and halls before him, Sword Saint Xing exclaimed with a smile, "We're home!"

It should have been the same Zhang Clan as before, but it did not seem that way to Zhang Xuan anymore.

A few days ago, when he came over, the only thought on his mind had been to teach the young prodigy a lesson and give the Zhang Clan a piece of his mind. However, when he learned that the young prodigy was actually him and the Zhang Clan that he had hated all along was actually his clan... Honestly, he still was not too sure how he should feel about the matter.

"If only I'd found you earlier, this mess wouldn't have occurred..." Recalling the tragedy that he had witnessed when he returned to the Zhang Clan back then, Sword Saint Xing could not help but shake his head.

With Zhang Xuan's current standing, no member of the Zhang Clan would dare oppose him anymore. However, due to the events before, it was inevitable that most members of the Zhang Clan would have some reservations or even bear hostility toward him.

"Isn't this fine, too?" Sword Saint Meng harrumphed coldly. "Your Zhang Clan has grown arrogant over the years, acting all high and mighty just because of that number one Sage Clan title. I have always despised that of the Zhang Clan! I'd say that our Xuan-er did well stirring them up a little; that will make them learn that the bloodline that they are so proud of is not even worth mentioning!"

Sword Saint Xing knew better than to argue with his hot-tempered wife at this moment, so he could only shake his head helplessly and concede defeat. "Yes, my dear. You are always right..."

With Sword Saint Xing at the lead, the group managed to proceed ahead without any impediment, and very soon, they

arrived at the Zhang Clan's Conference Hall.

This was where Zhang Xuan had clashed with the First Elder several days ago. The buildings that had been destroyed in that encounter had already been repaired, and they looked exactly the same as before, betraying no signs of the devastation that had occurred just a few days ago.

Noticing the doubtful look on Zhang Xuan's face, Sword Saint Xing discreetly explained through zhenqi telepathy. "Your mother has rampaged in the Zhang Clan a few times in the past, destroying quite a number of buildings each time. For that, the Zhang Clan has specially employed a group of landscapers to conduct emergency repairs whenever required."

Hearing that his mother was actually a harbinger of destruction as well, Zhang Xuan's face twitched slightly.

To be honest, the destruction that he caused was always circumstantial. Unlike his mother's intentional actions, it was always due to a series of coincidences coming together in an unfortunate manner that resulted in tragedy for him.

"Welcoming the return of our deputy clan head and the young prodigy!"

As soon as they stepped into the hall, Zhang Xuan heard a voice echoing from within. Lifting his head, he saw the elders of the Zhang Clan standing within, waiting patiently for their arrival.

Sword Saint Xing nodded to acknowledge the greeting before walking straight to the main seat.

Under normal circumstances, with Yang Shi's standing, he should have been accorded the highest seat in the room. However, due to him acknowledging Zhang Xuan as his senior, that put the Xingmeng Sword Saints a generation above him, so he could only make do with the seat at the very back.

Sword Saint Xing looked at the elders before him and said, "I believe that all of you should have heard by now that Zhang Xuan is the young prodigy of our Zhang Clan, who went missing twenty years ago. Since he has finally returned to our Zhang Clan, I'll have to trouble you all to prepare the tributes

and make arrangements for the acknowledgement ritual. Tomorrow morning, we'll first pay respects to the ancestors before holding the inauguration ceremony!"

"Inauguration ceremony?"

"Clan head, do you mean to say that you intend to pass down the clan head position to the young prodigy tomorrow?"

"Isn't that a little too fast?"

The elders were caught off guard by the sudden announcement.

With the return of the young prodigy, it was only a matter of time before Sword Saint Xing passed down his position to him. However... this was a little too rushed!

Zhang Xuan had only just returned to the Zhang Clan, so he was unlikely to know anything about the current state of affairs surrounding it. Was he really in a good position to be making the final calls in the Zhang Clan? If anything, it seemed like he would only lead the Zhang Clan into a spiral of decline!

Someone from the crowd suddenly bellowed, "I oppose it!"

The gazes in the room swiftly turned toward the source of the objection, and following that, the First Elder Zhang Wuheng stepped out from the crowd.

Upon seeing that it was him, Sword Saint Xing frowned.

He had ordered Zhang Wuheng to return to the Zhang Clan to accept his punishment, but who could have thought that he would actually attend this Elder Conference?

"Speak! What's the reason behind your objection?" Sword Saint Xing asked with narrowed eyes.

It had not been easy for him to get his son back, and he was planning on making up the twenty years of absence to his son. Yet, who could have thought that someone would oppose his decision at this point in time? This made him extremely displeased.

“Clan head, I don’t mean to be rude, but the position of clan head has always been inherited by the offspring with the purest bloodline. Zhang Xuan might be your son and the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, but his Zhang Clan bloodline is already undetectable. Under such circumstances, I believe that he’s unqualified to inherit the position of clan head,” Zhang Wuheng said calmly.

“His Zhang Clan bloodline is undetectable?”

“Does that mean that the blood of the Zhang Clan doesn’t run in his veins? First Elder, what does that mean?”

The other elders were taken aback by the news.

Back then, Zhang Wuchen had moved discreetly under Zhang Wuheng’s orders to test Zhang Xuan’s bloodline in the Blood Reservoir, so other than the two of them and the Xingmeng Sword Saints, no one else was aware of the matter.

“Elder Wuchen, why don’t you report the results of your investigation to everyone here?” Zhang Wuheng gestured grandly.

“Yes, First Elder!” Zhang Wuchen walked to the front of the crowd before continuing. “When Zhang Xuan was in our Zhang Clan a few days ago, I had a hunch that he could be the young prodigy, so I secretly took him into the Blood Reservoir to test his bloodline. However...”

Very soon, Zhang Wuchen went through the details of what he had seen in the Blood Reservoir.

“This...”

“Without the Zhang Clan bloodline, he can’t even be considered a member of the Zhang Clan! How can such a person be our clan head?”

...

A huge uproar broke out amid the crowd after hearing the ins and outs of the matter.

They had tested the bloodline of the young prodigy when he was born, and the sheer purity of his bloodline shocked the entire clan. It was in view of this that they had unanimously

nominated him to be their clan head despite his young age. However, when he returned twenty years later, there was not the slightest drop of the Zhang Clan bloodline in his veins. How could they still accept him as their clan head?

“The Zhang Clan bloodline is the very symbol of authority in our Zhang Clan. Since our clan head has already verified the matter, I don’t doubt that Zhang Xuan is indeed an offspring of our Zhang Clan... However, if he has lost his Zhang Clan bloodline, I’m afraid that it would be contrary to the teachings of our ancestors to make him our clan head!”

Zhang Wuheng clasped his fist and bowed deeply. “I am opposing this for the sake of our Zhang Clan! Clan head, I beseech you to reconsider your decision!”

“You...” Sword Saint Xing’s complexion turned incomparably awful after hearing Zhang Wuheng’s words.

After all the trouble that he had gone through to find his son, he had thought that everything would swiftly fall back into place. Yet, who could have thought that Zhang Wuheng would be able to stop him so easily?

The reason that Zhang Wuheng had given was simple but powerful. There was indeed a rule in the Zhang Clan’s teachings stating that only offspring who had achieved a certain level of purity in their bloodline would be qualified to become the clan head.

Considering how his son did not have the slightest bit of the Zhang Clan bloodline running through his veins, there was no legitimacy to him becoming the clan head.

“What do you propose then?” Sword Saint Xing spat coldly as he stared piercingly at Zhang Wuheng.

“What I propose is very simple. We’ll nominate the offspring whose bloodline has reached the mark to become our next clan head!” Zhang Wuheng replied with a grand wave of his hand.

“Even my bloodline hasn’t reached the level of purity required to become the clan head! Who else in the clan could possibly have met the mark?” Sword Saint Xing narrowed his eyes coldly.

It was apparent that Zhang Wuheng was intentionally making things difficult for them.

He currently possessed the purest bloodline in the Zhang Clan, with the exception of his son twenty years ago, but still, he had not reached the level of purity required to be inaugurated as a true clan head. Given so, who else could possibly meet the mark?

Clearly, Zhang Wuheng was cooking up this fuss just to stop Zhang Xuan from becoming the next clan head!

“Clan head, just because your bloodline hasn’t reached the required level of purity doesn’t mean that no one else’s has! I have already found someone in the clan whose bloodline purity reaches the mark and, perhaps, far exceeds it even!” Zhang Wuheng burst into hearty laughter as he raised his hand and gestured. “Come in!”

Hu!

Following which, a figure slowly walked into the hall.

“I have already tested his bloodline, and I am certain that it meets the mark required to become the clan head. In fact, in terms of sheer purity, he’s on par with even the young prodigy back then. If he isn’t qualified to become the clan head, no one else is!”

Zhang Wuheng raised his hand and shrouded the figure with his energy. Following which, a brilliant burst of light shone from the figure.

“What formidable purity this is...”

Everyone in the hall narrowed their eyes in astonishment.

Even amid the blinding light, they could feel that the energy harnessed in the other party’s bloodline far exceeded theirs, almost as if the searing sun.

Even Sword Saint Xing could not help but frown upon seeing this.

He could sense that the other party’s bloodline was far stronger than his, such that they were not even on the same level as one another.

“His bloodline has exceeded every single one of us here, and I believe none of you should have any doubt that he has already met the mark required to become the clan head. I presume that none of you will have any objections to him becoming the clan head, right?” Zhang Wuheng gazed at the astounded crowd and laughed triumphantly.

But at this moment, Zhang Xuan suddenly spoke up. “Come here.”

Upon seeing Zhang Xuan interjecting at this critical moment, Zhang Wuheng lashed out furiously. “Zhang Xuan, you might be the young prodigy, but without the slightest droplet of our Zhang Clan bloodline in your veins, I’m afraid that you don’t have a say here. Our Zhang Clan is currently in the midst of nominating our next clan head, so I’ll have to ask an outsider like you to hold your tongue...”

But before he could finish his words, the figure who had just walked in hurriedly strode over to Zhang Xuan and kneeled to the floor.

“Zhang Jiuxiao pays respect to teacher!”

The figure who had just entered the hall was none other than Zhang Jiuxiao!

“Un, rise!”

Zhang Xuan reached out to fondle Zhang Jiuxiao’s head lightly before turning an amused gaze toward Zhang Wuheng. With an impassive voice, he asked, “First Elder, can you repeat what you said earlier? I’m afraid that I didn’t catch your words clearly.”



# 1561 Zhang Xuan's Birth

## Name

Pu!

Zhang Wuheng shook his head in disbelief as he staggered backward. He felt as if thunder was rumbling ceaselessly in his mind, threatening to blow his head up.

He knew that Zhang Jiuxiao was on friendly terms with Zhang Xuan, but he did not think that the latter would actually be Zhang Xuan's student!

The Combat Master Hall had finally found a talented genius worthy of becoming its next hall master—Zhang Xuan's student.

The Poison Hall had finally found a person who possessed the Innate Poison Body—Zhang Xuan's student.

The Spirit Awakener Guild had finally discovered a genius who managed to clear the Spirit Awakener Tower—Zhang Xuan's student.

The Glacier Plain Court had finally stumbled upon a prodigy blessed with the Pure Yin Body—Zhang Xuan's student.

The Yuan Clan had located an offspring who possessed exceptionally pure Emperor's Bloodline—Zhang Xuan's student.

And as if all of that was not enough...

How many years did it take the Zhang Clan to birth an offspring with a bloodline of such purity, and that offspring was freaking Zhang Xuan's student as well?

Was everyone talented in the Master Teacher Continent Zhang Xuan's student?

Could things get any more ridiculous than that?

“This...” Zhang Wuheng was not the only one whose mind was on the verge of exploding at that moment. Sword Saint Xing nearly fell from his chair after seeing Zhang Jiuxiao’s actions as well. “Xuan-er, he... is your student, too?”

“Hahahahaha!”

Before Zhang Xuan could reply, Sword Saint Meng had already burst into frenzied laughter.

It was apparent that Zhang Wuheng wanted to exact vengeance for the humiliation that he had suffered, but that narrow mind of his would probably never have been able to fathom that the trump card that he had prepared would actually turn out to be her son’s student!

With his knees still on the ground, Zhang Jiuxiao glanced at the elders and declared solemnly, “I was just an offspring of the side family who possessed a humble bloodline purity. If not for my teacher refining my bloodline, I wouldn’t even be qualified to practice the cultivation techniques of the Zhang Clan!”

“Refining your bloodline?”

“So, it’s all because of the young prodigy refining your bloodline that your bloodline became this pure?”

Once again, a huge commotion broke out amid the elders.

In truth, due to the tournament back then, most of them had been aware that Zhang Jiuxiao possessed extraordinarily pure bloodline. However, they had not expected his bloodline to not be innate but refined postnatally.

“That’s right!” Zhang Jiuxiao nodded.

“Is it really possible to refine the purity of one’s bloodline?”

“How in the world was it done?”

“I heard that not only is the young prodigy a powerful expert himself, his students are also formidable figures. The head of the Combat Master Hall, the chief of the Glacier Plain Court... In fact, even Yang shi is his junior! I suppose it shouldn’t be too difficult for a person like him to be able to refine our bloodline.”

“That does make some sense.”

Zhang Jiuxiao’s words caused the eyes around to light up in excitement.

The hierarchy within Sage Clans was centered around the purity of one’s bloodline—it was both a symbol of status and power. If the young prodigy really possessed a way to refine their bloodline, the prowess of the Zhang Clan would grow by leaps and bounds, possibly reaching a level unthinkable to them in the past.

Ignoring the discussion among the crowd, Zhang Xuan turned to Sword Saint Xing and replied, “He’s the last student I’ve accepted...”

His intention for accepting Zhang Jiuxiao as his student back then was to deal with the young prodigy, but who could have thought that he would turn out to be the young prodigy himself?

“This...” Hearing the confirmation from his son and seeing the deep respect and admiration in Zhang Jiuxiao’s eyes, Sword Saint Xing burst into laughter. “Zhang Wuheng, you said that my son doesn’t have a droplet of the Zhang Clan bloodline in his veins and is unqualified to be the head of the Zhang Clan, right?”

“I...” Zhang Wuheng’s face flushed crimson.

“Clan head, Zhang Wuheng has disregarded the interests for the Zhang Clan over his private grudge. I suggest we strip him of his position as the First Elder and lock him up!”

“Indeed! How dare he cast doubt over the legitimacy of the young prodigy just to fulfill his personal interests? This is unacceptable!”

“I propose that we send him down to the Subterranean Gallery to have him reflect on his own mistakes!”

...

In the blink of an eye, all those who had supported Zhang Wuheng a moment ago turned their backs on him.

The ability to refine the Zhang Clan bloodline effectively meant that the young prodigy was able to dictate the distribution of power within the Zhang Clan. No one in the Zhang Clan would be foolish enough to oppose him.

As such, even if Zhang Xuan's bloodline had not met the required level of purity to become the clan head, just his ability to refine the bloodline of others was enough to win him a unanimous vote from the elders to become the next clan head!

“Men, take Zhang Wuheng away!” Sword Saint Xing waved his hand before turning his gaze back to the crowd. “Does anyone else have any objections to my son becoming the next clan head?”

“The young prodigy was the head of our Zhang Clan from the very start! It's only a matter of affirming his title and announcing it to the world!”

“I concur!”

Soon, all of the elders had clasped their fists and bowed down as a symbol of submission.

Seeing that there was no more opposition, Sword Saint Xing nodded in satisfaction before instructing, “Very well! I need all of you to coordinate together to prepare for the ritual and inauguration ceremony tomorrow. Also, make sure not to speak of anything that has happened here to others. I won't hesitate to brand anyone who tattles a traitor, and all of you should be aware of the eventual fate of traitors!”

If news was leaked that his son possessed the ability to refine bloodlines, it would surely cause a massive uproar in the Master Teacher Continent. Naturally, he did not wish for any unnecessary trouble to come to his son.

“We understand!” the elders replied resoundingly before leaving the hall.

“Jiuxiao, you can leave as well. I want you to make full use of your bloodline to advance your cultivation over the next few days. Once your cultivation surpasses that of the First Elder,

you'll be able to take over as the clan head!" Zhang Xuan instructed.

Even though he would prefer to pass the position on to Zhang Jiuxiao right away, the latter was still a little too weak at the moment. It would be difficult for him to bear the reputation of the Zhang Clan and establish his dominance over other powers.

"Yes, Teacher!" Zhang Jiuxiao nodded before backing out of the hall.

Hearing that his son was intending to pass the position of clan head down to Zhang Jiuxiao, a hint of panic surfaced in Sword Saint Xing's eyes. "Xuan-er, you..."

"It's just a clan head position, I don't have any desire for it. The only reason I would want this identity is to ask for the little princess' hand in marriage from a better position. Beyond that, anyone who wants the position can become the clan head for all I care..." Zhang Xuan shrugged nonchalantly.

To be honest, he really did not think much about being the head of the Zhang Clan.

In fact, he felt that it would be more trouble than it was worth. Since that was the case, he might as well toss it down to Zhang Jiuxiao.

"But..."

Sword Saint Xing was just about to protest when Sword Saint Meng abruptly interjected. "My son is someone who will achieve great things in the future! What does the clan head position count as? Only a person as inept as you would think so highly of it..."

"Cough cough!" Seeing that his mother had begun putting down his father again, Zhang Xuan shook his head helplessly and interjected with a cough.

With most of the problems ahead of them resolved, Zhang Xuan suddenly recalled the various doubts that he had regarding his identity, so he asked, "Since I am your son and the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, why would I end up in

the Tianxuan Kingdom? Also, why isn't there any of the Zhang Clan bloodline flowing through my veins?"

This was the matter that had left him baffled for a very long time.

There was no doubt that the Zhang Clan was powerful, and as the top genius of the Zhang Clan, a Connate Saint at that, how did he end up in a place as remote as the Tianxuan Kingdom, where there was not even a Master Teacher Pavilion?

Not to mention, it did not make sense for him to be Sword Saint Xing's son when he did not have the Zhang Clan bloodline in him!

Also, if he was a Connate Saint at birth, how could his cultivation only have been at Fighter 3-dan Zhenqi realm when he first transcended over to this body?

"It's a long story... Back then, when you were born, a brilliant aurora filled the sky. A lofty aura descended from the heavens, and the tablets of the predecessors swiftly bowed in submission. Even Kong shi's sculpture rose into the air as a gesture of recognition. It was due to these phenomena that the entire world came to know of you as the young prodigy who possessed the purest Zhang Clan bloodline..." Sword Saint Xing sighed deeply as he spoke of the past.

"Even Kong shi's sculpture rose into the air? Is that why I'm called Zhang Xuan[1]?" Zhang Xuan asked excitedly.

"Ah? No, of course not. Your birth name isn't Zhang Xuan," Sword Saint Xing said. "If you had retained the name that we gave you, we would have found you ages ago..."

"What's my birth name then?"

"This..." Sword Saint Xing's face reddened. "It might be better for you not to hear it..."

"Is there something inappropriate about my birth name?" Zhang Xuan was slightly bewildered by Sword Saint Xing's reaction.

"It was with the agitation from witnessing Kong shi's sculpture rising into the air that inspired your father to name

you so. However, it doesn't even come close to sounding as nice as Zhang Xuan," Sword Saint Meng grumbled furiously by the side

"Your name is... Zhang Diaofei[2]!"

[1] Xuan has the meaning of floating in midair.

[2] Zhang Diaofei literally means Flying Sculpture. To give an analogy of how it sounds in Chinese, it would be someone equivalent to a parent naming their daughter 'Squirrey' after seeing some squirrels or naming their son 'Fyrework' after seeing fireworks.

# 1562 Sword Saint Xing's Name

“Pu!”

Zhang Xuan spat out a mouthful of saliva, and he nearly cried on the spot.

Zhang Diaofei... Diaofei, like in the sense of hanging on a noose[1]?

Is this a name that a human should have?

As a father, is it really alright to name your son so carelessly?

“Appalling, right? Back then, I ignored him for days on end over the name that he gave you!” Sword Saint Meng harrumphed indignantly.

“It’s not as if you didn’t know the circumstances surrounding him! There’s a superstition that the more down-to-earth one’s name is, the more resilient one will be. I was also praying for an auspicious omen here! Besides, it’s just a birth name. We could always give him a more decent official name later on!” Sword Saint Xing retorted with an awkward smile.

Often, children who were born with poor health or natural defects would be given awful sounding names such as Gou Dan[2], Gou Sheng[3], Mao Dan[4], or Er Pi[5]. It was believed that the more awful sounding a child’s name was, the more tenacious they would be.

Outsiders might have believed that his son had a bright future ahead of him, but Sword Saint Xing knew very well that was not the case. The least he could do for his son was give him an awful sounding name in hopes of bringing him luck to get through that difficult phase.

Besides, it was only a birth name. Once they had gotten past the difficult phase, they could simply give him a more decent official name, and the others would slowly forget his birth name with time.



“You still dare speak about official names! Why don’t you tell our son what the official name that you have chosen for him is?” Sword Saint Meng harrumphed coldly.

“This...” Sword Saint Xing scratched his head embarrassedly, seemingly finding it difficult to speak of the matter.

Staring at Sword Saint Xing intently, Zhang Xuan asked, “What is it?”

“Your official name is... Anbang!” Sword Saint Xing eventually caved in under the piercing gaze of his wife and his son. “Zhang Anbang[6]!”

“Pu!”

Zhang Xuan spat out another mouthful of saliva, nearly choking himself to death in the process.

This name did not sound as awful as Diaofei, but still, it was too old-fashioned!

“It really doesn’t sound awful at all! I am Zhenxing[7] while you are Anbang[8], how fitting!”

“Zhenxing? Your name is Zhang Zhenxing?” Zhang Xuan’s face twitched upon hearing those words.

He knew that the title ‘Xingmeng Sword Saints’ was derived from taking a character each from their names. All along, he had thought that his father had some kind of domineering name, but who would have thought it was... Zhang Zhenxing?

It was even more old-fashioned than Anbang!

Zhang Xuan clutched his forehead in despair.

It was fortunate that he had gone missing while he was still young. Otherwise, just the thought of having to introduce himself to Zhang Anbang to friends and foes alike... he would not have been able to live with the shame!

“I’ll just stick with Zhang Xuan. I think it sounds alright...” Zhang Xuan shook his head, firmly refusing the notion of using the names that Sword Saint Xing had decided for him.

Getting back to the topic at hand, Zhang Xuan asked, “Given that I was born with an exceptionally powerful bloodline, not

to mention the fact that I'm a Connate Saint, it would make sense that the Zhang Clan would protect me carefully. Why would I..."

Hearing Zhang Xuan's question, Sword Saint Xing fell into a moment of silence, unsure of how he should explain the matter to his son. A moment later, he stood up and said, "Dear, Yang shi, I think it would be better for me to talk to Xuan-er privately about this matter."

"Alright then..."

Yang shi and Sword Saint Meng nodded in agreement.

"Alright, follow me!" Sword Saint Xing told Zhang Xuan before leading the way forward.

Soon, the two of them arrived in a massive hall.

The hall was a dark and gloomy, devoid of any light. There was a unique seal shrouding the area.

Sword Saint Xing walked right up to the seal and placed his palm lightly on it.

Hu la!

The torches within the hall abruptly burst into flames, lighting up the interior.

Zhang Xuan quickly looked ahead, but instead of a vast hall, what had appeared before him was a narrow passageway with innumerable relief carvings.

Walking into the passageway, Sword Saint Xing stopped before one of the relief carvings.

It depicted a white-beard elder battling ferociously against hordes of Otherworldly Demons. It was an intense battle with incredible surges of energy bursting forth from here and there, and it seemed almost as if the world would be burned down.

Behind the elder was a group of powerless civilians. If the elder fell, there was little doubt that the Otherworldly Demons would move on to slaughter them all.

"This elder over here is the first-generation ancestor of our Zhang Clan, and he's also our very first clan head. He's one of

the few cultivators who managed to advance his cultivation to the level of Ancient Sage in his time, and he fought tenaciously in a total of thirty-seven deadly wars for mankind. In each war, he drove himself to the very limits, never hesitating to risk his life to strike a heavy blow on the Otherworldly Demons. If not for him, the Zhang Clan wouldn't have survived the tragic war back then, and at least half of mankind wouldn't have made it through the war. There's no doubt that he's a hero among us!" Sword Saint Xing explained with deep respect in his eyes.

Zhang Xuan nodded.

If not for the rise of countless hot-blooded heroes during that dark era, mankind never would have enjoyed the peace and prosperity that it had in the current age.

He had heard of the affairs of the founder of the Zhang Clan as well. While his radiance was diminished by the presence of Kong Shi back in that era, there was no doubt that he was a highly talented man whose very presence brought his comrades courage back in that era of turmoil.

With just a sword in hand, he had barged into the camps of the Otherworldly Demons and slaughtered many of their emperors. All in all, the 9-star master teachers that he had rescued from the jaws of death numbered at least twenty!

There was even on occasion when the Otherworldly Demons launched a sudden assault, catching everyone off guard. He had fought desperately for three days straight, single-handedly keeping them at bay until reinforcements arrived, thus saving the lives of millions of people.

"This valiant middle-aged man over here is the second clan head of our Zhang Clan. He also managed to reach Ancient Sage, and all in all, he fought in more than a hundred battles with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Due to the severe injuries that he sustained over the years, he ended up dying a premature death. It was said that even at his time of death, there was a finger of the Otherworldly Demon buried deep in his chest, symbolizing the courage and tenacity that he had displayed in protecting mankind..."

“This is the third clan head of our Zhang Clan. In his early years, he ventured deep into the Subterranean Gallery, only to have his hand severed in the midst of a battle. He decisively used the talons of a saint beast in place of his hand in order to continue the fight, and eventually, he created a unique battle technique based on that...”

“This is the fourth clan head of our Zhang Clan...”

...

“This is the ninth clan head of our Zhang Clan...”

Every single carving along the passageway was a monument of a hero in their era.

“In the tens of thousands of years since Kong shi departed from the Master Teacher Continent, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe has launched many attacks, only to be forced back each time. This isn’t just the credit of the Master Teacher Pavilion and Combat Master Hall; our Zhang Clan has played a vital role as well! In fact, it can be said that our title as the number one Sage Clan was forged through our flesh and blood!” Sword Saint Xing said.

Zhang Xuan clenched his fists tightly.

Looking at the relief carvings as he listened to the stories of the past, he could imagine just how precarious a situation mankind had been in back in those eras.

The predecessors had unhesitatingly sacrificed everything that they had in order to forge an era of prosperity for mankind.

All along, he had thought that the Zhang Clan had abused its position as the number one Sage Clan to force others to do its bidding, leaving him a little skeptical about its title. However, upon seeing these relief carvings, he realized that the Zhang Clan’s position on the Master Teacher Continent was derived not just from their strength but the massive contribution that they had made as well.

“But around ten thousand years ago, the world underwent a massive change, and all of a sudden, no one was able to make a breakthrough to Ancient Sage anymore. It didn’t take long

for people to realize that mankind might have reached the end of the line.”

With a grim look on his face, Sword Saint Xing explained, “In order to fend off the Otherworldly Demons so as to preserve the heritage of mankind, the Ancient Sages of that generation made an agreement to use a special temporal method to hibernate. They would only be awoken when a battle broke out, and after defeating their enemies, they would return to their hibernation. This was probably a life worse than death, but for the sake of mankind, they willingly chose it!”

“This...” Zhang Xuan widened his mouth in astonishment.

He had heard from Yang shi that there were human Ancient Sage cultivators who had survived the ages through using some sort of temporal secret art, but he still could not help but respect them for the sacrifices that they had made for mankind.

As Ancient Sages, they stood at the very peak of the Master Teacher Continent, enjoying unparalleled honor and prestige. As long as they willed it, they could have dominated that era with their strength and obtained everything that they wanted. Yet, for the future generations, they chose to hibernate so that they could protect mankind as long as they could.

[1] 雕 and 吊 are both homonyms that are pronounced as Diao, but one means ‘flying sculpture’ while the other means ‘hanging on a noose’

[2] Dog Guts

[3] Leftover dog food

[4] Balut

[5] Thick-skinned

[6] Anbang basically means ‘peace and stability to the country’, a weirdly patriotic and old-fashioned name that hardly anyone uses anymore.

[7] Zhenxing means to bring a country to greatness.

[8] Anbang means to bring peace and stability to a country.

# 1563 Origin of the Innate Fetal Poison

“Such a decision condemned them to an endless cycle of battle, slaughter, and pain... But in exchange for a spark of hope for mankind, they were willing to make such a sacrifice!” Sword Saint Xing’s eyes reddened a little as he spoke.

“It is thanks to their protection that mankind has been able to develop stably over the past ten thousand years. Humans are still able to live in peace in huge cities instead of being enslaved by others!

“Based on what I know, there’s an Ancient Sage who was only five hundred years old when he went into hibernation. He still had at least a good thousand year ahead of him, and more importantly, he had just wedded another Ancient Sage during that period of time... However, when he came to learn that it was impossible to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage anymore, he decisively used the temporal secret art on himself and fell into a deep sleep.

“Over the thousands of years, the only occasions that he got to see his wife from afar was when war broke out, but even so, they never found a chance to say a single word to one another. What was even more tragic was that during a major battle five thousand years ago, his wife was cornered by three Otherworldly Demonic Emperors... In order to save her, he set his life force aflame, and eventually, he departed from the world with his loved one in hand.

“Had he not chosen such a life, he and his wife would have had a good thousand years ahead of them. They would have been able to roam the world freely, enjoying a carefree and blissful life. Perhaps, they would also have had many students and children. Yet, in order to defend mankind, he gave up all of that!

“There’s also an Ancient Sage whose daughter had just been born when she made the decision to go into hibernation. Her daughter wasn’t too talented, such that she didn’t even managed to reach Saint realm. On one occasion, she sustained grievous wounds in a battle with an enemy, causing her to die before she could even reach a hundred years old... There was no war during that period of time, so the Ancient Sage remained asleep. To the day that her daughter had died, she had not been able to see her!

“When she was finally woken, she learned that her daughter had already been dead for dozens of years, and she was silent for a very long while before charging solemnly into the battlefield... Eventually, she met her end in that very battlefield...”

Sword Saint Xing could not help but tremble a little as he recounted the sacrifices that the predecessors had made in order to protect mankind.

There was a long moment of silence before Zhang Xuan asked, “Does the temporal secret art of the Ancient Sages halt their time, or do they continue ageing?”

This secret art reminded Zhang Xuan of the cryonics technology in his previous world. The concept of cryonics technology was centered around freezing a human body to seal its current condition, thus allowing the possibility of resuscitation in the future.

But no matter how well a person’s body was sealed using cryonics technology, there would still be gradual wear and tear over time. Even if someone was successfully resuscitated in the future, there was no way that their body could function as well as it did before.

“The secret art of the Ancient Sages allows one’s lifespan to be extended significantly, but even in the state of hibernation, their vitality will still slowly seep away. In other words, they will continue to age even while they are in hibernation, just that the ageing process is slowed considerably! While it sounds complicated, the concept behind it is actually rather simple. To put it in other words, they are sleeping in a

dimension where the flow of time is slower than the real world!

“One year within the dimension is equivalent to ten years outside!” Sword Saint Xing said grimly. “However, even with a one to ten ratio, they still age. The passing of ten thousand years means that they have already aged a thousand years.

“Even the younger Ancient Sages during the time of the hibernation are already reaching the end of their lives, not to mention that the frequent battles with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe have caused destructive killing intent to seep into their body, thus hastening the ageing process!

“The Ancient Sages who chose to go into hibernation then are already approaching their final years... The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe has yet to successfully overcome the seals and launch a mass invasion, but once we lose the strength of the Ancient Sages, it will only be a matter of time before we are annihilated!”

Zhang Xuan fell into deep contemplation.

To make an analogy, Ancient Sages were somewhat equivalent to the atomic bombs in his previous life. Even without using one, the very possession of such a weapon deterred enemies from running amok.

The Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had been eyeing the Master Teacher Continent for many years, lying patiently in wait for the humans to expose an opening for them to strike.

In this matter, the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe held the definitive advantage due to their longer lifespan. Even if they did not go into hibernation, they would still be able to easily outlive the hibernating human cultivators.

This was the fundamental difference in their constitution. There was nothing that could make up for it.

“Twenty years ago, a spatial disturbance was detected in Qufu, and a mirage of the Temple of Confucius surfaced, which provoked the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. They began amassing their armies in the Subterranean Galleries, heralding an impending war. But mankind already didn’t have many



Ancient Sages left, so the final Ancient Sage of our Zhang Clan had no choice but to awaken and join the fray!” Sword Saint Xing shook his head grimly.

“The final Ancient Sage? How many Ancient Sages of the Zhang Clan went into hibernation back then?” Zhang Xuan couldn’t help but ask.

“There was a total of nine of them, but... the many years of war caused them to either pass away or go into eternal sleep. As a result, we only have one living Ancient Sage to date, and he’s the 27th Clan Head, Zhang Hongtian!”

“There’s only one Ancient Sage remaining out of nine?” Zhang Xuan’s eyebrows shot up.

Nine Ancient Sages—that had probably been the entirety of the Zhang Clan’s top-tier fighting prowess then. It seemed that the glory the Zhang Clan enjoyed was cemented by many sacrifices.

“Indeed. The war twenty years ago was indescribably treacherous. Ancestor Zhang Hongtian sustained grievous wounds from battle, putting him on the verge of death. There was only one way to save him, and that was to infuse even purer Zhang Clan bloodline into him!”

Talking up to this point, Sword Saint Xing’s face visibly stiffened a little as his eyes started taking on a tint of red. “Back then, there was no one in the clan whose bloodline reached the mark to save Ancestor Zhang Hongtian... Only you, who were still in your mother’s womb back then, reached the mark!”

“Me?” Zhang Xuan’s body jolted.

He could finally see why his father had brought him here.

“There were only two options back then. Firstly, if we chose not to use your bloodline, Ancestor Zhang Hongtian would have passed away, and mankind would have lost one of its few remaining guardians against the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Secondly, we could use your bloodline to save him... but that would mean putting your life at risk...”

At this moment, Sword Saint Xing looked deeply at Zhang Xuan before sighing. “Your mother vehemently opposed it, but I eventually went against her will and chose the second option!”

“This...” Zhang Xuan fell silent.

This was not an easy decision to make, especially for Sword Saint Xing, who had just had his first child.

If he chose the first option, while his child would be saved, mankind would lose one of the few precious Ancient Sages that it had remaining, placing it in an even more treacherous position than before. Such a decision would be equivalent to placing the cart before the horse.

If mankind was destroyed, what would the Zhang Clan count as? Even if his child survived, he would have a difficult life ahead of him.

But choosing the second option was no different from strangling his unborn child to death with his own hands. There was no father in the world who could possibly make such a decision easily!

Sometimes, having to make a choice was worse than being forced into a situation.

Zhang Xuan could not say that he knew Sword Saint Xing well, but he could tell that the latter was not a heartless person. He could feel that the latter cared deeply for him, so making his decision back then must have really broken his heart.

It was apparent to any rational mind which the correct decision to make was, but it was never easy to sever one’s emotions and make the correct decision.

“There is only one fate left for those who have been stripped of their bloodline—death. But I was indignant. I couldn’t accept such an outcome! I approached Yang Shi and begged for his help. He told me about the existence of a unique poison in the world that could emulate the effects of a bloodline... He had a poison master plant the poison in your mother’s womb, thus granting you a hope of survival even after your bloodline was torn away from you.

“After you were born, Yang shi personally grafted your bloodline to Ancestor Zhang Hongtian and successfully saved him. Shortly after, Ancestor Zhang Hongtian went back into hibernation. However, the operation left you severely wounded, placing you on the verge of death.

“In order to save you, we had to swiftly teleport you to one of the ancient domains, hoping that your bloodline would slowly heal with time. However, despite all of the protective measures that we placed on you in order to fend off the spatial turbulence from teleportation, you were simply in too weak a state to take the stress of teleportation. It didn't seem like you would have survived to the end of the teleportation, so I made the decision to forcefully eject you from the Teleportation Formation. That decision might have saved your life, but it made us lose sight of you as well.

“It seems like everything has worked out well in the end, but still...”

At this point, Sword Saint Xing lowered his head apologetically and bowed down.

“Xuan-er, please forgive your incapable father who has caused you so much suffering!”

# 1564 Surge in Prowess

“I see!”

All of Zhang Xuan’s doubts were finally resolved.

It was no wonder his previous self would end up in somewhere as remote as the Tianxuan Kingdom, living a pitiful life as an orphan. Even when he finally breathed his last, he was still a nobody, devoid of anyone’s care and concern.

Even though he was not too sure how his bloodline had been torn out of his body, it was bound to be at least as deadly as back when all of Zhao Ya’s meridians ruptured. If not for his previous self’s superior physical resilience as a Connate Saint, as well as the Zhang Clan’s vast resources, he could very well have died back then.

Wait a moment... Something is wrong! If the Innate Fetal Poison was an intentional doing by the Zhang Clan, why would Kong shi be afflicted with the Innate Fetal Poison, too? Zhang Xuan frowned.

Kong shi’s body had been afflicted with the Innate Fetal Poison; this was something that he had just verified earlier. However, in Kong shi’s era, it was still possible for cultivators to become Ancient Sages. Surely there was no need for anyone to go to the extent of tearing his bloodline out of his body?

With such thoughts in mind, Zhang Xuan hurriedly asked, “May I know what form the poison that you mentioned comes in? Also, what kind of effect does it have on one’s body?”

“The Innate Fetal Poison can be used to substitute one’s bloodline, thus allowing one’s bodily functions to continue as per usual in the short term. However, the poison places an immense strain on the body, such that a person afflicted with it will usually die before stepping into their twenties if they haven’t found a way to cure or suppress it by then!”

Speaking up to this point, Sword Saint Xing looked at Zhang Xuan and said, “You are already in your early twenties, and

you have successfully raised your cultivation beyond the Saint realm. From the looks of it, you should have already resolved the Innate Fetal Poison, right?”

One of his son’s students happened to be the master of the Poison Hall, so he was bound to have a deep understanding of poison as well. Furthermore, his son did not look sickly or debilitated in the least, so he assumed that his son had already cured himself.

“This... Yes, I have already resolved it!” Not wanting his father to overthink this matter, Zhang Xuan nodded.

Earlier, his father had said that the Innate Fetal Poison would kill its host within twenty years, so it was very likely that his previous self had died from the Innate Fetal Poison. But now, he was starting to wonder if the poison that he was afflicted with was the same Innate Fetal Poison that his previous self had died from.

From the sound of it, the Innate Fetal Poison that had been planted into him back then was not too formidable, given how unworried his father was about the matter. However, when he spoke to Kong shi a while ago, the latter had said that the true problem would come after the Innate Fetal Poison was cured.

Could it be that the appearance of the Library of Heaven’s Path had caused some kind of unpredictable change to the Innate Fetal Poison?

However, that was no longer important. What was most important was for him to raise his cultivation swiftly and become a 9-star master teacher as soon as possible.

Noticing the dazed look on Zhang Xuan’s face, he thought that the latter was just a little overwhelmed by the news that he had just heard and needed some time to digest all that shocking information.

Thus, Sword Saint Xing said with a smile, “Alright! You should be exhausted from all the information that you have just received, so let’s stop here for tonight. Rest well. Tomorrow, we’ll be bringing you to the Ancestral Hall to pay respects to your ancestors and hold the inauguration ceremony

to officialize your position as the clan head. After that, we'll be heading over to the Luo Clan to ask for your little lover's hand in marriage!"

"Un!" Zhang Xuan nodded.

He had not even realized it himself earlier, but he was indeed feeling a little drained at the moment.

He had already been feeling a little sapped back when the power from the Pavilion Master Seal's droplet receded from him, but due to the many matters that he had to deal with, he had been left with no choice but to hold on till now.

Thus, the two of them walked out of the passageway, and right before they parted, Zhang Xuan suddenly turned to Sword Saint Xing and asked, "Sword Saint Xing, do you have any pinnacle spirit stones or items rich in spiritual energy on hand? I want to reinforce my cultivation and try pushing for a breakthrough if possible!"

While he had already recognized the middle-aged man before him as his father, he still found it a little difficult for him to address the other party as 'father'.

On the other hand, Sword Saint Xing knew that he had been absent for most of his son's life, so it was understandable that it would be hard for his son to accept him all of a sudden. He was a little disappointed by the matter, but he knew that this was a problem that could only be slowly resolved with time.

Thus, he smiled and said, "You wish to reinforce your cultivation? I don't have too many pinnacle spirit stones with me at the moment, only around two thousand of them. You can use them for now... I do have quite a few items that are rich in spiritual energy, too. These ten jade bottles here each have a grade-9 pill in them, and they are fantastic for replenishing depleted energy... Right, I also have two gourds of Earth Vein Marrow Essence over here, and they are fairly great too. Oh, I also have two Whitescar Spirit Stones here. I obtained them during a mission a while ago. They can aid you in the advancement of your cultivation..."

As Sword Saint Xing spoke, he took out object after object from his storage ring.

“This...” Zhang Xuan’s lips twitched.

All along, he had thought that he could be considered fairly rich, but compared to Sword Saint Xing, he was really as good as a beggar!

Two thousand pinnacle spirit stones, ten grade-9 pills, two gourds of Earth Vein Marrow Essence... Any single one of those items was worth more than his entire fortune!

It was no wonder everyone admired those who were born in large clans. Just the amount of resources that they had access to was something that unaffiliated cultivators would never be able to compare to.

If he had possessed these resources back when he was still in the Tianxuan Kingdom, he might already have become an Ancient Sage by now!

Noticing that his son was standing quietly on the spot, Sword Saint Xing thought that his son was snubbing him for the meager wealth that he possessed, so he quickly clarified with an awkward look on his face, “This is just my private stash. If it isn’t enough, you can ask for more from your mother. She has many more good items than me...”

“No no no, this is more than enough!” Zhang Xuan shook his head in horror.

In the end, this was only his private stash...

It seemed like having parents was not too bad after all. At the very least, he did not have to worry about a lack of resources in his future cultivation anymore!

“That’s a relief! We have always kept your residence empty in case you ever returned. Come, let me show you there...” After Zhang Xuan stowed the items into his storage ring, Sword Saint Xing quickly led the way forward.

Before his son was even born, he had specially ordered that a residence be constructed for him. Things did not go as planned, but Sword Saint Xing never allowed anyone to move

into the residence. Perhaps with the hope that their son would return one day, they had the servants clean the residence every day, but they never allowed anyone to stay there.

Since his son had finally returned, it went without saying that he should stay in that residence.

Before long, the two men arrived in a relatively large residence.

As soon as Zhang Xuan walked in, he immediately felt rich spiritual energy shrouding him, revitalizing him. He scanned the residence with his gaze, and he had to admit that he was rather satisfied with the accommodation.

Thus, he clasped his fist and said, "Alright, I'll be taking my rest then..."

Knowing that his son was bound to be exhausted after his long day, Sword Saint Xing patted his shoulder before walking out.

Zhang Xuan walked Sword Saint Xing out before walking around the residence to find the spot with the highest concentration of spiritual energy. After which, he took out his pinnacle spirit stones and began recovering his depleted energy.

After recuperating for roughly four hours, he finally recovered to his peak condition, and he felt reinvigorated once more.

It's about time to push for a breakthrough... Zhang Xuan thought excitedly.

The Master Teacher Pavilion had not sent over the Saint 9-dan cultivation technique manuals yet, but from the thousands of books that he had collected from the 9-star master teachers, he had managed to successfully compile the Saint 8-dan Heaven's Path Divine Art.

Immersing his consciousness into the Library of Heaven's Path, he placed his finger on the compiled Heaven's Path Divine Art manual, and the content of the book swiftly flowed into his mind, becoming his knowledge.

Upon reaching Saint 8-dan Dimension Sundering realm, a cultivator would be able to create isolated spaces from the rest



of the world through their Dominion.

Zhang Xuan drove his zhenqi according to the circulation pathway in the Heaven's Path Divine Art, and his cultivation and strength slowly rose.

Within two hours, he had already reached Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle, on the verge of making a breakthrough to the Macrocosm Ascendancy realm.

Knowing that pushing for a breakthrough would draw in the Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal, and that would potentially cause devastating damage to the Zhang Clan, he suppressed the sensation and turned his attention to his soul cultivation instead.

Previously, through Vicious' memories, he had managed to obtain soul cultivation techniques up to Saint 9-dan, but he had not been able to find suitable soul-related books to compile together with it to form Heaven's Path Soul Art manuals. However, when he met Lu Chong earlier, he had managed to obtain the soul cultivation techniques of the soul oracles from him, and that had allowed him to compile Heaven's Path Soul Art manuals all the way up to Saint 9-dan.

Since he had ample spirit stones in hand, it was a good opportunity for him to raise his soul cultivation all the way up to Saint 9-dan.

# 1565 Great Sage Realm

He first placed the pinnacle spirit stones that Sword Saint Xing had given him into a Spirit Gathering Formation before drawing his soul out of his body. Focusing his attention, he began to absorb the surrounding spiritual energy as he drove his soul energy in accordance to the Heaven's Path Soul Art manuals.

Geji! Geji!

His soul cultivation advanced at an incredible rate.

With his Soul Depth rising to a level comparable to a 9-star pinnacle master teacher, he was able to exert extraordinary focus in his cultivation, thus significantly increasing his rate of cultivation. It might have taken him two hours in order to raise his cultivation by a single stage in the past, but now, he could do it within just an hour.

Some time later, he finally opened up his eyes.

With a light wave of his hand, a pitch-black rift appeared right before him. Not even space could withstand the powerful might wielded by his soul!

It's a pity that Soul Traverse hasn't been perfected yet, so it isn't convenient for me to practice it! Zhang Xuan shook his head in pity.

Naturally, when Lu Chong imparted the heritage of the soul oracles to him, the secret art, Soul Traverse, had been among the heritage. However, it was a pity that it had far too many flaws for him to swallow, and his cultivation was also a little too low at the moment to cultivate it.

Otherwise, if his soul could freely leap through space just like his student, his fighting prowess would be raised another notch.

Of course, while the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters seemed to have reluctantly accepted the fact that he practiced the arts of the soul oracles, most cultivators on the Master

Teacher Continent were still a little apprehensive about soul oracles, so it would be best for him to avoid using such means in public.

If not for Yang Shi's appearing at a timely moment and addressing him as 'Senior', putting aside compensating him, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would still have been hounding him over his dabbling in poison and soul arts.

Hu!

Zhang Xuan returned his soul to his body.

Standing up once more, he lightly flicked his arm, and he could feel a furious torrent of power racing through his body, granting him much more strength than before.

He flicked his finger lightly.

Si la!

A huge rift was torn open in the room, and any object that fell into the rift would be utterly eradicated.

Zhang Xuan nodded contentedly. It's still nowhere close to the power that I wielded after activating the Pavilion Master Seal, but ordinary Saint 9-dan cultivators should no longer be a match for me. In fact, I should be able to put up a decent fight against the First Elder of the Glacier Plain Court, You Ruoxin!

This time, he had managed to advance his zhenqi and soul cultivation considerably, and with the combined prowess of the two, even Half-Great Sages would have trouble dealing with him. With this, he could already be considered one of the top cultivators on the Master Teacher Continent.

"Alright, I should try to raise the cultivation of the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast and the Inferno Qilin now..."

Those two saint beasts had been put through great suffering while trying to protect him, and this was especially so for the latter. In the earlier battle, the Inferno Qilin had been captured by Zhang Wuheng, and if not for the sudden change in his identity to the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, it might very well have lost its life.

Given that the First Elder had been imprisoned, it went without saying that the Inferno Qilin had been returned to him.

Zhang Xuan released the two of them and bestowed them with a couple of grade-9 pills.

Under the nourishment of the medicinal energy within the pills, the Inferno Qilin recovered swiftly from its injuries. It was not able to push for a breakthrough, but it did manage to reinforce its cultivation further, and from the looks of it, it would not be long before it overcame its Saint 9-dan bottleneck and pushed for higher realms!

On the other hand, with the nourishment of the grade-9 pills and Zhang Xuan's guidance, the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast managed to advance its cultivation from Saint 9-dan primary stage to Saint 9-dan pinnacle within just a single night.

In terms of strength, it would not pale too far in comparison to the Inferno Qilin!

By the time Zhang Xuan was done with this, the sun had already risen in the east. Stretching his back lazily, he pushed open his door to walk out of his room, only to see that Sword Saint Xing was already waiting in the courtyard.

"It's about time for us to pay respects to the ancestors... Let's head over!" Sword Saint Xing said. Suddenly, his eyebrows shot up as he took a closer look at his son, and a moment later, he exclaimed excitedly, "Your cultivation..."

The last time that he had seen his son, his son's cultivation had only been at Dimension Sundering realm primary stage. Yet, in the span of a night, his cultivation had grown so powerful that even Saint 9-dan cultivators would have trouble fighting against him!

"I managed to achieve a breakthrough last night, but it was just a fluke," Zhang Xuan explained.

"Fluke?" Sword Saint Xing's lips twitched upon hearing that word.

When he fought against his son the day before, the latter had exerted strength surpassing even that of his own. Initially, he

had thought that his son was really that strong, but very soon, he had realized that the latter had used some kind of secret art to artificially inflate his strength. He had been worried that there might be some side effects as a result of using the secret art, but from the looks of it, he had been worrying needlessly!

Not only had his son's cultivation not declined, it had improved by leaps and bounds instead!

It was really a wonder how his son cultivated to improve so quickly.

“Try hitting me. I want to see how powerful you are without relying on your secret art!” Sword Saint Xing said.

“Very well!” Knowing that his strength would be insufficient to faze his father without relying on the Pavilion Master Seal, Zhang Xuan had no intention of holding back.

Taking a deep breath, he sent a punch out with his full might.

Boom!

The space in front of him collapsed as a formidable shockwave rippled into the surroundings.

Sword Saint Xing's eyebrows shot upward in astonishment as he raised his palm to halt Zhang Xuan's punch.

Hu!

He managed to dissipate the force of Zhang Xuan's punch, but at the same time, he was forced to retreat a step in order to ward off the impact of the punch.

Impressed, he could not help but remark, “Your strength doesn't pale in comparison even to Introspective Convalescence realm experts...”

“Introspective Convalescence realm?” Zhang Xuan asked doubtfully.

“Having reached Saint 9-dan, you should have become acutely aware that Saint 9-dan isn't the endpoint to cultivation. Above Saint, there's Great Sage!” Sword Saint Xing explained.

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

He had heard Yang shi speak of this matter in the past, but he was not too aware of the details.

“There are nine dans to Fighter, Transcendent Mortal, and Saint. However, there are only four dans to Great Sage!” Sword Saint Xing explained.

“The very first realm to Great Sage is the Introspective Convalescence realm!

“In the Saint realm, a cultivator develops their Primordial Spirit and physical body to the very limits, but this development often comes with some degree of imperfection. In the Introspective Convalescence realm, a cultivator separates their Primordial Spirit from their physical body and trims both of them carefully, achieving invulnerability to indisposition and infirmity. Those who have successfully reached this realm have their lifespan extended by five hundred years, thus allowing them to live up to 1,500 years old.”

Ordinary Saint experts would only have a thousand years to their lifespan. While some might be able to live a little longer than that, it would not stray too far from that. However, if a cultivator was able to reach the Introspective Convalescence realm, they would be able to alleviate the ageing process of their body, thus extending their lifespan to 1,500 years.

Five hundred years might not seem too long, but with sufficient luck, a cultivator could potentially reach higher realms with this additional time.

“The realms in Great Sage are far more complex than those in Saint, so while there are only four cultivation stages in Saint realms, there are six cultivation stages in Great Sage realms!

“They are namely primary stage, intermediate stage, advanced stage, pinnacle, perfection, and consummation!

“Each of these six stages is harder to scale than the last. In fact, there are some cultivators who require over a hundred years to raise their cultivation a single stage. At the same time, a tremendous amount of spiritual energy is required as well. For this reason, Great Sage is a huge hurdle for one to

overcome, and in history, very few cultivators have eventually made it to Ancient Sage!

“The punch that you executed earlier wields strength that is roughly on par with Introspective Convalescence realm primary stage cultivators. While it can’t be said to be impressive among the powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent, without a doubt, none in the younger generation will be able to match your strength!”

Zhang Xuan nodded in response. Curious about the realms of Great Sage, he could help but ask, “The first realm of Great Sage is the Introspective Convalescence realm, but what about the second realm?”

“The second realm is the Aureate Body realm!” Sword Saint Xing said. “Introspective Convalescence grants one self-awareness through introspection, and the undefilable Aureate Body grants one everlasting divinity. Flames and ice will no longer be able to injure one, and ordinary wounds will recover swiftly without the use of pills. Through fully awakening his Emperor’s Bloodline, your student, Yuan Tao, has reached such a realm!”

# 1566 Engagement!

“Of course, the term ‘Aureate Body’ is just figurative language,” Sword Saint Xing explained. “One’s body and physical body will grow far more resilient than before, almost as if diamond, impermeable to water or flames. Even if one travels through a Teleportation Formation without protection, one still won’t be harmed by the spatial turbulence. Even when falling into spatial rifts, one will be able to walk out alive!

“On top of the frightening growth in strength and resilience, one will gain considerable resistance against soul arts as well. Demonic tunes and even the Impartation of Heaven’s Will won’t be able to sway one easily anymore!

“The third realm of Great Sage is the Intuitive Impulse realm! To put it in simpler terms, it refers to an enigmatic sense toward danger or the unknown. It’s rather similar to the ability that seers wield, but it’s far more feasible to experts, especially in battle. Without using tortoise shells or copper coins, one will be able to intuitively sense impending calamities or fortune and select the most suitable course of action to take. Your mother and I have reached this realm. Last year, your soul lantern extinguished, but your mother and I could sense that you are still alive, and that’s what that drove us to continue searching for you...”

“My soul lantern extinguished?” Zhang Xuan’s lips twitched. “The Zhang Clan has my soul lantern? When did it extinguish?”

He had learned of soul lanterns from the books in the Sanctum of Sages. It was an artifact forged by weaving a sliver of an individual’s soul in a unique manner.

Usually, it would be located in a discreet location, placed under the care of special caretakers. The moment that the flame in the soul lantern was extinguished signified that the individual’s soul had dissipated as well. It was typically used



in most major powers so as to take note of the statuses of those who had left the clan.

As such, it was not too surprising that he had a soul lantern, but the fact that it had extinguished...

This was a matter worth looking into.

“Your mother and I feared that something would happen to you, so I created a soul lantern out of your soul right after you were born. As for when it extinguished... it was at the start of the ninth month last year,” Sword Saint Xing said.

“...” Zhang Xuan’s eyelids twitched a little upon hearing the date.

The start of the ninth month last year... That happened to be around the time that he transcended to this world, the start of a new semester in the Tianxuan Kingdom’s Hongtian Academy.

Did his soul dissipate before I transcended over or when I possessed his body? Zhang Xuan could not help but wonder a little.

However, there was no point speculating about the past anymore, so he simply shook his head and dropped that thought.

“What’s the fourth realm?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“The fourth realm is the pinnacle of Great Sage, as well as the level that Yang shi has reached. It’s known as the Sempiternal realm. Sempiternal encompasses the idea of deathlessness, but it’s with reference not to the flesh but to the Primordial Spirit. No external force will be able to sway one’s mental state, and with a mere thought, one is not only able to kill but tear space apart as well! Only one who has reached this realm can be considered invincible beneath Ancient Sage!” Sword Saint Xing remarked.

“Your mother and I have been searching for an impetus to achieve a breakthrough to that realm, but it’s a pity that we haven’t been able to succeed...”

“Introspective Convalescence, Aureate Body, Intuitive Impulse, and Sempiternal...” Zhang Xuan committed the

names of those four realms to memory.

He was not too sure about the latter three, but he had definitely felt the power of the Sempiternal realm back when he activated the droplet of blood from the Pavilion Master Seal. He had felt absolute power in his grasp, and with just a flick of his hand, he could easily have torn the world into pieces. There was nothing in this world that could possibly have endured his might.

If even the Sempiternal realm was that powerful, it was hard to imagine just how formidable Ancient Sage would be!

“Alright, let’s quickly leave!” After explaining the four realms of Great Sage, Sword Saint Xing beckoned for them to set off before leading the way forward.

The ancestor acknowledgement ritual was not too complicated. All of the elders of the Zhang Clan, including those retired and in seclusion, had come to witness the ceremony. In the ancestral hall, an esteemed elder of the Zhang Clan announced Zhang Xuan’s identity and history to the ancestors.

Zhang Xuan stood obediently in his allocated position, and the entire ceremony proceeded smoothly without any hiccups.

It concluded right before noon, and Zhang Xuan’s name was inscribed onto the Zhang Clan’s genealogy book.

Following that was the clan head inauguration ceremony.

There were all kinds of formalities and conventions to be respected for this solemn event, making it both bothersome and frustrating.

However, he also knew that it was of the utmost importance to respect these traditions. This was in line with the virtue of propriety that Kong shi had preached. It would be impossible to establish order and legitimacy without propriety, which made it ever so important in large powers like the Zhang Clan.

The ceremony lasted all the way till sunset before it finally concluded.

With this, Zhang Xuan had officially succeeded as the clan head, becoming the most authoritative figure in the Zhang Clan.

“Phew, the ceremony is finally over! Son, we’ll be heading to the Luo Clan tomorrow to ask for the little princess’ hand in marriage!” Looking at the excellent man that his son had become, Sword Saint Xing could not help but feel satisfied within.

Zhang Xuan did not think that his parents would be so impatient as well, and he nodded helplessly. “Alright!”

The truth was that he was also feeling a little apprehensive inside. Everything seemed to be proceeding so smoothly that he was starting to fear that it was all a dream.

Sword Saint Xing walked up to Yang shi and clasped his fist with a smile. “Yang shi, I hope that you can follow us to the Luo Clan as well and bear witness to this joyous event!”

“My Senior is going to be wedded—it goes without saying that I have to tag along!” Yang shi stroked his beard.

The second Celestial Master Teacher in the world was going to marry the little princess of the Luo Clan—this was a historic event that he could not afford to miss!

The night passed in surprising silence.

This time, Zhang Xuan chose to have a good sleep to reinvigorate himself instead of cultivating.

As soon as dawn settled in, a huge crowd had already gathered around the Conference Hall of the Zhang Clan. All sorts of items and artifacts were loaded upon forty massive saint beasts, producing a sight of majesty and extravagance.

“Isn’t this... a little too grand?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

“How can it not be grand? This is the wedding ceremony of the clan head of our Zhang Clan! If there isn’t at least this much, it would poorly reflect on us as the number one Sage Clan!” Sword Saint Xing replied haughtily.

Beside him, Sword Saint Meng nodded with a ravishing smile on her face, reminiscent of a blooming flower. She was

surprisingly quiet despite the matter at hand.

Looking at the heavily loaded saint beasts, Zhang Xuan asked with a doubtful frown, “How far away is the Luo Clan?”

The Master Teacher Continent was vast, such that even when one was riding on saint beasts, a journey could easily take several days or even months. If the destination was too far away, it might be better for him to construct a Teleportation Formation so that they could head there right away.

“Why? Just a few days of absence, and you are already in a rush to meet your little girlfriend?” Sword Saint Xing teased playfully.

“That’s not it…” Zhang Xuan’s face reddened in embarrassment.

“The Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan aren’t located too far away from one another. We specially prepared these aerial spirit beasts beforehand, and they are all at Saint 9-dan. If they fly at their full might, we should be able to reach our destination within three days, so there’s no need to get anxious!”

Seemingly seeing through Zhang Xuan’s thoughts, Sword Saint Meng added with a smile, “While a Teleportation Formation will allow us to get to the Luo Clan much faster, we’ll have to pay an astronomical price in order to teleport this many resources and saint beasts over. On top of that, the journey there is also a symbol of sincerity on our part, and it serves to inform the world of the matrimony between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan. It’s a formality that we have to respect so as to not sully the reputation of both the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan!”

“I understand…” Zhang Xuan nodded.

In any case, it was only a three-day journey, so there was no real need to use the Teleportation Formation.

He was not so impatient as to be unable to wait three days.

“Alright, let’s set off then!”

Since everyone was already present, Sword Saint Xing gave a command, and the saint beasts rose into the air. Zhang Xuan

and his parents got onto the saint beast at the very front of the formation, and just like that, the magnificent marriage convoy began making its way toward the Luo Clan.

# 1567 The Secret Behind the Marriage of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan

Chilling wind battered ceaselessly on the convoy of the Zhang Clan.

It was already in the midst of winter. While it was not as chilling as the usual weather at the Glacier Plain Court, most of the mountains were already cloaked with a thick layer of snow. Placed along with the white clouds in the air, it formed a mystical scenery of beauty.

Zhang Xuan stood in the room at the back of the aerial saint beast, frowning. Unable to hold back his curiosity anymore, he turned to the Xingmeng Sword Saints and asked, “What’s the reason behind the engagement between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan? Since I’m the clan head now, I should know of it as well, right?”

Initially, Zhang Xuan had thought that his parents’ impatience had stemmed from wanting to see him settle down, but after flying for some time, he could not help but feel that something was amiss.

Of the items carried by the forty aerial saint beasts, there were pills, artifacts, secret manuals, beast skin, inner cores... There was basically everything that a cultivator would ever need. Even with the Zhang Clan’s fortune, it was not something that could be prepared on the spur of a moment.

The only possibility was that they had already prepared it in advance!

Of course, that was to be expected. After all, they even held the tournament back at the Zhang Clan to find someone to marry the little princess in his place. However, this served to remind him of how adamant the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan were in pushing this marriage forward.

Putting this together with what he had heard from Luo Xuanqing a while back, about how determined the elders of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan were in realizing the marriage... He would have to be fool not to realize that something was amiss!

Furthermore, he had barely reunited with his parents. Surely his parents would not want to send him away so quickly.

“This...” Hearing his son’s question, a hesitant look surfaced on Sword Saint Xing’s face.

It was clear that his son had already guessed something, and it would be impossible to hide it from him any longer.

“I told you that we shouldn’t hide it from our son, but you just wouldn’t listen! Given how smart my Xuan-er is, how could he possibly not figure it out?” Sword Saint Meng harrumphed coldly.

Turning to Zhang Xuan, she scoffed impatiently. “The Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan’s arrangement is for mankind or whatever nonsense!”

“For mankind? What does the marriage with the Luo Clan have to do with mankind?” Zhang Xuan was even more confused.

It was just a marriage between him and Luo Ruoxin! Surely it would be exaggerating to say that the whole of mankind would be affected by their marriage.

“Let me tell him instead!”

The previously-silent Yang shi suddenly sighed deeply and spoke up.

“Un.”

Seeing that Yang shi was going to speak, the Xingmeng Sword Saints nodded before falling silent.

“The bloodline ability of the Zhang Clan is time whereas the bloodline ability of the Luo Clan is space,” Yang shi said.

“Senior, I believe you should be very familiar with this, right?”

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

He had been surprised by it at the start, but after witnessing it so many times, he had already gotten used to it.

“Those two abilities come together to form the power of spacetime, and this power is the key to unlocking the seal of the Temple of Confucius!” Yang shi revealed.

“The seal of the Temple of Confucius?”

“According to legend, in order to access the area where the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn is sealed, on top of the Celestial Amulets of Legacy required, one must also wield the power of spacetime! However, this is an ability that only the strongest of Ancient Sages wield!” Yang shi explained.

“However, it’s a pity that no one has been able to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage over the past ten thousand years. The few living Ancient Sages are also reaching the limits of their lifespan, such that while they are still capable of fighting short battles, it would be difficult for them to decipher the flow of spacetime in order to break the seal. More importantly, it seems that Ancient Sage experts might not be able to enter the depths of the Temple of Confucius!”

“This...” Zhang Xuan was bewildered. “If Ancient Sages are banned from entering the depths of the Temple of Confucius, why did Kong shi create a seal that requires one to wield the power of spacetime to decipher it?”

What in the world was Kong shi intending to do?

It was one thing for Kong shi to place the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn in the Temple of Confucius instead of handing it over to mankind, but he had even created an insurmountable obstacle for challengers to overcome. Was he really intending for mankind to obtain the Great Codex of Spring of Autumn?

Alas, Kong shi had already long passed on, so it was impossible for them to fathom his thoughts anymore. Yang shi shook his head and said, “I don’t know the details either. Due to the seal placed in the Temple of Confucius, even if we gather all of the Celestial Amulets of Legacy, we still won’t be



able to access the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn. However, if we fuse the bloodlines of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan together, it might just be possible to pull it off!”

“Fuse the bloodlines of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan?”

“If both bloodlines can be perfectly fused together, one will be able to harness the power of spacetime that usually only the most pinnacle Ancient Sage could wield!” Yang shi explained. “It’s for this reason that you were engaged to the little princess of the Luo Clan even before the both of you were born. No matter what happens, the marriage has to go through!”

“But... I have already lost my Zhang Clan bloodline. Even if I marry the little princess now, it would be futile...” Not expecting to hear such a story before the engagement, Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in alarm.

As mankind slowly lost its Ancient Sages, the tables would gradually turn in favor of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. As such, this made obtaining the Great Codex of Spring of Autumn of utmost importance to mankind. This matter could determine the very survival of mankind. As such, even the Master Teacher Pavilion was pushing this matter forward.

But considering that he had already lost his Zhang Clan’s bloodline and his grasp over the law of time was still rather elementary, even if he were to marry Luo Ruoxin, it would not help at all!

“You might have already lost your Zhang Clan bloodline, but the fact that you once possessed it means that your body carries the aptitude for it. As long as the Zhang Clan bloodline is infused back into your veins once more, you should be able to wield its power easily, so there’s no need to worry about that. Besides, the mutual feelings between you and the little princess will allow for greater synergy in your collaboration, making it easier for the two of you to produce the power of spacetime!

“Without a doubt, the two of you are the ideal candidates for this matter!” Yang shi affirmed with a smile.

There was still one more thing that he had neglected to mention, and that was the fact that Zhang Xuan was a Celestial Master Teacher.

Kong shi had been a Celestial Master Teacher as well, so while others might have difficulties obtaining the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn, Zhang Xuan might just be able to pull it off.

For this reason, even though the Zhang Clan had already found an individual who possessed even purer Zhang Clan bloodline than Zhang Xuan, he was still more supportive of having Zhang Xuan marry the little princess.

“I’ll be able to use the abilities of the Zhang Clan bloodline just by having it infused back into me?” Zhang Xuan asked in bewilderment.

He could understand how the chemistry between him and Luo Ruoxin would allow for a more harmonious collaboration between the two of them, but the notion of being able to use the abilities of the Zhang Clan just by having their bloodline infused into him sounded a little ridiculous.

“It’s true that your Zhang Clan bloodline has been torn away from your body, but this can also be said to be a blessing in disguise. You won’t be limited by your bloodline, thus granting you the potential to exceed the founder of the Zhang Clan!” Yang shi explained.

“Inheriting a unique bloodline is similar to inheriting the lineage of the predecessors. It grants one an incomparable advantage when it comes to intrinsic talent, but there is also a fatal flaw to it—one will be limited by one’s bloodline. It will be far more difficult for one to surpass the level of one’s predecessor as compared to an ordinary cultivator. Furthermore, the purer one’s bloodline is, the greater the bottleneck will be!”

“This...” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in realization.

To make an analogy, a unique bloodline would be equivalent to walking down a safe pathway that one’s predecessors had already paved in advance. However, the downside of walking

down an established pathway was that one would not know where one could safely advance toward once one reached the end of the pathway. Perhaps, the pathway might not even be suitable!

Under such circumstances, it would be nigh impossible to go any further than one's predecessor!

A thought suddenly came to Zhang Xuan's mind. Could this be why Kong shi was afflicted with the Innate Fetal Poison? The purpose was not to heal an Ancient Sage but to... surpass the predecessors?

The reason the Innate Fetal Poison was so little known on the Master Teacher Continent was likely due to how inefficient it was as a poison. After all, there were far more convenient and certain poisons to kill an infant as opposed to the Innate Fetal Poison, so it was more likely that Kong shi had planted it for its other purpose—substitution of bloodline.

Previously, he had been wondering what reasons there were to tear away Kong shi's bloodline and afflict him with the Innate Fetal Poison, and this could very well be the case.

After all, Kong shi did manage to achieve what others failed in, surpassing all that came before him.

“Back then,” Sword Saint Meng suddenly interjected with reddened eyes, “the reason I agreed to having your bloodline torn out was because they promised me that nothing would happen to you and that you might even get an opportunity to strive for greater heights...”

# 1568 Hundred Schools of Philosophers

Sword Saint Meng had little care about the greater good of mankind or anything of the sort. What really mattered to her was just those whom she cared about, and if anyone dared to hurt her precious child, she would pit her life against that person.

The reason she had eventually relented was due to those words reassuring her.

As a mother, it was inevitable that she would bear great ambitions for her child's future. With Yang shi volunteering to assist in the process and her husband reassuring all of her fears, she had eventually caved in.

Otherwise, given her strength, no matter how powerful Hu Yiwei was, there was no way he could possibly have planted the Innate Fetal Poison in her successfully.

Knowing how difficult it would have been for his mother to make such a decision back then, Zhang Xuan sighed deeply within. Shaking his head, he turned his gaze back to Yang shi and said, "I still don't really get how infusing the Zhang Clan bloodline back into my body would allow me to use its abilities easily."

"Pardon me, it seems like I have accidentally strayed off topic. As you used to possess the purest Zhang Clan bloodline, you still wield the innate ability to activate the Zhang Clan bloodline. As long as you have sufficient blood essence of the Zhang Clan bloodline, you will be able to use its bloodline ability without burning your own bloodline. Naturally, that means that there won't be the one-month downtime for you after activating the bloodline ability!" Yang shi explained.

While activating the unique bloodline would grant one a temporary surge of power, it would also severely deplete one's

vitality and zhenqi afterward, resulting in a month's downtime afterward.

However, those who had once had their bloodline torn out would not face such a limitation as they would be using the bloodline of others. As long as they had sufficient blood essence on hand, they could raise their cultivation freely!

“This...” Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up in agitation.

If that was really true, this could become another major trump card of his!

“It's too early for you to get happy. Your bloodline previously was simply too pure, such that there's hardly anyone in the clan who has bloodline that can match yours. After gathering all the blood essence that we could within the clan and refining it again and again in order to raise its purity, we only managed to squeeze out three droplets. Even if there isn't any downtime afterward, you must make sure to use them sparingly!” Sword Saint Xing said as he flicked his hand, and a jade bottle flew over.

“I understand!” Holding the jade bottle tightly in his hand, Zhang Xuan could feel the rich power harnessed within the three blood droplets inside.

Without a doubt, Zhang Clan must have paid a heavy price in order to refine these three droplets. He was about to thank Sword Saint Xing when a thought suddenly struck him.

The Pavilion Master Seal had also been created through three droplets of Kong shi's blood, and by assimilating them into his body, he would be able to temporarily wield power invincible against those beneath Ancient Sage. Was this not identical to the situation with the blood droplets from the Zhang Clan?

Could it be that Kong shi had some kind of unique bloodline, and the prerequisite to activating the bloodline was... being a Celestial Master Teacher?

Zhang Xuan nodded. That does seem likely to be the case...

It was no wonder no one had been able to truly tame the Pavilion Master Seal in the tens of thousands of years since Kong shi had left the Master Teacher Continent. Limited by

their constitution, it was already formidable that they could wield a tenth of its power.

“It’s said that one must collate all six Celestial Amulets of Legacy in order to enter the Temple of Confucius. May I know how many of them we have at the moment?” Zhang Xuan suddenly asked.

Back then, the Qingtian Emperor had paid a heavy price to sneak onto the Master Teacher Continent in order to find one of the Celestial Amulets of Legacy, but even after searching for countless years, his efforts had still been rendered futile.

Zhang Xuan could not help wondering how many of them the Master Teacher Pavilion had found to date.

“Of the six Celestial Amulets of Legacy, the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters has one, the Zhang Clan has one, and the Luo Clan has one. As for the remaining three, some say that Kong shi sealed them beneath some mountain in the world, and others say that they were taken away by the Hundred Schools of Philosophers. In any case, even with the influence of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, I’m afraid that their whereabouts still remain a mystery to date!” Yang shi shook his head.

“Hundred Schools of Philosophers?” Zhang Xuan frowned doubtfully.

He had heard of the Three Premier Clans and the Five Elements Sage Clans... but what was the Hundred Schools of Philosophers?”

“Kong shi took in three thousand students and seventy-two direct disciples, and these seventy-two direct disciples were all Ancient Sage experts!” Yang shi said.

“They were all Ancient Sages?” Zhang Xuan’s breathing hastened in agitation.

For all seventy-two direct disciples of his to be Ancient Sages... Just how powerful was mankind back then?

It was no wonder that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe was so frightened of Kong shi, apprehensive of the rise of another Celestial Master Teacher among mankind even after so many

years! If another seventy-two Ancient Sages emerged among mankind, the tables could very well be turned!

The reputation of the World's Teacher was indeed not baseless!

“They have been conferred with the title of ‘Philosophers’, and their descendants are collectively known as the Hundred Schools of Philosophers! They disappeared soon after Kong shi disappeared from the world, which led to the rise of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan shortly after. Otherwise, if the Hundred Schools of Philosophers were still around, even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would have to defer to them!” Yang shi swiftly explained one of the ancient secrets of the history of mankind.

Zhang Xuan jolted in astonishment. “Are the Hundred Schools of Philosophers actually that powerful?”

While the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters did suffer a setback due to him this time around, he knew full well that the waters ran far deeper in the Master Teacher Pavilion than what he was seeing. If their conflict had worsened, even with Zheng Yang, Wei Ruyan, and even the Zhang Clan on his side, he still would not have stood a chance against the Master Teacher Pavilion!

Without such strength, how could the Master Teacher Pavilion go unchallenged for the past tens of thousands of years? It was precisely out of deference for their strength that even the top experts of the continent were apprehensive of provoking them!

For one, no one knew exactly how many hibernating Ancient Sages there were in the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters...

And despite the Master Teacher Pavilion's prowess, it was still afraid of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers?

“They are the descendants of Kong shi's direct disciples. Other than their powerful bloodline, they also have the complete heritage of their predecessors. Given so, it might be difficult for the Master Teacher Pavilion to match them!” Yang shi shook his head. “However, they disappeared from the Master

Teacher Continent many years ago, so it's unlikely for them to appear once more. Thus, there's no need to worry about them!"

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

Since they had disappeared just like Kong shi, there should be no need to worry about them. He pondered for a moment before asking once more, "If the three remaining Celestial Amulets of Legacy are missing, how do we enter the Temple of Confucius?"

Given that they had not even gathered all of the Celestial Amulets of Legacy yet, were they not jumping ahead of themselves to push forward a marriage between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan at this point in time?

"Typically speaking, it's indeed true that it would be impossible for one to enter the Temple of Confucius without gathering all six Celestial Amulets of Legacy. However, through years of research, the Master Teacher Pavilion has managed to find a way to circumvent that requirement. Back then, Kong shi acquired the blood essences of six unique bloodlines in order to forge the six Celestial Amulets of Legacy, so even if we fail to find the three remaining amulets, we can substitute them with the three fully awakened unique constitutions!" Yang shi said while stroking his beard.

"Unique constitutions? Could the Pure Yin Body be one of those unique constitutions?" Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in realization.

"Indeed, the Pure Yin Body is one of the unique constitutions. Other than that, there's also the Poison Hall's Innate Poison Body, the Yuan Clan's Emperor's Bloodline, the Shui Clan's Truewater Constitution... As long as these unique constitutions are fully awakened, they can be used to substitute the amulets!" Yang shi replied with a nod.

"That's also the reason You Ruoxin was in such a rush to awaken Zhao Ya's unique constitution. As long as she succeeded, the Glacier Plain Court would have been able to enter the Temple of Confucius. The Temple of Confucius houses Kong shi's heritage, and the treasures and secret



manuals found there will be unmatched by anything currently on the Master Teacher Continent! Without a doubt, the exploration of the Temple of Confucius will change the power dynamics on the Master Teacher Continent, and the powers who fail to enter the Temple of Confucius will find themselves swiftly falling behind those who do. And if, by any chance, the heritage falls into the hands of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, it could very well spell the end of mankind!”

There was a good chance that the solution to achieving a breakthrough to Ancient Sage would be found in the Temple of Confucius as well, and that would be a turning point for many powers in the world.

Who would be willing to give up on this opportunity?

“Do you still have any doubts in mind?” Yang shi asked.

“None at the moment,” Zhang Xuan replied with a shake of his head.

For the time being, that was all he was perplexed about, and after Yang shi’s explanation, he had gained a good grasp of the situation.

It was no wonder the Luo Clan was so adamant about marrying Luo Ruoxin to the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan. Considering that the Temple of Confucius was involved in this matter as well, her will alone would not be enough to change their mind.

“Alright then. I’ll be taking a rest for a moment.”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan did not have any more doubts, Yang shi sat down and closed his eyes, and Zhang Xuan got to reinforcing his cultivation as well.

...

Three days passed in a flash.

When morning came, as soon as the brilliant sun rose from the horizon, a massive city came into sight beneath the group.

Sword Saint Xing walked over to the windows and exclaimed, “That’s the Luo Clan’s Shrouding Ethereal City! We have finally arrived at our destination!”

# 1569 Luo Xuanqing Visits

“Shrouding Ethereal City?”

Zhang Xuan lowered his head and saw that the city below seemed to be hiding beneath an illusory space. The city was situated in the midst of a mountain range, shrouded by endless clouds, reminiscent of a labyrinth.

Without knowing the way beforehand, it would be nigh impossible to find the Shrouding Ethereal City.

“What a formidable formation!” Zhang Xuan exclaimed.

“Similar to the Zhang Clan’s Guardian Formation, it’s intended to protect the Luo Clan in times of emergency. It harnesses the law of space, distorting one’s sense of direction and thus entrapping one. Of course, this formation can’t hope to keep us out...” Sword Saint Xing chuckled as he flicked his wrist, and a mirror appeared before Zhang Xuan.

Looking through the mirror, one could clearly see the correct pathway to navigate through the formation.

The formation was constantly changing, making it impossible for one to determine any fixed pattern to it. To be able to discern the correct pathway with just a glance, it seemed like his father was quite a skilled formation master.

“Is it our guests from the Zhang Clan ahead?”

After advancing a while longer, a hearty chuckle suddenly echoed from the distance, followed by the appearance of several figures.

The person standing at the forefront was the First Elder of the Luo Clan, Luo Qingchen.

“Indeed!” Sword Saint Xing flew out of the room and greeted the elders of the Luo Clan, and Zhang Xuan and the others quickly followed suit.

“We have been waiting for your arrival! Our Luo Clan has already prepared accommodations for you all, so do quickly

come in!” Luo Qingchen greeted with a smile as he led the way forward.

The convoy of saint beasts from the Zhang Clan quickly followed behind Luo Qingchen to enter the city.

The accommodation that the Luo Clan had prepared was a massive manor, vast and spacious. Even with forty saint beasts landing in the courtyard, it did not appear to be cramped in the least.

After settling the crowd from the Zhang Clan into their accommodation, Luo Qingchen said with a warm smile, “I’ll require some time to gather all of the elders and grand elders who have gone into seclusion, so let’s discuss the details of the marriage tomorrow. The matrimony between our clans is a huge matter for the Master Teacher Continent, so we have to ensure that everything proceeds smoothly!”

“Indeed, First Elder. This matter must be handled with the utmost care!” Sword Saint Xing nodded politely in response.

“Alright, I shan’t impose on you all anymore. Please do have a good rest, and I’ll see you tomorrow!” Luo Qingchen clasped his fist and bade farewell. Before taking his leave, he instructed an elder to properly attend to the needs of the Zhang Clan.

So, this is Luo Ruoxin’s clan?

The layout of the guest rooms was particularly exquisite. All sorts of formations came together to form a massive Spirit Gathering Formation, artificially creating what could be considered a blessed land to a cultivator.

Strolling around the massive manor, Zhang Xuan could hardly curb the excitement in his heart.

He had seen many beautiful ladies, and there were also a couple of them who harbored romantic feelings for him. However, there was only one who had truly moved his heart. As if a fine wine, his feelings for her only seemed to deepen with time. It was as if he was already intoxicated with her entire being, such that losing her was no longer something that he could imagine.

Seeing her son walking impatiently around the manor, Sword Saint Meng walked up to him and teased, “What? Can’t you even wait till tomorrow?”

Her son was someone who could remain perfectly calm even while he was surrounded by the experts of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, yet at that moment, he was wandering around aimlessly. There was no way she would be so dense as to be unable to see through her son’s thoughts.

“How could that be? I’m just taking a look around...” Having his thoughts exposed, Zhang Xuan’s face reddened in embarrassment.

“The marriage between the both of you will surely go through, so there’s no need to worry about that. Besides, even if this engagement didn’t exist, as long as it’s a girl you fancy, I’d help you snatch her!”

Imagining the sight of his mother kidnapping Luo Ruoxin, a slight chuckle escaped from Zhang Xuan’s lips. Given his mother personality, there was really a chance that she could pull something like that off!

Just as he was about to speak, the Luo Clan elder who was in charge of taking care of their needs suddenly walked up and reported, “Clan Head Zhang, Young Master Xuanqing hopes to meet you!”

“Bring me over!” Hearing that Luo Xuanqing was in the Luo Clan as well, Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up.

He had thought that the other party would still be in the Sanctum of Sages, but who could have thought that he would have already returned?

But thinking about it, given that his younger sister was going to be married, there was no way that he would obediently remain in the Sanctum of Sages. Given what a sister-doting monster he was, he would surely rush back to the Luo Clan in the fastest time possible!

Following behind the Luo Clan elder, they soon arrived in the main hall. Luo Xuanqing was seated with a teacup in his hand, deep in thought. Upon seeing Zhang Xuan, he quickly stood

up, clasped his fist, and bowed. “Luo Xuanqing pays respect to Clan Head Zhang!”

“Brother Luo, you’re too courteous!” Seeing how formal Luo Xuanqing was with him, Zhang Xuan quickly walked forward to help him up.

Luo Xuanqing raised his head to look at the young man before him once more, and he could not help but exclaim internally how swiftly things had changed.

When they first met, the young man had just been an ordinary student in the Sanctum of Sages. It was only because he had found the young man’s temperament to his liking that he had befriended the young man. When he found out that the young man had duped his younger sister of her feelings, he had flown into a rage, wanting to pummel him to death...

But before he knew it, the young man had transformed into the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, the fiancé of his younger sister. Not only so, he had also become the head of the Sanctum of Sages, and every single one of his students was unimaginably powerful.

No matter how many times he verified the news, he still found the matter hard to believe.

Initially, when his younger sister told him that the fellow from the remote Hongyuan Empire was actually a remarkable genius, he had snorted in disdain, thinking that his younger sister was blinded by her feelings for the other party. However, from the looks of it now, the one who was truly blind was him!

While Luo Xuanqing was still deep in thought, he suddenly noticed the anomaly in the young man’s cultivation, and he widened his eyes in astonishment. “Your cultivation... You have already reached Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle?”

Just a few days ago, when he pummeled Zhang Xuan, the young man had only been at Phantasmal Space realm pinnacle. Yet, within this short period of time, the young man had already reached Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle!

While he had never expressed it before others, the truth was that he took great pride at having reached Dimension

Sundering realm primary stage despite his young age. Yet, it was as if achieving breakthroughs came as easily to the young man as eating or drinking... Did the young man really have to be so exaggerated?

“Ah, it was a stroke of luck,” Zhang Xuan replied with a smile.

“A stroke of luck...” Luo Xuanqing felt so stifled that he thought that he would suffer grievous internal injuries from talking with the young man at this rate.

Each time he asked about the young man’s cultivation, the latter would simply perfunctorily attribute it to luck.

Even though we all know that you are just making up an excuse, surely you can be more sincere than that!

Would it kill you to think of a different line?

Luo Xuanqing took in a deep breath and asked, “Clan Head Zhang, may I have the honor of sparring with you?”

Back when he first met the young man, the young man had only been a Saint 5-dan minor figure, not even worthy of his attention. Within just two to three months, the young man had already surpassed him. While he knew that the young man was an incredibly talented individual—there was no one in the world who would dare underestimate the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan—he was still unable to accept this reality.

“Sure!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

He was also itching to try his hand since he had just made a breakthrough. Since Luo Xuanqing had challenged him to a spar, there was no reason for him to turn him down.

“Let’s begin then!”

Without any hesitation, Luo Xuanqing forcefully pushed against the ground and dashed forth, reaching Zhang Xuan in the blink of an eye. He raised his hand and thrust his palm down upon the latter forcefully.

Huala!

Along with the movement of his palm, the surrounding space grew viscous, creating great inertia to any movement made in the area.

While Zhang Xuan had been pushing ahead, Luo Xuanqing had not been slacking either! Through his diligence, he had also made considerable advancements in his fighting prowess!

“Come!” With a chuckle, Zhang Xuan drove his zhenqi as he raised his palm to clash against Luo Xuanqing’s offense.

But all of a sudden, his hand froze in midair.

Seeing the young man’s abrupt halt in actions, Luo Xuanqing retracted his palm strike and harrumphed coldly. “What’s wrong? Are you intending to go easy on me just because you think I’m no match for you? If you still think of me as a brother, use your full strength!”

He knew that it was unlikely for him to be a match for Zhang Xuan, and he was prepared to accept his loss. However, his pride would not allow the latter to take pity and go easy on him!

“No, that’s not it...” Zhang Xuan raised his hand to stop Luo Xuanqing as his lips twitched frenziedly. “I accidentally exerted too much force earlier... I think... I am going to achieve a breakthrough soon...”

Hong long long!

Before Zhang Xuan could finish his words, the entire sky darkened. Storm clouds converged above the area, and flashes of lightning streaked furiously across the sky.

Zhang Xuan’s Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal had come!

# 1570 Scare It Away!

Back when Zhang Xuan was still at the Zhang Clan, he had already reached the peak of the Dimension Sundering realm, ready to push for a breakthrough to the Macrocosm Ascendancy realm at any moment. However, he feared the massive destruction that might come as a result of the lightning tribulation, so he had forcefully suppressed his cultivation.

However, earlier, as he was sparring with Luo Xuanqing, he had accidentally pushed his zhenqi a little too far, overcoming the bottleneck of the Dimension Sundering realm, causing his cultivation to begin advancing right for Saint 9-dan Macrocosm Ascendancy realm.

“You can achieve a breakthrough just like that?”

Looking at the ominous clouds gathering all around and sensing the energy raging within the young man’s body, Luo Xuanqing nearly fainted on the spot.

Weren’t you still at Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle a moment ago?

How in the world did you manage to make a breakthrough to the Macrocosm Ascendancy realm just by driving your zhenqi?

Luo Xuanqing nearly sputtered blood from frustration.

It was with the thought that Zhang Xuan’s cultivation might not be too stable due to his swift breakthroughs that he had dared challenge the young man to a duel. Yet, before the duel could even start, the young man had already achieved another breakthrough.

In comparison, his rate of cultivation was as slow as a tortoise... no, more like a crawling snail!

With such a contrast between the two of them, he no longer dared identify himself as a prodigy before others.



Hong long long!

As Luo Xuanqing was still grumbling gloomily over the matter, the storm clouds in the sky were swiftly growing bigger and bigger, cloaking everything in their shadow. Before one knew it, the clouds already spanned tens of thousands of mu!

Luo Xuanqing gulped in fright as he turned his trembling body toward Zhang Xuan and asked, “Zhang Xuan, are you here to ask for my younger sister’s hand in marriage or to tear our Luo Clan down?”

The young man’s Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal was simply too powerful. If it really fell, no matter how powerful the Luo Clan’s formations were, the formations would not stand a chance against it!

Aren’t you here to propose a marriage?

But what you are bringing in over here could very well wipe out the entire Luo Clan!

“This... I didn’t do it on purpose... Should I try suppressing my cultivation?” Zhang Xuan exclaimed with a reddened face, showing a rare sign of panic.

He had been suppressing his cultivation all this while, intending to find a quiet place to push for a breakthrough once everything had been settled. Who could have thought that he would make a mistake at this crucial moment and achieve a breakthrough? This wasn’t what he had intended at all!

“Suppress your cultivation? Your cultivation ordeal is already right above you! Do you think suppressing your cultivation right now will work?” Luo Xuanqing roared furiously.

Are you messing with me? Do you think that the cultivation ordeal will obediently disperse just because you have suppressed your cultivation back down?

What you should be thinking of right now is how you can overcome this ridiculously powerful lightning tribulation!

Even Saint 9-dan experts wouldn’t stand a chance against a lightning tribulation of this level... Are you really not

frightened at all?

“Y-you’re right! I have to scare the lightning tribulation away... But...” Zhang Xuan frowned in distress as he spoke. “I don’t think I’ll be able to do it right now...”

His soul cultivation had already reached Saint 9-dan pinnacle, and he had not compiled the Saint 9-dan Heaven’s Path Divine Art to further his zhenqi cultivation yet. On top of that, he had just cultivated his physical body a few days ago. What was he supposed to do with the massive pool of spiritual energy in the air? He would explode if he absorbed all of that!

“You won’t be able to do it right now? What do you mean by that? Don’t you have some kind of means to chase the lightning tribulation away?” Luo Xuanqing urged anxiously.

Since his Dimension Sundering Ordeal had been chased away by the young man before him, surely the young man should be able to do the same for his own Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal.

“I’ll just say this clearly to you right here and right now. If you fail to chase away the lightning tribulation and it falls on the Shrouding Ethereal City, don’t even dream of our Luo Clan forgiving you. It goes without saying that your engagement with my younger sister will be over as well!” Luo Xuanqing spat in fury.

“This...” Zhang Xuan was really on the verge of tears.

Why did he have to achieve a breakthrough now of all times?

He had already raised all of his cultivations as far as he could, so there was nothing he would require spiritual energy for at the moment. And without absorbing the energy of the lightning tribulation, how was he supposed to scare it away?

“Wait a moment, perhaps I could try that...”

Knowing that the lightning would fall at any moment, and there was no time to be wasted, Zhang Xuan clenched his jaw and leaped into the air. He swiftly assumed a cold and forbidding appearance as he placed his arms behind his back, facing the lightning tribulation before him fearlessly.

“How can Xuan-er’s Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal be so powerful?”

“Dear, rest assured! Our son has managed to drive away several lightning tribulations in the past, so he should be able to do it easily this time around. This is a good opportunity to see what he’s capable of!”

“Yes, I have also heard the rumors as well. If I recall correctly, our son dove into the storm clouds, and before long, the storm clouds trembled uncontrollably before eventually dissipating...”

In the courtyard, the attention of the Xingmeng Sword Saints was captured by the unbelievably massive lightning tribulation in the air as well. However, recalling the previous deeds of their son, they reassured themselves and heaved sighs of relief.

Their son had simply produced too many miracles, especially when it came to dealing with lightning tribulations. The legends that he had created were something that would eventually go down in the annals of the Master Teacher Continent’s history, never to be forgotten even after many generations! As powerful as the Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal before them was, he should be able to resolve it with ease!

“Look, he’s flying into the air. He should be diving into the storm clouds very soon,” Sword Saint Xing exclaimed excitedly.

The First Elder of the Luo Clan, Luo Qingchen, turned to the elders behind him and instructed, “This is truly a rare sight, make sure to watch it closely! If we can figure out the secrets behind Zhang Xuan’s technique, our Luo Clan offspring won’t have to worry about their cultivation ordeals when they achieve a breakthrough anymore!”

“Yes!”

The many elders of the Luo Clan nodded in agreement.

Luo Qingchen had witnessed with his own eyes how the young man helped Luo Xuanqing drive away his Dimension Sundering Ordeal, but back then, he had been unable to make

sense of how it had been done. Since he had the privilege to witness it once more, he would really have to observe it closely.

If they could learn the young man's secret art, the offspring of their Luo Clan would not need to fear lightning tribulations anymore!

“Bring the Dimension Mirror over, I want this scene to be perfectly recorded!” Luo Qingchen instructed once more. “Even if we fail to make sense out of it now, we can slowly examine it later on. As long as we study it long enough, it will only be a matter of time before we uncover his secrets!”

As a 9-star master teacher himself, Luo Qingchen's eye of discernment was not to be underestimated. Yet, even an expert of his caliber was unable to figure out how Zhang Xuan had managed to drive away Luo Xuanqing's lightning tribulation back then. Thus, there was a good chance that they would not be able to figure it out easily even with most elders of the Luo Clan present here.

Just to be safe, it would be best for them to record this sight so that they could refer to it again and again in the future.

“That's a good idea!”

An elder swiftly flew away, and it did not take him long to return with a massive mirror in hand. It was one of the mystical artifacts from the Luo Clan's treasure vault, the Dimension Mirror. It could be used to record anything that it saw.

“He's going to dash into the lightning tribulation...”

Right after the elders had finished preparing the mirror, Luo Qingchen's excited exclamation sounded in the air. Turning their gazes over, the elders saw the young man rising into the air, stopping right beneath the storm clouds.

Everyone watched the scene with bated breath. They could not wait to see how the legendary young prodigy of the Zhang Clan would deal with the lightning tribulation.

Hong long long!

Provoked by Zhang Xuan's approach, the lightning tribulation crackled wrathfully, threatening to annihilate everything beneath it.

Facing the imposing lightning tribulation before him, Zhang Xuan's heart could not help but shudder in dread. Nevertheless, he did not allow it to show on his face. With a perfectly composed expression, he said, "Little Leilei, we meet again!"

Hong long!

Upon hearing that voice, the lightning tribulation seemed to fall into a daze, such that the thunderous rumbling appeared to have toned down a little.

"Stop kicking up a needless fuss. I'll give you a chance. Scram before I fly into a rage!" Zhang Xuan snorted impatiently.

Boom!

The lightning tribulation seemed to have fallen even quieter.

It was hard to tell if they were overthinking it, but the crowd witnessing this scene felt as if the lightning tribulation was trembling in fright, seemingly fearful of the young man before it.

Seeing that the lightning tribulation was still refusing to leave, Zhang Xuan's voice grew even sharper and colder. "I am not a patient person, so you'd better quickly make up your mind whether you want to cross me or not. However, you should know that I'm not one to give second chances, so I hope that you won't make a decision you'll regret."

Boom!

After a moment of hesitation, the lightning tribulation seemed to have made the greatest decision in its life, and it released an indignant rumble.

Huala!

Following which, it turned around and took flight. In the blink of an eye, it had already disappeared without a trace.

Earlier, when the ominous clouds set in, everyone had thought that the end of the world had come. But in the blink of an eye, a clear sky had been returned to them, leaving no trace of the impending calamity from earlier.

“The heck! This works as well?”

“It’s possible to scare away the lightning tribulation with words? When did the lightning tribulation become such an easy existence to deal with?”

Luo Qingchen and the others were shocked beyond words. Lei means lightning, and Leilei is a terribly cute nickname for someone.

# 1571 Unforeseen Circumstances 1

Lightning tribulations were the world's punishment toward cultivators for getting ahead of themselves. There was no cultivator who was not fearful of lightning tribulations.

Even someone as powerful as Luo Qingchen would turn pale in the face of a lightning tribulation, requiring much preparation before he dared clash with it.

Yet, this young man had simply crushed all of their expectations. Everyone had thought that he would utilize some kind of formidable technique in order to chase away the lightning tribulation, but who would have thought... with just a simple reprimand and threat, the lightning tribulation actually backed off in fear!

No cultivator on the Master Teacher Continent could have imagined that such a thing would actually be possible!

Was this still the lightning tribulation that they knew of?

“Have you recorded it?”

“We have recorded it, but... will we really be able to learn something like this?” An elder's apprehensive voice sounded from behind.

“It's unlikely...” Luo Qingchen shook his head and sighed.

If any of them dashed right up to the lightning tribulation and spouted such words, they would be reduced to cinders in the blink of an eye.

Such an action was as good as challenging the authority of the heavens!

Yet, despite his brazen actions, the young man had actually walked away from the ordeal unharmed. Could he actually not be the son of the Xingmeng Sword Saints but the illegitimate son of the heavens themselves?

“Phew, I managed to overcome this hurdle...” Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

It was fortunate that he had already traumatized the lightning tribulation through his past experiences with it. Otherwise, if the lightning tribulation had really fallen, he would have been in deep trouble.

Returning to the ground, Zhang Xuan walked up to Luo Xuanqing and smiled. “Alright, I have driven off the Macrocosm Ascendancy Ordeal. Let’s continue our fight!”

“...”

Luo Xuanqing felt a prickling sensation on his scalp.

Continue your head!

How can an ordinary mortal like me possibly fight against someone who could scare off a lightning tribulation with just words? Isn’t that asking for a beating?

“Forget it! It would be impolite for me to lay my hands on a guest like you...” Luo Xuanqing hurriedly shook his head vehemently.

He had already made up his mind. From that day forth, he would no longer compare himself with the inhuman freak before him!

Hearing that Luo Xuanqing was unwilling to fight with him anymore, Zhang Xuan sighed in disappointment. A moment later, he raised his head and looked at Luo Xuanqing expectantly. “Then... Brother Luo, can you bring me to meet your younger sister?”

With what he desired finally within reach, he could no longer retain his usual composure.

Knowing that his younger sister was the only edge that he had against Zhang Xuan at the moment, Luo Xuanqing waved his hand in feigned impatience. “You’ll meet during the engagement ceremony tomorrow. You can at least wait one more day, right?”

Zhang Xuan shook his head helplessly. “Alright then!”



Seeing that Zhang Xuan was really disappointed, a playful smile emerged on Luo Xuanqing's face as he asked, "Do you really want to meet her?"

He was delighted to see Zhang Xuan's disappointment, not just for his personal vengeance but for his younger sister as well. After all, this meant that his younger sister carried significant weight in Zhang Xuan's heart.

"Of course!" Zhang Xuan quickly nodded.

"Well, I guess it can't be helped if that's the case," Luo Xuanqing said. "I can arrange for a secret meeting with my younger sister for you, but just for a short moment, alright?"

The real reason he had come here to find Zhang Xuan was to test the latter's feelings for his younger sister, as well as to allow the two lovebirds to have a short meeting prior to the engagement.

Without a doubt, he was certain that Zhang Xuan really harbored feelings for his younger sister. Given so, it would be pointless for him to make things difficult for the latter.

While it was a breach of propriety for the couple to meet privately just ahead of the engagement, rules were ultimately just rules. Even if they were caught, the elders of both clans would only shrug it off as the recklessness of youth and turn a blind eye to it.

Besides... the young man before him was not only the young prodigy and clan head of the Zhang Clan but the head of the Sanctum of Sages and Yang Shi's senior!

"Is this for real?" Zhang Xuan's face immediately lit up in happiness.

"Of course, when have I ever not meant my words!" Luo Xuanqing harrumphed impatiently. "Wait here for a moment, I'll go make some arrangements..."

Zhang Xuan anxiously nodded in response. Just as he was about to thank Luo Xuanqing for his help, an elder of the Zhang Clan suddenly rushed into the main hall. "Clan Head!"

“What’s wrong?” Zhang Xuan frowned upon seeing the grim look on the elder’s face.

“We have just received news that Court Chief Zhao and Hall Master Wei of the Glacier Plain Court and Poison Hall have gone missing!” the elder reported anxiously.

“Missing?” Zhang Xuan’s heart skipped a beat upon hearing those words, and he abruptly rose to his feet. Narrowing his eyes coldly, he questioned, “What do you mean by that? What happened?”

“I-I don’t know... It appears that there was some kind of fight, then the both of them suddenly went missing. The Zhang Clan has already dispatched some men to investigate the issue,” the elder reported.

“After fully awakening her unique constitution, Zhao Ya is able to stand her ground even against Great Sage experts. On the other hand, Wei Ruyan’s poison is able to curb even Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan... Yet, the two of them actually went missing? Did they not even have any time to send out a help message?” Zhang Xuan clenched his fists tightly in disbelief.

Even when Zhao Ya was captured by You Ruoxin back then, she had still been able to find an opportunity to send a message to him asking for help. Just who in the world had the ability to make the two of them vanish, such that they could not even afford to send a help message to him?

“I’m afraid I don’t know!” the elder shook his head fearfully.

Zhang Xuan took in a deep breath to calm himself down before instructing, “Do you know where the battle occurred? Bring me over to take a look!”

The Zhang Clan’s intelligence was unlikely to be inaccurate. Chances were that something had really happened to Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan, so there was no time for him to be idling around.

If he wanted to know what had happened, he would have to drop by the area personally. Otherwise, it could already be too

late by the time the others were able to get to the bottom of the matter!

The elder nodded in response. “The battle occurred in the vicinity of the Empire Alliance. Court Chief Zhao and Hall Master Wei were on their way back after resolving the issue that day when something happened to them...”

“In the vicinity of the Empire Alliance? Very well!” After confirming the location, Zhang Xuan turned to Luo Xuanqing and clasped his fist apologetically. “Brother Luo, I...”

Knowing that this matter was far more important, Luo Xuanqing nodded in understanding. “Don’t worry, you should hurry over to investigate the situation. If there’s anything that I can help you with, feel free to contact me!”

“Thanks!”

Zhang Xuan walked out to the courtyard and took out the grade-9 formation flags that his mother had given him. It did not take him too long to construct a Teleportation Formation.

“Xuan-er, I’ll come with you!” Seemingly having heard of the matter as well, Sword Saint Meng suddenly rushed over.

“Don’t worry, your father and Yang shi are here, so they will be able to handle matters here promptly. I don’t feel too assured leaving you on your own. If anything happens on the other side, at least I’ll be able to cover you!”

Most preparations for the engagement had been prepared, and Sword Saint Xing and Yang shi were around to settle whatever administrative matters there were, so there should not be any problems on their end.

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

While he had managed to achieve a breakthrough to Saint 9-dan, it was still a little difficult for him to activate the Teleportation Formation with his current strength. Thus, it would indeed be helpful to have his mother tagging along.

“Let’s go!”

Having made up their minds, the duo swiftly got to action. With Sword Saint Meng infusing her strength into the

Teleportation Formation, it soon shone into activation.

Hu! Hu!

The duo vanished simultaneously from the spot.

The next moment, they were already in the vicinity of the Empire Alliance.

“According to the directions from the Eighth Elder, it should be over there...” Sword Saint Meng quickly scanned the surroundings and pointed in a direction.

Swiftly advancing ahead, it did not take the two of them too long to arrive at the foot of a mountain. This mountain had been forcefully sliced in half by some formidable force, and the greenery on it had been completely destroyed. From this, it could be seen that an earth-shattering battle had occurred not too long ago.

Zhang Xuan clenched his fists tightly together.

There was a layer of frost over the entire area. Without a doubt, it had been left by Zhao Ya.

At the same time, the plants in the area had taken on a dark yellow shade, a sign that they had been poisoned to death. From the looks of it, that seemed to be Wei Ruyan’s doing.

Initially, Zhang Xuan had thought that they had been taken down separately, but contrary to his expectations, the two of them had actually been fighting side by side when they were subdued.

Just who in the world wielded such tremendous power?

Putting aside the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan, probably even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would not be able to take those two away discreetly!

“Could it be... that Otherworldly Demonic Emperor?” Zhang Xuan’s eyes narrowed in astonishment.

# 1572 Unforeseen Circumstances 2

In terms of prowess, Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan were still far beneath Yang shi. Nevertheless, due to their unique abilities, in a real battle, even Yang shi would have much difficulty dealing with them.

But despite their strength, they were still unable to send a signal for help before they were taken away. Unless it was him with the Pavilion Master Seal activated or an Ancient Sage personally making a move, he could not think of anyone who could pull this off.

Eye of Insight!

Zhang Xuan swiftly scanned the surroundings.

A moment later, a frown appeared on his forehead as his face turned livid.

There isn't any trace of at all?

The Eye of Insight had never failed him before, but at that very moment, it was not working!

In the past, as long as he observed close enough, he would be able to find something amiss. However, no matter how he squinted, he could not find any traces of the assailant or the trail of his students. It was almost as if they had evaporated on the spot!

“Those two students of yours are considerably powerful. For the assailant to be able to kidnap them without leaving any trace behind, it must be a formidable foe!” Sword Saint Meng remarked grimly.

“Could it be the doing of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe?” Zhang Xuan asked.

“The killing intent that Otherworldly Demons emanate is too powerful for it to be concealed entirely. Since there isn't any

trace of their killing intent here, it stands to reason that it shouldn't be their doing... However, if the culprit is an Ancient Sage Otherworldly Demon, that might not hold anymore," Sword Saint Meng replied.

"Ancient Sage..." Zhang Xuan's complexion turned terribly awful.

While he did have some conflict with the Master Teacher Pavilion, they had already been resolved. It was unlikely that the master teachers would do something as ignoble as getting back at him through his students afterward.

As for the other powers, the only way that they could nab his students was to mobilize their Ancient Sages.

However, the human Ancient Sages did not have much time left, so to awaken them just to capture his students... the notion did not seem too probable.

Thus, that made the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor the most likely culprit.

Noticing her son's agitation, Sword Saint Meng quickly stepped forward and took charge of the situation. "Calm down, let's check the area once more. We might be able to find something. The most important thing that we have to do right now is confirm whom the culprit is and whether your students are in any danger!"

Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

It was hard to remain rational when it came to something that affected one. Instead of panicking, the most important thing at hand was indeed to confirm if the two of them were safe.

So, they went through every single detail that could be found in the vicinity, checking every nook and cranny carefully.

"Did you manage to find anything?" Sword Saint Meng asked.

Zhang Xuan shook his head. "The culprit is either very skilled in concealing their tracks or they really vanished into thin air, leaving nothing behind at all! What about you?"

The person who had nabbed Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan had utilized some kind of unfathomable means that rendered even

the Eye of Insight useless in identifying and tracking them down.

“I managed to figure out a few things!” Sword Saint Meng replied. “Firstly, based on the battle marks, the culprit used a total of two moves in order to subdue Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan, rendering the both of them completely helpless.”

“Two moves?” Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes.

“That’s right. While there are many smaller holes on the ground, which makes it seem as if there was an intense battle, there are only two larger pits. The first pit is cloaked with a layer of frost, so I deduce that it should be the area where Zhao Ya faced off with the culprit!”

Tracing Sword Saint Meng’s finger, Zhang Xuan saw a slightly deeper pit with chilling frost lingering around it.

“It’s likely that Zhao Ya was intending to launch an attack, but it was deflected by the culprit. The deflected energy ended up scattering around the area, resulting in the many smaller holes. From that, it could be seen that even when Zhao Ya was utilizing the limits of her strength, she was still no match for the culprit at all,” Sword Saint Meng analyzed.

Zhang Xuan examined the surroundings once more and realized that the smaller holes seemed to congregate around the larger pit, which lent credibility to Sword Saint Meng’s analysis. Furthermore, there were no notable marks of battle aside from that, so it was safe to assume that the battle had ended with that single collision.

“The same applies to Wei Ruyan through the other pit. Furthermore, from the proximity of the two larger pits, my guess is that the both of them made a move simultaneously, but the culprit still managed to subdue them with ease!” Sword Saint Meng said with a grim look on her face.

To be honest, she was a little astounded by her own discovery. For an individual to be able to subdue two top-notch experts in a single move... just who in the world could the culprit be? And what was their motive for doing this?

Did the culprit not know that their actions would turn the Glacier Plain Court, Poison Hall, Sanctum of Sages, and even the Zhang Clan against him?

Each of those powers had extraordinary trump cards in their grasp that they would never use unless in desperate situations. Otherwise, they would not have been able to remain standing on the Master Teacher Continent for so many years.

“Clan head!”

While the two of them were still trying to make sense out of the situation, an elder of the Zhang Clan suddenly flew over and called out.

He was the Eighth Elder, the person who had delivered the message to Zhang Xuan earlier.

Zhang Xuan turned his head over questioningly.

The Eighth Elder clasped his fist and reported anxiously, “Reporting to the clan head, the Yuan Clan has just sent a request for help. Their young master has been kidnapped by someone as well!”

“Yuan Tao has been kidnapped, too?” Zhang Xuan nearly exploded on the spot.

“This is the message that an elder of the Yuan Clan just sent over...” The Eighth Elder passed a jade token over.

Zhang Xuan lowered his head and browsed through it gravely.

Unlike the case with Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan, the culprit had stomped right into the Yuan Clan, breaching all of its defenses in an instant. Not even the full might of the Yuan Clan was enough to stop them. Before they could even clearly see whom the culprit was, the culprit had already fled with Yuan Tao in their grasp.

“Where’s the Yuan Clan?” Zhang Xuan asked the Eighth Elder anxiously.

“The Yuan Clan is located here!” Sword Saint Meng said as she quickly sent the coordinates over.

“Let’s head over right now!”



After confirming the location, Zhang Xuan took out another bunch of grade-9 formation flags and constructed a Teleportation Formation.

Hu!

The duo disappeared from the spot.

The next instant, they were already in the vicinity of the Yuan Clan.

“Clan Head Zhang, Sword Saint Meng...”

Very soon, the deputy clan head of the Yuan Clan led the two of them to the main hall.

“We didn’t manage to catch the appearance of the culprit clearly, but he was wearing a long robe when he entered the Yuan Clan. Our first thought was that he was a master teacher, but there were some discrepancies in his attire. As soon as he arrived, he immediately captured Yuan Tao. We tried to stop him, but he simply blasted through out Guardian Formation with a single palm strike,” the deputy clan head said as he pointed at the formation above.

Zhang Xuan and Sword Saint Meng turned their gazes upward and saw a palm print on the roof and even the formations above them.

A formation should not have any tangible form other than its formation flags, thus making it highly difficult to deal with. Yet, to be able to tear a hole right through multiple formations and even prevent the formations from converging back in to repair the hole... the culprit would truly be a troublesome person to deal with.

As one of the top Sage Clans on the continent, the Guardian Formation of the Yuan Clan was the crystallization of the wisdom of many generations of experts. Even among grade-9 formations, it was ranked at the very top.

It would be no exaggeration to say that even those who had reached the pinnacle of Great Sage would be unable to do so, yet the culprit was able to do it with a single palm strike. It was no wonder he could capture Yuan Tao, who had already awakened his Emperor’s Bloodline, so easily...

It seemed like the culprit had already achieved an inconceivable level of strength.

“Even Yang shi would not necessarily be able to pull this off...” Sword Saint Meng’s lips twitched at the sight as well.

She had sparred with Yang shi before, so she had a rough idea of just how powerful the latter was. Since she had said such words, it was likely the case.

With a concerned frown, Zhang Xuan could not help but ask, “Is the culprit... an Ancient Sage?”

Having reached the pinnacle of Great Sage, Yang shi was indubitably one of the strongest experts on the Master Teacher Continent, matched by very few in the newer generation. The only ones who could really outdo him would be the Ancient Sages.

And the only one whom Zhang Xuan knew had the ability to do so was the Otherworldly Demonic Emperor.

“No, the culprit isn’t an Ancient Sage.” The deputy clan head shook his head. “I still can recognize the aura of Ancient Sages, and I’m certain that the other party hasn’t reached such a level yet!”

“The culprit is so powerful despite having yet to reach Ancient Sage?” Zhang Xuan’s heart jolted in astonishment.

“Does the culprit possess some means reminiscent to the Pavilion Master Seal, granting him strength invincible among those beneath Ancient Sage?”

# 1573 Just Who Could It Be?

While Yang shi was unable to pull off a palm strike that could blast a hole right through the Yuan Clan's Guardian Formation, Zhang Xuan felt that he should be able to do it with the power of the Pavilion Master Seal. Could this mean that the culprit wielded strength comparable to him even in his enhanced state?

But he was already making use of Kong shi's blood essence! Did the culprit have something on par with that?

“But that's impossible!”

The fact that the Pavilion Master Seal containing three droplets of Kong shi's blood was considered one of the strongest artifacts of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters was enough to show how valuable and rare it was. It did not seem too probable for there to be a second artifact in the world that could compare to it.

Even if the other party had Kong shi's blood droplets in their possession, based on what he knew, only Celestial Master Teachers should be able to utilize the power within them. So, it should not be possible for them to utilize the power within the blood droplets.

Unable to make sense of the situation, Zhang Xuan asked, “Could it be an Ancient Sage intentionally lowering his cultivation?”

“That isn't too likely... If an Ancient Sage was truly here, the Ancient Sage of our Yuan Clan would surely have sensed his presence and awoken” replied the deputy clan head, shaking his head.

Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in realization.

If the Yuan Clan had a hibernating Ancient Sage, it would make sense for him to awaken upon sensing the presence of other Ancient Sages.

The fact that their Ancient Sage remained motionless despite the assault from the culprit showed that even though the culprit wielded incredible strength, he had yet to achieve a breakthrough to Ancient Sage.

“To wield such strength despite not being an Ancient Sage... just who could it be?” Zhang Xuan’s complexion was turning worse and worse.

It might have been better if the culprit was a real Ancient Sage so that the Yuan Clan’s Ancient Sage had awoken and stopped him or, at the very least, found out who the culprit was. However, that was unfortunately not the case, and that effectively left them with no clues to work with.

All of a sudden, Zhang Xuan recalled something and asked anxiously, “Yuan Clan, do you know where the Spirit Awakener Guild headquarters is located in?”

“I have a map over here!” The head of the Yuan Clan flicked his hand and passed a jade token over.

“Are you worried that the culprit might make a move on Wang Ying too?” Sword Saint Meng immediately understood Zhang Xuan’s intentions.

“That’s right!” Zhang Xuan nodded in response.

Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao... Three of his direct disciples had been kidnapped just like that. If the culprit was intentionally working against him, Wang Ying was likely to be the next victim!

As for Zheng Yang, he should be safe with the Combat Master Hall. Even if the culprit really wielded prowess invincible beneath Ancient Sage, the culprit was still unlikely to provoke the powerful Combat Master Hall easily, so Zheng Yang should be in a considerably safer position.

“Let’s quickly head over!”

Zhang Xuan quickly set up a Teleportation Formation, and before long, they were already in the Spirit Awakener Guild headquarters.

After having expended her energy in activating three Teleportation Formations and using her zhenqi to protect Zhang Xuan from the spatial turbulence, Sword Saint Meng was starting to show signs of exhaustion.

“Teacher, why are you here? We were just planning to head over to the Luo Clan to celebrate your engagement!” Wang Ying was delighted by Zhang Xuan’s arrival, but a slight hint of bewilderment could be seen in the depths of her eyes.

She knew that her teacher would not come to visit her all of a sudden without any reason, especially since they were soon going to meet in the Luo Clan.

“Wang Ying... Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao have been kidnapped!” Zhang Xuan explained grimly.

“They have been kidnapped?” Wang Ying’s eyes dilated in disbelief as her body trembled in shock. “But... who could possibly have the strength to kidnap them?”

“I have no idea either. I was worried that something might have happened to you, so I rushed over to check on you,” Zhang Xuan said.

“Teacher, you suspect that the person might make a move on me next?” Wang Ying swiftly understood what was going on. She turned around and instructed, “Elder Qin, inform all spirit awakeners to prepare themselves. A battle could be coming very soon!”

“Yes!” Understanding the severity of the situation, Elder Qin quickly left the area to make preparations.

After making arrangements, Wang Ying turned to Zhang Xuan worriedly. “Teacher, do you how Senior Zhao Ya and the others are doing at the moment?”

“I don’t know that either. The culprit didn’t leave behind any trail, so even I’m unable to track the other party down...” Zhang Xuan shook his head with a deep frown. “For the time being, I’m thinking of lying in wait here. As long as the culprit strikes once more, we’ll be able to apprehend and interrogate him!”

“I understand!”

Realizing her teacher's intentions, Wang Ying nodded before falling silent. She arranged a place for the two of them to rest before sitting down to cultivate, not wasting any time at all.

She was unable to match up to Zhao Ya and the others in terms of talent, so she could only make it up with her diligence. Along with the ample resources that she had as the head of the Spirit Awakener Guild, she was still able to improve considerably quickly.

As they waited, the day soon went by. Before they knew it, the sun had already risen once again.

However, there was still no movement from the culprit. It was as if the culprit knew that they were there and had chosen to lie low for the time being.

Unable to wait patiently any longer, Zhang Xuan stood up and asked, "Do you have any long-range Communication Formations here? Send a message over to Zheng Yang to check if he's alright."

"Alright, Teacher!" Wang Ying replied before leaving the room.

Not too long later, she returned. "Teacher, Senior Zheng Yang has already arrived in the Luo Clan. It doesn't seem like he has met with any trouble along the way..."

"Nothing happened on his end either?" Zhang Xuan frowned.

As the culprit had made a move on Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao one after another, he figured that the culprit meant him and his students harm. That was the reason he had chosen to camp in the Spirit Awakener Guild for an entire day, waiting for the culprit to appear. Yet, it turned out that nothing had happened during this duration. Could he have mistaken the intentions of the culprit?

All of a sudden, Zhang Xuan's body stiffened as he exclaimed in horror, "Unique constitutions!"

Previously, Yang Shi had said that in order to obtain the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn, other than gathering all six Celestial Amulets of Legacy, one could also break the seal

through substituting the amulets with the blood of those possessing specific unique constitutions.

Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao's unique constitutions happened to be the few unique constitutions that could be used to substitute the amulets.

On the other hand, Wang Ying and Zheng Yang did not possess a unique constitution, which might explain why they had not been targeted.

Could that be the reason why the three of them had been targeted?

If that was the intention of the culprit, in a sense, this could be considered good news as the three of them should not be in any danger for the time being.

After all, the purpose for the culprit capturing them was to open the seal to the Temple of Confucius and not to kill them. In order to ensure that nothing went wrong, it was unlikely for the culprit to harm them until the seal was finally deciphered.

“From this moment onward, Wang Ying, you should follow me around. Try not to stray too far away!” Zhang Xuan pondered for a moment before instructing.

In the end, the matter about unique constitution was just speculation on his part. It would still be best for him to be careful.

“Where do you intend to head to now?” Sword Saint Meng asked.

After a day of rest, she had recuperated from her exertion the previous day. Her aura had regained its usual sharpness, reminiscent of a keen edge that could slice the heavens in two.

“Let's return to the Luo Clan!” Zhang Xuan said.

“Right now?” Sword Saint Meng was surprised to hear those words.

She could tell that there was a deep bond between her son and his students, so she had thought that her son would want to further investigate the issue.

“There are some things that I would like to ask Yang Shi. Also, if the culprit is really searching for unique constitutions, I suspect that he might go for the little princess next. If that’s the case, there’s a chance that he might wreak havoc during the engagement ceremony!” Zhang Xuan said.

There was also one more thing he had neglected to mention, and that was that the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan each possessed a Celestial Amulet of Legacy!

If the culprit had really captured Zhao Ya and the others for the sake of opening the Temple of Confucius, there was no way he would pass on the real Celestial Amulets of Legacy. Furthermore, today was the day of the engagement between him and the little princess of the Luo Clan, so nearly the entire upper echelons of the two clans would be around.

From such a perspective, it could be an ideal opportunity for the culprit to strike if he wanted to acquire the real Celestial Amulets of Legacy!

Thus, the most effective move that he could make at this moment was actually to return to the Luo Clan!

Besides, if he could learn from Yang Shi how the unique constitutions could be used to decipher the seal in the Temple of Confucius, he might be able to uncover some useful clues that would help him track down the culprit.

“Let’s go then!”

Seeing that Zhang Xuan had made up his mind, Sword Saint Meng decided not to say too much. They swiftly constructed a Teleportation Formation and warped back to the Luo Clan.



# 1574 The Little Princess’ Happiness 1

It was a bustling sight within the Luo Clan. Festive lanterns were hung all around, and auspicious red cloth cloaked the buildings throughout Shrouding Ethereal City, indicating a joyous celebration.

On this jolly day, the First Elder of the Luo Clan, Luo Qingchen, was dressed in a grand robe stitched with golden lining as he stood at the entrance to the main hall of the Luo Clan with a radiant smile on his wrinkled face.

“The head of the Jiang Clan, Jiang Fangyou, has arrived with thirty Saint 8-dan beasts to congratulate the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan on their engagement!”

“The head of the Mu Clan, Mu Hengzhen, has arrived with three boxes of thousand-year-old medicinal herbs and ten stalks of the Truespirit Pipa Tree to congratulate the union of the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan!”

“The head of the Shui Clan, Shui Fangtian, has arrived with three thousand Wateranima Crystals, five thousand Southern Sea Diamonds, and two hundred 7-star Dragon Eyes to offer early congratulations to the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan for their matrimony!”

...

Such declarations sounded one after another as eminent figures of the Master Teacher Continent arrived one after another with wide smiles on their faces.

Even a stomp of one of these figures’ feet would resound loudly throughout the continent, but at that moment, they were personally delivering invaluable gifts to the Luo Clan, not daring to show the slightest hint of impoliteness.

Looking at the bustle all around, one of the elders in charge of welcoming the guests could not help but remark in awe. “It

seems like the entire continent has heard of Zhang Shi's affairs in the Empire Alliance just a few days ago. This is just the engagement ceremony, but they are already delivering such generous gifts. I can't begin to imagine how long the queue of gifts will be for the official wedding..."

While the Luo Clan wielded considerable influence on the Master Teacher Continent, it was far beyond its means to gather so many powerhouses together on the spur of the moment.

In fact, even the Zhang Clan would have trouble pulling something like that off.

But Zhang Xuan, the current head of the Zhang Clan, had managed to do it during a mere engagement ceremony. There was no doubt that the official marriage ceremony would be far grander than this, such that even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters would feel compelled to send an envoy down to relay their blessings.

Of course, the reason for this unprecedented grandeur could only be attributed to the magnificent show of power from Zhang Xuan a few days earlier. By now, the news should have already spread far and wide across the entire continent.

In the tens of thousands of years since the establishment of the Master Teacher Pavilion, no one had ever successfully escaped from its arrest warrant before. However, Zhang Xuan had created history on that very day. Not only did the world learn that the future head of the Combat Master Hall, the master of the Poison Hall, the chief of the Glacier Plain Court, and so on were all his students, he was even the head of the Sanctum of Sages and Yang Shi's senior.

That news had really shocked the entire world.

With so many distinguished identities to his name, how could these shrewd powers possibly remain oblivious to the stance that they ought to take?

It was also with knowledge of this that the Zhang Clan did not hesitate to conduct the inauguration ceremony to officialize Zhang Xuan's position as the clan head. Under Zhang Xuan's

halo, the Zhang Clan's position was immediately brought to an unprecedented height. With so many formidable powers under the Zhang Clan's sphere of influence, the Zhang Clan would only grow stronger with time.

Given so, who would dare snub the Zhang Clan's dignity and refuse to offer their congratulations?

Putting aside something as important as an engagement ceremony, even if Zhang Xuan suffered the slightest cold, there was no doubt that an army of clan heads and sect leaders would swiftly deliver medicine and artifacts over as a display of goodwill!

"Indeed. How many years has it been since our Luo Clan last enjoyed such splendor?" another elder by the side replied deeply.

Even when their little princess had shocked the world by successfully assimilated the Dimension Silencer, thus elevating the reputation of the Luo Clan to new heights, only a couple of clans had come to the Luo Clan to offer their congratulations. Yet, in this very moment, nearly all of the notable powers throughout the Master Teacher Continent had arrived to convey their best wishes.

It was no wonder the two elders felt as they did.

"Previously, when there was completely no news from the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan, I had still been lamenting at how unfair the engagement was for the little princess. Who could have thought that the young prodigy would suddenly appear before our eyes once more with such magnificence, reminiscent to how it was when he was born back then!"

"Indeed, indeed! Born as a Connate Saint, even Kong Shi's sculpture levitated into the air to pay its respects to him, and the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters specially sent an envoy down to relay their goodwill. There was no one in the world back then who didn't know about the extraordinary young prodigy of the Zhang Clan! Truly, he didn't disappoint us even after all these years!"

“Well, a star will eventually shine, but more importantly, who could have thought that person the little princess likes would actually be him too! I can’t even begin to describe how happy I am for the little princess. After all the heavy tension over the past few months, it seems like everything will be resolved perfectly...”

Many elders nodded delightfully in agreement at those words.

Despite the glory cast on the Luo Clan as a result of the marriage with the Zhang Clan, as long as the little princess was not fond of her fiancé, it would be like dynamite had been planted in their midst, waiting to explode at a trigger.

Fortunately, it had been found that the little princess and the young prodigy actually had mutual feelings for one another, and this was the best ending that everyone hoped to see.

...

Away from the bustle at the forefront, there was a small residence deep in the Luo Clan that was filled with resplendent flowers. Within one of the rooms, a young lady sat before a mirror, carefully dressing herself up.

A maid standing behind the young lady combed her hair carefully as she excitedly exclaimed, “Young Mistress, doesn’t it sound very lively outside? I heard that many distinguished figures have come to our Luo Clan!”

“I know, I know. This is the third time that you have said that!” The young lady shook her head with a helpless smile.

“Back then, I couldn’t understand why someone as outstanding as our Young Mistress would fancy a principal from a Tier-1 Empire’s Master Teacher Academy, but it turns out that the future Young Master is actually a remarkable figure! Without saying a word at all, so many powers have already come to offer their congratulations. Other than the Master Teacher Pavilion, I can’t think of any power that could possibly wield such influence!” the maid combing the young lady’s hair remarked with admiration twinkling in her eyes.

“Not to forget, the Master Teacher Pavilion is without its real pavilion master at the moment, so it would be difficult for it to

rally so many people at once!” another maid chirped in with a chuckle.

“Our Young Mistress is truly a person blessed by the heavens!”

Just like that, the two maids chatted delightfully among themselves.

The young lady seated in front of the mirror looked at her impeccable appearance in the mirror, and a blissful smile crept onto her lips.

All of a sudden, the young lady turned around to look at the maid behind her, and the blissful smile on her face was replaced by uncertainty and apprehension. “Have you found out what I asked you to investigate? Zhang shi... did he say anything when he arrived yesterday?”

“This...”

The maid was taken aback by the young lady’s sudden actions. Just as she was about to speak, footsteps abruptly sounded outside, and cheerful laughter filled the air. “There’s no need to ask them. I have already checked on your behalf!”

“Young Master!” Upon seeing who the person who had just walked into the room was, the maids quickly bowed down.

“Un!” Luo Xuanqing waved his hands, gesturing for the maids to rest easy. Looking at his younger sister, he chuckled. “When I spoke of you before the lad yesterday, he was so agitated that he would have flown right to your side if he could. If not for me holding him back, he really might have done so!”

“He was... agitated?” The young lady’s face reddened in embarrassment. “Elder Brother, please don’t make fun of me! Are you certain that he was agitated because of me?”

“Aren’t you asking the obvious? He’s already here to ask for your hand in marriage, so how could he not know who you are? There’s no need to worry!” Luo Xuanqing shook his head, not understanding his younger sister’s worries.

Perhaps this was how brides were. The closer they were to their marriage, the more unnerved they became.

“That’s a relief. I was just thinking that when I had disguised my appearance when I first met him...” the little princess replied with an awkward smile. “I was afraid that he wouldn’t recognize me after seeing my true appearance.”

“Young Mistress, rest assured! I have seen your disguised look, too, and the current you looks at least ten times prettier than you did back then! There’s no way the future Young Master wouldn’t be charmed by your beauty!” a maid remarked joyfully.

“That’s surely the case, Young Mistress. I can swear on my life that if you meet him with your current looks, he will swiftly fall in love with you all over again,” the other maid teased with a smile.

“The two of you only know how to tease me!” the young lady retorted with a crimson blush on her face. Turning her gaze back to Luo Xuanqing, she asked, “Elder Brother, where is he at the moment?”

“He has some matters to attend to, so he’s currently out at the moment, but he should be returning very soon. Yuxin, you don’t have to worry about anything. I’m sure that you don’t want him to see you with a fretful frown on your face, right?” Luo Xuanqing chuckled as he massaged the young lady’s glabella to loosen the deep creases there.

“Un!” The young lady nodded with a smile.

As far as she could remember, she had always carried the burden of an engagement. She had thought that this was the only path that she could follow, and the only thing that she could do was compromise. As such, she had never dared imagine a life where she walked down the long journey of life with the person whom she loved till the end of their time.

Perhaps, the heavens were not as heartless as she thought.

# 1575 The Little Princess’ Happiness 2

Seeing the euphoric look on his younger sister’s face, Luo Xuanqing said with a relieved smile, “Sword Saint Xing of the Zhang Clan is currently discussing the plans for the marriage ceremony with our father, and we have already accepted their betrothal gifts. Most likely, you will return to the Zhang Clan with that lad today. You should quickly head out once you are done preparing—the guests are dying to meet you!”

While he was a little reluctant to see his younger sister marrying another man, this was already the best possible situation there could possibly be. Such a coincidence was one that he never would have dared imagine to be possible.

“Un!” The young lady nodded before turning her gaze back to the mirror. “Help me check if there’s anywhere that needs more tidying up...”

“Don’t worry, Young Mistress. There’s no one who could be more beautiful than you today!” the maid behind replied with a smile.

All along, the Young Mistress had been a cold and composed person. Who could have thought that she would have such a side to her when it came to the person whom she loved?

“Is that so?” Heaving a sigh of relief, the young lady stood up and looked at her elder brother with a demure smile. “Elder Brother, let’s go!”

“Un!” Luo Xuanqing nodded as he led the way out.

The two maids quickly followed behind them.

The young lady could not resist asking, “Elder Brother, who is here today?”

While she had heard rumors about the formidable lineup of guests from the maids, she was not too clear about the specifics.

“Nearly all of the clan heads and First Elders of the Sage Clans are present. It seems like that lad’s reputation is really one to behold!” Luo Xuanqing chuckled.

To be honest, even he could hardly believe that so many people had come.

“All of the Sage Clans’ clan heads are present?” The young lady widened her eyes in astonishment. “They are all here... to congratulate us on our engagement?”

“Why else do you think?” Luo Xuanqing replied. “The last time something as grand as this happened was when our founder established the Luo Clan, but there weren’t even as many guests back then. Your engagement has really pushed the Luo Clan back to the top of the Master Teacher Continent once more. While that lad can be unreliable from time to time, I must say that he has really done well this time. He has allowed our little princess over here to marry in fashion, not suffering the slightest grievance at all!”

“Un!” The young lady nodded as a warm surge flowed into her heart.

Despite having assimilated the Dimension Silencer and becoming the strongest expert in the younger generation, she knew that even she did not have the influence to rally so many people at once.

This glory would be eternally carved in the history of the Luo Clan, remembered even after many millenniums.

“The Young Mistress has always wished to marry the person whom she loves with the blessing of the entire world. Can this be considered as her wish coming true?” one of the maids behind asked with a smile.

“Of course! If this can’t be considered as the blessing of the entire world, what else could be?” Luo Xuanqing replied. “The main hall is right ahead. You should put on your veil first!”

While merrily chatting, they finally arrived before the main hall. With a gaze from Luo Xuanqing, the maids behind quickly covered the young lady’s ravishing looks with a red veil.



According to tradition, the bride had to cover her face with a red veil during the engagement ceremony. With so many powers observing the ceremony, this tradition had to be respected.

After putting on the red veil, the young lady walked into the main hall behind Luo Xuanqing. Before they could even assume their positions, a loud declaration came from behind.

“Deputy Sanctum Head Zhan Tiancheng and the many elders of the Sanctum of Sages have arrived to congratulate the fated couple from the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan!”

“Deputy Pavilion Master Ren Qingyuan and ten other 9-star master teachers from the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters have come to relay their blessings to the engaged couple!”

“Even the personnel from the Sanctum of Sages and Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters have come? Furthermore, it’s the deputy sanctum head and the deputy pavilion master!” The young lady was astounded.

It was already shocking to see that all of the heads of the Sage Clans had come to offer their best wishes, but to think that even the deputy pavilion master of the Master Teacher Pavilion would arrive with so many 9-star master teachers to relay their blessings! There was truly no greater honor than this.

With a ceremony of such a scale, there was nothing more that she could ask for!

“Grand Elder Huo Shiqing of the Master Teacher Pavilion has come with his disciples to congratulate the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan!”

“Huo Shiqing? Isn’t that the grand elder who has already retired from the secular world? Why would he attend this wedding ceremony as well?”

“I have no idea. Previously, when Ren Qingyuan was inaugurated as the deputy pavilion master, an invitation was sent to Huo Shiqing as well, but he turned down the invitation. Who would have expected him to attend this wedding instead?”

“Could there be any greater honor than this? If I were the little princess of the Luo Clan, I would have died of bliss by now!”

...

Shocked and envious exclamations erupted all around.

“Even Grand Elder Huo Shiqing is here as well...” The young lady clenched her fists tightly in agitation.

When she was still a young child, her father had taken her to Huo Shiqing in the hope of convincing the latter to tutor her, only to be turned down. Who would have thought that the other party would actually attend her engagement ceremony!

“Mystical Hands Gentleman has come to relay his blessings!”

“Grand Elder Wu Qing of the Blacksmith Guild has come to congratulate the soon-to-be-wedded couple!”

“Priest of the Calm Lake Du Yiyao have come to relay their blessings!”

“Frenzied Saber Ling Huchong has come to offer his best wishes!”

...

The shock did not stop with just the arrival of Grand Elder Huo Shiqing. Soon, many more declarations sounded outside.

Many familiar names who had left a mark in the history of the Master Teacher Continent sounded one after another in the ears of the crowd, raising an uproar in the main hall.

“Mystical Hands Gentleman is a figure who rose into prominence a thousand years ago. He was once the head of the Physician Guild, but he suddenly disappeared from the world five hundred years ago. Many thought that he had passed on, but who knew that not only is he still alive, he even came to relay his blessings to the newlywed?”

“That legendary man has saved the lives of countless experts during his time, such that many of the experts from the older generation are indebted to him!”

“Isn’t Grand Elder Wu Qing known as the Heartless Blacksmith, devoid of any sentiments or emotions even to his

loved ones? It's said that his son personally begged him to forge a weapon for his lover, only to be shut out of his door. Yet, he actually came for this engagement ceremony..."

"I have taken a look at his gift, and it seems to be a Great Sage-tier treasure!"

"Who is the Priest of the Calm Lake?"

"That man is quite an eccentric figure on the Master Teacher Continent. He made a name for himself three hundred years ago when he defeated three 9-star master teachers simultaneously with his swordsmanship. He's very fond of chess, and he has gone around the world challenging chess experts one after another, only to be unable to find a worthy rival. But one day, he abruptly disappeared from the face of the continent, his whereabouts known to none. I never would have thought that he would come for the engagement ceremony today!"

"Actually, the one whom I respect the most is still Frenzied Saber Ling Huchong..."

"I came here hoping to forge a good relationship with the Luo Clan and the Zhang Clan, but who could have thought that I would actually have the honor of meeting these distinguished experts as well... This is really a huge eye opener for me. This trip here hasn't been wasted!"

"Indeed. I would have regretted it for life if I had missed out on such a huge gathering!"

...

As the names that only existed in legends in the minds of the crowd sounded one after another, a huge uproar broke out amid the crowd.

Even the esteemed heads of the Sage Clans trembled excitedly in face of these legendary figures, as if little kids meeting their idols.

"Zhang shi was the one who got all of them here?"

With her face veiled, the young lady was unable to see what was happening around her. However, she could still roughly

figure out what was going on from the discussion of others, and her eyes reddened in agitation.

As a female offspring of a major clan, her fate had already been determined at birth. Knowing that she could only walk down the path that others had carved for her, she had never dared dream of the future. She had never thought that her life could ever be so dazzling and magnificent!

“Thank you...”

Knowing that Zhang shi must have gone through a lot of effort to specially invite them over for this occasion, the young lady’s heart was filled with gratitude.

“Look, Zhang shi is here!”

At that moment, another commotion broke out amid the crowd. Zhang Xuan and Sword Saint Meng were making their way into the main hall from afar.

# 1576 The Storm After the Calm

“How come there are so many people around?”

Zhang Xuan had rushed all the way back to the Luo Clan, but before he even arrived at the main hall where the guests were hosted, he had already nearly fainted from shock.

He was only here to ask for Luo Ruoxin’s marriage in hand—it was not even their marriage yet! He had thought that it would just be a small ceremony consisting mainly of his students, but that notion had swiftly been overthrown by the sight before him.

“Given the commotion that you’ve caused, it’s a given that you would draw so many people here! As for those experts who have already gone into seclusion, I figure that they have come on Yang shi’s account!” Sword Saint Meng said.

“Yang shi’s account?”

“That’s right! Grand Elder Huo Shiqing of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters once received Yang shi’s guidance, and the two of them are very close friends with one another. As for the Mystical Hands Gentleman, it’s said that Yang shi once saved him from a treacherous predicament. I’m not too sure about Wu Qing, but for the Priest of the Calm Lake, it’s said that he challenged Yang shi to a chess battle several hundred years ago, only to lose tragically. Eventually, he could only resign himself to becoming a guard for Yang shi’s residence,” Sword Saint Meng explained with a smile.

Those were confidential secrets, but due to the close relationship between the Zhang Clan and Yang shi, she was still aware of quite a few things.

Considering that most of them were seniors who had already retired from the secular world, who other than Yang shi could possibly have the ability to rally them together?

“I’ll have to make sure to relay my thanks to Yang shi later on then,” Zhang Xuan remarked as he shook his head with a bitter smile.

He had come to ask for Luo Ruoxin’s hand in marriage, but it turned out to be something far larger than what he had thought it would be.

However, it was apparent that Yang shi was doing this for him too.

The more imposing the engagement ceremony was, the greater his influence would be. In the future, when he revealed his identity as the Celestial Master Teacher, his authority and prestige would be greater, too!

“Let’s enter the main hall!” Sword Saint Meng said.

As soon as the two of them entered the main hall, Lu Chong and Zheng Yang swiftly rushed up to him.

“Teacher!”

They had also heard the news, and it had left them deeply worried and anxious.

“I’ve been to the scene, and with the culprit’s strength, he could easily do away with Zhao Ya and the others if he wanted to. The fact that he chose to go through the trouble of kidnapping them instead means that they won’t be in any danger for the time being!” Zhang Xuan reassured the two young men before him.

“However, we still mustn’t let our guard down. Since the culprit has made the first move, we can anticipate more actions from him in the future. If I’m right, there’s a good chance that the culprit might appear here today... So, prepare yourselves for battle at any moment!”

“Un!” Zheng Yang and Lu Chong traded glances before nodding simultaneously.

Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan were by no means weaker than them, yet the culprit had still managed to kidnap them so easily. If the culprit went to the Luo Clan, they would really have to use

everything at their disposal in order to prevent the culprit from getting away!

“Clan Head Zhang, I am the sect leader of the Lucid River Sect. It’s really an honor to be able to witness the engagement between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan...”

Shortly after Lu Chong and Zheng Yang walked away to make preparations, the others in the room swiftly swarmed over after confirming Zhang Xuan’s identity.

“That’s Zhang shi? He sure is an extraordinary young man!”

“Despite only being twenty this year, not only has he become the head of the Sanctum of Sages, all of his students are also powerhouses of the Master Teacher Continent. I really wonder how he managed to do this...”

“I heard that even the esteemed Yang shi has to call him Senior!”

“Given Yang shi’s guidance and the fact that he possesses the purest bloodline in the Zhang Clan, it’s no wonder he has achieved such heights at his young age!”

...

“Everyone, there’s always time to get together and chat in the future. It wouldn’t be good if we made the pair of soon-to-be-newlyweds miss their auspicious hour!” Luo Qingchen stepped forward and calmed the crowd down.

Be it for engagement or marriage, it was always best to pick out the most auspicious moment in order to bless the couple. Such traditions were exceptionally important for large clans with a long heritage such as the Luo Clan.

Knowing this, the crowd shared some pleasantries before swiftly opening a pathway into the main hall.

Zhang Xuan inwardly heaved a sigh of relief before following Luo Qingchen to the center of the main hall.

There were three chairs at the very center, and Sword Saint Xing and Yang shi were seated in two of them.

As for the last one, it was taken up by a rather imposing-looking middle-aged man. His facial features bore some semblance of Luo Xuanqing's, but they were a little deeper and more authoritative. Without a doubt, the middle-aged man was the little princess' father, as well as his future father-in-law.

Standing behind the middle-aged man was Luo Xuanqing and a demure young lady with a red veil concealing her appearance.

“Ruoxin...”

Zhang Xuan's body tensed up upon seeing the young lady, and indescribable joy surged through his body.

The several months that they had been apart from one another felt like several decades to him. There was no day or night when the young lady had not crossed his mind.

Zhang Xuan took in a deep breath to calm his agitation before forcefully turning his attention back to the discussion between the heads of the two clans, wanting to hear the details for the wedding.

However, his eyes still could not help but drift over to the young lady, and he swiftly noticed that something was amiss. Her physique... looks a little different?

He had sealed his relationship with Luo Ruoxin at the Qiu Wu Palace, but they had ended up parting from one another not too long after that. While the time spent together was extremely short, her beautiful physique was imprinted in the depths of his mind, never to be forgotten. While there was no flaw to be picked with the demure young lady beneath the red veil too, the differences were still apparent to him.

Could it be that she has not only disguised her appearance but her physique back then too?

He had indeed used the Eye of Insight on Luo Ruoxin before, and he was aware that she had disguised her appearance. However, as for her physique, he really had not paid too much heed to it. Could this be what her body truly looked like?



Just as Zhang Xuan's mind was wandering around the place, conflicted as to whether he should use his Spiritual Perception or Eye of Insight on the young lady to assuage the uncertainty in his mind, Sword Saint Xing's voice suddenly sounded ahead of him.

"Xuan-er, our opinion is that the marriage ceremony should be carried out as soon as possible after we return to our Zhang Clan. What's your view on the matter?"

"I have no objections to that!" Zhang Xuan hurriedly nodded.

Marrying Luo Ruoxin had been his greatest desire ever since he arrived on the Master Teacher Continent, and with the end point already in sight, how could he possibly back out at this moment?

"Great, it's settled then! I would like to thank our friends for coming all the way here for us, and I would like to formally invite every single one of you to the Zhang Clan to witness this joyous occasion for both our clans!" Sword Saint Xing laughed heartily.

"Of course, of course!"

"I wouldn't want to miss out on the wedding toast!"

The crowd quickly clasped their fists and replied.

Having decided on the procedures for the marriage ceremony, there was nothing else that needed discussion. Thus, Sword Saint Xing stood up from his seat and gestured grandly.

"Great! Let's set off then!"

At this point, he realized that his son was still standing in a daze by the side, and he could not help but chuckle. "What are you spacing out for? Shouldn't you be leading your future wife to the bridal sedan chair?"

"Yes!"

Zhang Xuan shook himself out of his daze and hurriedly walked over to the young lady. Just as he was about to hold the young lady's hand, a huge commotion suddenly erupted outside, followed by deafening explosions.

“What’s happening?” The head of the Luo Clan hurriedly stood up and looked outside.

One of the elders of the Luo Clan rushed over and reported, “Clan head, bad news! Two intruders are barging into our main hall, and our men aren’t able to stop them...”

“So many experts have gathered here today to witness the marriage between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan, yet there’s still someone who is so brazen as to dare wreak havoc here? Very well, allow me to meet that person then!” The face of the head of the Luo Clan turned livid, and his eyes narrowed menacingly.

To dare stir trouble on such an important occasion, not to mention in the face of so many experts, were the intruders not too impertinent?

“It should be him...” Zhang Xuan quickly shot a glance over to Zheng Yang and the others, only to see that they had already prepared themselves.

Previously, he had already guessed that the culprit who had kidnapped Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao would appear at this important occasion in order to acquire the Celestial Amulets of Legacy from the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan, and considering the fuss that was happening at this moment, it seemed like his intuition was spot-on!

“Let’s head over to take a look as well!” Unable to remain composed upon realizing that the culprit who had kidnapped his students was in the vicinity, Zhang Xuan quickly followed the head of the Luo Clan out.

As he reached the doorway of the main hall, he saw all of the elders of the Luo Clan and the experts who had charged out earlier being knocked back forcefully. Even with their strength combined, they were not a match for the intruders!

“Are they the ones who have kidnapped Zhao Ya?”

With such a thought in mind, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze toward the intruders and saw that the person who had made a move earlier was an adolescent boy, appearing to be only around thirteen to fourteen years old.

Standing behind the adolescent boy was a veiled young lady. While it was impossible to discern her appearance through the veil, it was apparent from her silhouette that she was a rare beauty.

“Her physique...” Zhang Xuan’s body suddenly stiffened as a bad premonition arose in his heart.

Hu la!

At the same moment, the veil concealing the young lady’s face slowly drifted to the ground, revealing a ravishing face that would leave any man frenzied over it.

“Firesource City, I opened my heart to you. Qiu Wu Palace, I swore my future to you... Zhang Xuan, you have promised to be with me no matter what the future holds, but why do I see you marrying another woman here?”

Many emotions rippled in the reddened eyes of the young lady—anger, indignation, sorrow, resentment...

“Y-you are Luo Ruoxin...”

As if a streak of lightning had flashed through his brain, Zhang Xuan’s mind was plunged into chaos.

The young lady before him was none other than the person whom he had sworn to walk down the long journey of life with, Luo Ruoxin!

But if she was Luo Ruoxin... who could the little princess be?

Hurriedly turning around, Zhang Xuan saw the other young lady removing her red veil, revealing a breathtaking countenance that carried some semblance of someone he knew.

Zhang Xuan froze on the spot. “Qiqi...” “It’s a widespread Chinese superstition that there are certain days and hours that are more auspicious than the others, and this often influences the choice of date and time for one’s marriage. For those who are unfamiliar with traditional Chinese wedding process, the groom usually first heads to the bride’s family to fetch the bride and put her into a bridal sedan chair, which is basically a red carriage carried by men. The groom would lead to the

bride back to the groom's family, where the marriage ceremony would be conducted.

# 1577 Who Dares to Hurt Him?

She was much more beautiful than the Luo Qiqi that he knew, but from her disposition, gaze, and gesture, he could still see the student who was filled with admiration for him in her, Luo Qiqi!

It was in the Huanyu Empire that they first met. Despite her cold exterior, she was a very hardworking and driven person, never hesitating to lower her pride in order to improve herself.

At Qingyuan City, she confessed to him earnestly, only to be pushed away then.

He had thought that it would be unlikely for them to meet once more after their parting then, but who could have thought that... their reunion would actually come in such a form?

“How could Qiqi be the little princess?” Zhang Xuan felt as if he was going to crumble into pieces.

All this time, he had thought that Luo Ruoxin was the little princess of the Luo Clan. In order to be with her, he had desperately trained and cultivated; he had wreaked havoc in the Zhang Clan; he tried his best to get close with Luo Xuanqing...

But all of a sudden, it turned out that the little princess was actually Qiqi, not Luo Ruoxin... His mind simply could not accept that fact all of a sudden.

“Luo shi...” Luo Qiqi had also noticed Luo Ruoxin as well, and her body trembled a little.

She knew that Zhang Xuan had always viewed her as his student, and his feelings for her were not romantic in nature. So, when she heard that the other party had come to ask for her hand in marriage, she had been surprised. It had been like a dream come true for her, but she did not dare harbor any expectations about it. She had thought that it might have been

a mistake, so she had kept urging her elder brother to verify the matter for her.

And the moment that she saw Luo Ruoxin, she immediately understood everything.

Could it be that... Zhang Xuan had thought that she was actually Luo Ruoxin?

Could it be that... the person whom Zhang Xuan truly loved was the master teacher of the Hongyuan Empire, Luo Shi?

Otherwise, what could her words about Firesource City and the Qiu Wu Palace possibly mean?

Luo Qiqi felt as if a knife had plunged deep into her heart. All of the bliss that she had felt receded like water flowing through her hand. She found herself completely helpless as despair encroached on her. There was nothing she could do but tremble powerlessly as the tragedy unfolded before her eyes.

Using the Dimension Silencer to seal her cultivation had come with many flaws. A huge portion of her memory had been locked away in the sealing process as well, and it could only be recovered after her cultivation reached a certain level.

Despite that, there was no doubt that this young man was the first person to have walked into her heart, and this had not changed even with her memories unlocked. Her feelings for him remained as vivid as before.

She had been born with great talent, and those around her expected great things from her. She had always tried to meet their expectations, but meeting him had made her realize that such a life was not what she truly wanted. The time spent with him had given rise to a very simple yet faraway dream for her.

She wished that the person she loved would one day marry her with blessings from the entire world!

Everything had been perfect. The person she loved had come to propose to her, and the entire world had pretty much come to offer their blessings for her marriage. Yet, everything beyond had veered off course.

It was no wonder Zhang Xuan had refused to accept her feelings, forcefully changing the conversation to turn her down subtly. It turned out that he already had someone whom he fancied then, and the both of them had already gotten together.

Otherwise, there was no way Luo Shi would have rushed in at this moment and uttered those words.

As this thought came to mind, a tear flowed down Luo Qiqi's cheek.

...

“You said that you would wait for me. You said that no matter how difficult it would be, we would eventually be together...” Ignoring the gazes from the surroundings, Luo Ruoxin gazed at Zhang Xuan with eyes reminiscent of an inferno, as if wanting to bore a hole through this man and peer into his heart.

Due to her birth, she had never dared devote her feelings to anyone. She could not afford to allow herself to be vulnerable. She had always maintained an icy-cold exterior before others, and it had protected her well until the frost in her heart had slowly been thawed by the young man before her. In Qiu Wu Palace, he had sworn that he would be with her no matter how much suffering and pain he had to go through, and his vow had convinced her to take a leap of faith this once to pursue this uncertain future with him.

Yet, in just a few short months, she had found that he was actually going to marry another woman. Was this all his feelings for her amounted to?

“Ruoxin, this is a misunderstanding! I...” Seeing Luo Ruoxin's state, Zhang Xuan panicked. “I thought that you were the little princess of the Luo Clan...”

“What?” Luo Ruoxin was caught off guard by the unexpected response.

“You never told me your real identity, but those around me told me time and time again that you are the little princess of the Luo Clan... I thought that given your surname and the strength you wield, that would be the case...” Zhang Xuan felt

as if his scalp was exploding. He had no idea how he should explain the situation to the other party!

To fail to recognize even his own girlfriend, that was simply courting death!

But back then, Ruoxin had left without saying a word or explaining anything at all, and if one had to think of a person who wielded such tremendous strength at such a young age, it could only have been the little princess of the Luo Clan.

It was not that he had never tried to verify this matter himself, but when he tried to do so, he had realized that he did not even know Luo Ruoxin's real name! Thus, he could only clutch on desperately to this clue that he had, or else he would have been completely lost.

And the affairs afterward only further confirmed his suspicion. An elder of the Luo Clan sought him to warn him against getting close to the little princess of the Luo Clan, and shortly after, the little princess of the Luo Clan also declared her feelings for him...

More importantly, out of some sheer coincidence, he had actually never met with the little princess of the Luo Clan to date!

Luo Ruoxin stared at Zhang Xuan intently, wanting to see if the young man before her was speaking the truth. After a long while, she sighed deeply and said, "I can't tell you my true identity for the time being... Come with me, I'll bring you somewhere else!"

"Somewhere else? Where?" Seeing that Luo Ruoxin was giving him a chance to explain, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief.

"You'll know once we get there," Luo Ruoxin replied before turning to leave.

"Alright..." Zhang Xuan hesitated for a brief instant before taking a step forward, intending to leave together with her.

After his huge botch-up, if he did not leave with Luo Ruoxin right now, they might very well never meet again in the future.



“Wait a moment!” Barely after taking two steps, a figure suddenly stood in Zhang Xuan’s path—Luo Xuanqing. The young man was trembling with sheer rage, reminiscent of a volcano that would erupt at any moment. “Zhang Xuan, what are you doing right now? Who is that person over there?”

“Brother Luo, I have to...” Zhang Xuan hesitated for a moment before replying, but before he could finish his words, a punch was already smashing right for his face.

Hu la!

This punch harnessed Luo Xuanqing’s full strength, such that even space warped before his might.

“Brother Luo...” Zhang Xuan exclaimed as he took a step back.

“Don’t call me your brother, I am unworthy of it!” Luo Xuanqing bellowed as he charged toward Zhang Xuan, seemingly reluctant to rest until he finally reduced the person before him into meat paste.

“This is actually...”

While dodging the attacks, Zhang Xuan tried to explain the matter to Luo Xuanqing, but he had no idea where he should start.

It was only because he had thought that Luo Ruoxin was the little princess of the Luo Clan that he agreed to the marriage. So many esteemed guests had come to witness the ceremony, yet he wanted to turn around and leave at this crucial moment... all because he had recognized the wrong person.

This was as good as viciously trampling on the Luo Clan’s pride! There was no one who could accept such a thing!

“Stop hiding! If you are a man, face me straight on in a battle! Either you give me a satisfactory explanation here, or you’ll have to step over my dead body when you leave!” Luo Xuanqing bellowed furiously as he continued his assault.

As if six more arms had sprouted out of his body, he launched powerful punches one after another. Despite being only at Saint 8-dan primary stage, the might that he exerted was

actually on par with a Dimension Sundering realm pinnacle expert!

“Brother Luo, I...” Zhang Xuan tried to explain as he retreated.

“Enough! I told you not to address me as Brother Luo!”

Seeing that his attacks were not reaching the other party, Luo Xuanqing gritted his teeth furiously. In the next moment, his strength swiftly surged to an unbelievable level.

Bloodline ability!

Luo Xuanqing had actually activated his bloodline ability without much hesitation!

Si la!

Before long, Luo Xuanqing’s strength had risen to a level comparable to Saint 9-dan primary stage cultivators. He swiftly whipped out a sword and continued his frenzied assault against Zhang Xuan.

His sword art was far stronger than the barrage of fists that he had launched previously, and his swings tore right through space, creating spatial rifts one after another in the air.

In the first place, the Luo Clan was skilled in spatial manipulation, and Luo Xuanqing had activated his bloodline ability at that. The prowess that he exerted was so fearsome that even a Macrocosm Ascendancy realm pinnacle cultivator would have trouble coping under his furious assault.

However, even though Zhang Xuan was only at Macrocosm Ascendancy realm primary stage, his fighting prowess was already on par with Great Sage 1-dan experts. With nimble movements, he managed to dodge Luo Xuanqing’s sword perfectly.

“Brother Luo, I know that I have done your Luo Clan a great injustice this time around, and rest assured that I will definitely give you a satisfactory explanation in the future...”

“There’s no need for you explain anything anymore! Today, only one of us will leave here alive!”

Hong long!

With frightening momentum, Luo Xuanqing continued hacking down on Zhang Xuan with his sword. His sword severed the fabric of the surrounding space, and after several strikes, his attack culminated to form a spatial storm.

“If hitting me will make you feel any better, do it then!”  
Seeing that it was impossible to converse with Luo Xuanqing, Zhang Xuan eventually came to a halt, choosing not to dodge anymore.

In the first place, this matter was his fault.

Puhe!

Luo Xuanqing’s sword pierced right through Zhang Xuan’s shoulder, creating a gaping hole. Fresh blood trickled down to the floor.

“Die!”

After piercing through Zhang Xuan’s shoulder, Luo Xuanqing twisted his blade, intending to tear Zhang Xuan in two.

But barely after twisting the blade, he suddenly felt his entire body freezing in place, as if some kind of compelling might was shackling him down, preventing him from moving.

“He’s the man that I, Luo Ruoxin, love! I would like to see which of you dares to hurt him!”

Boom!

A powerful shockwave burst forth from Luo Ruoxin, and Luo Xuanqing was forced to retreat continuously. At the same time, the sword in his grasp also flew into the horizon, disappearing without a trace.

# 1578 The Adolescent Boy

“Audacious! Men, take that demoness down!”

Seeing that the young lady had actually made a move on Luo Xuanqing, the head of the Luo Clan also swiftly understood what was going on, and with a wrathful look on his face, he bellowed furiously.

If the young lady really took Zhang Xuan away with her, their Luo Clan would become the laughingstock of the entire continent!

“Yes!”

Huala!

After those words were spoken, several dozen Luo Clan’s elders rose into the air and surrounded Luo Ruoxin and the adolescent boy beside her.

“No!”

Not expecting things to turn out like that, Zhang Xuan panicked. However, when he tried to make a move, he felt something constricting his body. He quickly turned around and saw that two elders of the Luo Clan had sealed the space around him.

He immediately tried to activate the power of Kong shi’s blood droplet in his hand, but he found himself unable to close his hand to touch the blood droplet, thus rendering him unable to activate it.

“Demoness! Since you have dared come here today, why don’t you allow our Luo Clan to give you a warm welcome?”

Harrumphing coldly, Luo Qingchen flicked his finger furiously, shooting a burst of sword qi forth.

At this moment, the young lady had already reverted to her usual cold and lofty demeanor. Gazing at the elders around her, she was just about to make a move when the adolescent boy beside her took a step forward and said, “Milady, please

allow me to handle these lowly beings. You mustn't dirty your hands over them!"

"Un." Luo Ruoxin nodded before placing her hands behind her back, not moving at all.

It was as if the attack from the First Elder of the Luo Clan could not even catch her eye.

"Die!" Not expecting the other party to be so arrogant, Luo Qingchen felt blood rushing to his head in fury.

He pumped even more energy into his sword qi, causing it to glow menacingly in the air as it sliced through the space in its pathway.

Just as it was about to land on Luo Ruoxin, the adolescent boy suddenly walked up with a smile and grabbed the burst of sword qi in between his fingers.

Po!

The burst of sword qi exploded.

After dissipating Luo Qingchen's sword qi, the adolescent boy raised his palm and spat, "Grovel!"

In an instant, Luo Qingchen felt as if the world was shaking around him, causing him to be unable to balance himself. If not for him exerting all of his strength to balance himself, he might have fallen right from the sky.

"Attack him together!" Luo Qingchen barked out a command.

Despite the young appearance of the adolescent boy, there was no doubt that the other party was a formidable expert! It would be foolish to underestimate the other party after what had just happened.

The elders in the area also realized that the adolescent boy was far stronger than he appeared after seeing the powerful First Elder meeting a setback while clashing with the adolescent boy. Without any hesitation, they charged forth simultaneously.

Even the weakest of the dozens of elders was at Saint 9-dan, and their powers rained down on the adolescent boy and Luo

Ruoxin like rapid rain. In the blink of an eye, a spherical light barrier formed around the two of them.

The area around the spherical barrier was pitch black, a sign that the surrounding space had been torn to shreds by the very emergence of the barrier. Within the barrier, a fearsome spatial storm raged, such that even pinnacle Saint artifacts would be swiftly reduced to dust before its might.

“It’s the Luo Clan’s Demon Subduing Sphere! Even I wouldn’t be able to last long within it,” Yang shi remarked grimly.

Individually, these elders came nowhere close to being a match for him. However, when their prowess was put together, it would be truly foolish to underestimate the might that they could exert.

Even a Sempiternal realm cultivator like Yang shi would be unable to withstand its prowess.

“Heh, interesting!”

The adolescent boy showed no signs of panic against the attack. He stretched his fingers outward, and they seemed to transform into the meandering branches of a tree as they struck specific points in the air.

Po!

The surrounding space immediately swayed unstably, reminiscent of a rock being thrown into a calm lake.

Under the intense swaying of the surrounding space, the prowess of the spherical light barrier was diverted upward into the sky before vanishing without a trace.

“This is... Spatial Interference? Just what kind of level has that adolescent boy reached?” Yang shi exclaimed in shock.

He had already been surprised by how the adolescent boy was able to withstand Luo Qingchen’s attack, but who would have thought that he would be able to defend against the Luo Clan’s strongest Demon Subduing Sphere so easily by redirecting its might upward?

Such a feat could only be described as terrifying.

“Spatial Interference? What’s that?” Sword Saint Xing asked.

Even he was unable to make sense out of the move that the adolescent boy had executed earlier.

“The Demon Subduing Sphere is a collaborative formation that an elder of the Luo Clan has created. It serves to combine the might of twenty-one experts through overlapping three Big Dipper Formations upon one another to channel their might into forming a dimensionally-isolated spherical space. As this space exists in a different dimension from the one that we are in, it is impossible for ordinary cultivators to flee from it, and it would just be a matter of time before those trapped in the space are killed. It’s due to this reason that I said that even I would be no match for it!”

At this point, Yang Shi’s face grew incredibly grim as he continued, “However, through simple taps, the adolescent boy was able to send ripples of spatial disturbance through the space, tearing it apart with ease. Using an analogy, the Demon Subduing Sphere could be described as a cloth with ants crawling on it. As long as one remains on the cloth, it will be impossible to avoid the ants. However, if one just jumps out of the cloth and flicks it, the ants will be diverted elsewhere, thus rendering their offense futile... This is basically how Spatial Interference works! Similarly, through stirring up the surrounding space, even the Demon Subduing Sphere won’t pose a threat anymore!”

“This...” Sword Saint Xing’s body jolted in astonishment.

For Great Sage cultivators, severing space did not pose much of a problem at all, but this Spatial Interference was clearly far more fearsome than simply severing space!

For even the adolescent boy to be this formidable... just who in the world could the young lady whom his son fancied be?

“Forget it, I won’t play with you all anymore. All of you, grovel!”

After undoing the Luo Clan’s Demon Subduing Sphere with a single move, the adolescent boy chuckled and raised his palm once more.

Huala!

The next moment, Luo Qingchen and the other elders plummeted from the sky and crashed onto the ground. Their faces turned ghastly pale, and fresh blood spurted from their mouths.

“Activate the Guardian Formation!” the head of the Luo Clan bellowed. He had not thought that the two intruders would wield such frightening prowess.

He flicked the token in his hand into the sky, and soon after, an intense energy disturbance rippled through the surroundings. Then, everything suddenly calmed down, as if nothing had happened at all.

It might have seemed as if nothing had happened to weaker cultivators, but those who had gathered there were all top experts of the Master Teacher Continent, and they could clearly feel that a formidable formation had enveloped them, sealing the sky away from their reach.

As a clan whose heritage could be traced back to tens of thousands of years ago, the Luo Clan’s Guardian Formation was truly formidable. Once it was activated, as long as one could not find the right way to decipher it, even an expert of Yang Shi’s caliber could only remain trapped in it.

The reason Zhang Xuan had been able to easily escape from the Zhang Clan’s Guardian Formation back then was because he had been able to find its flaws easily through the Library of Heaven’s Path. To him, formations were no different from a sheep stripped bare of its fleece, its secrets laid bare before him.

But it was different for others.

Most spatial arts could not be utilized within sealed spaces, thus reducing one’s fighting prowess significantly. On top of that, the Guardian Formation was bound to have an offensive aspect to it, such that even Sempiternal realm cultivators would fall into a fluster once they were trapped within it, making it difficult for them to escape.



Seeing that even the collaboration of the many elders was insufficient to subdue the other party, the head of the Luo Clan had decisively chosen to execute his trump card!

“So, this is the Guardian Formation of the Luo Clan. Not too shabby. However, you are still too naive if you think something of this level is sufficient to trap me!” With a chuckle, the adolescent boy leaped into the sky.

Tzlala!

At the same time, the Luo Clan’s Guardian Formation began coiling innumerable spatial threads around the adolescent boy, intending to tear him into shreds.

Faced against such an attack, the eyebrows of the adolescent shot up as he raised his hands to his side and pulled them down lightly.

Boom!

Astonishingly, the Luo Clan’s Guardian Formation collapsed without the slightest resistance under his pull! A devastating shockwave rippled into the surroundings as the spiritual energy in the Guardian Formation diffused into the surroundings.

After dealing with the Luo Clan’s Guardian Formation, the adolescent boy placed his hands behind his back as he gazed down coldly on the crowd from the sky.

“What other means do you have? Throw everything at me at once!”

In an instant, complete silence devoured the surroundings.

# 1579 Qiqi, I'm Sorry

Everyone simply stared at the adolescent boy in the air with aghast expressions.

The Guardian Formation of the Luo Clan had stopped many experts in their tracks since the inception of the Luo Clan. Innumerable assaults of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had been foiled by its formidable prowess. Yet, it did not even last a single second against a small, adolescent boy!

How was that possible?

Just what realm had the adolescent boy reached?

The experts in the area could not help but gulp in shock, unable to believe what they were seeing.

“Have any of you seen that person before?”

“Under normal circumstances, a person as powerful as that lad couldn't possibly have remained unknown. So, why do I have no impression of him at all?”

“I have never seen him before either. It's as if he's appeared out of nowhere...”

“If even the adolescent boy is this powerful, I can't begin to imagine how strong the young lady must be! Just who in the world is she?”

The clan heads of the Sage Clans subconsciously backed away, fearing that they would be implicated in this conflict.

To the eyes of ordinary cultivators, these clan heads represented the top fighting prowess of the Master Teacher Continent, but even they did not dare stand against an expert of this caliber. They had no doubt that the adolescent boy would be able to claim their lives with a single flick of his finger. It would be utter foolishness to stand against such an opponent!

Without a doubt, they were severely outmatched!

“You...”

Seeing how the adolescent boy had been able to overcome the collaboration of the many elders and tear apart the Luo Clan’s Guardian Formation so easily, the head of the Luo Clan’s face flickered with rage and fear.

After a moment of silence, he turned around and clasped his fist. “Yang shi, I beseech you to lend us your help in this matter!”

The Luo Clan still had its final trump card, but it should only be used in times of absolute emergency. As such, the head of the Luo Clan could only place his hopes on Yang shi.

“Of course, there’s no way I can simply turn a blind eye to this matter!” Yang shi said as he turned his gaze to the sky. “How could I be oblivious to the existence of an expert of your caliber on the continent? I really must be growing old!”

Hu!

As he said those words, he slowly took step after step upward.

His movements were very slow, but with every step that he took, an inconspicuous glow emanated from his feet. At the same time, the space that he trod on seemed to grow even stabler, seemingly reinforced by some mysterious energy.

The adolescent boy was initially unfazed by Yang shi’s provocation, but watching as the latter slowly walked over, his eyebrows knitted together into a frown. “Who are you? You aren’t from the Luo Clan, are you? The Luo Clan doesn’t have an expert of your caliber.”

“I am Yang Xuan!” Yang shi clasped his fist.

“Yang Xuan of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters?” The adolescent boy widened his eyes in realization. He clasped his fist in reciprocation and said, “This is a problem between Milady and the Luo Clan, so I ask you not to interfere in this matter!”

“The Master Teacher Pavilion is responsible for maintaining order on the continent. You have chosen to wreak havoc in the Luo Clan at an important occasion like this, completely

disregarding the dignity of everyone here. I might be getting on in my years, but it's still my responsibility as a master teacher to stop you!" Yang shi replied coldly.

"Since you aren't going to back down, make your move then. Let me see how powerful the rumored number one expert of the Master Teacher Continent is!" the adolescent boy spat coldly.

He crossed his arms, ready to make his next move, but at this moment, a nonchalant voice sounded beside him.

"Enough, stand down," Luo Ruoxin instructed.

"Yes, Milady!" Not daring to say a second word, the adolescent boy quickly retracted his palm and returned to his position behind Luo Ruoxin.

At the same time, perhaps out of apprehension for Luo Ruoxin's strength, upon seeing the adolescent boy backing away, Yang Xuan also stepped back and fell silent.

Luo Ruoxin swept her gaze across the crowd, and after seeing that no one else was going to make a move, she turned to Zhang Xuan and said, "Zhang Xuan, let's go!"

The next moment, Zhang Xuan felt the restraints on his body being released.

Seeing that the adolescent boy had not killed anyone, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. He nodded in response to Luo Ruoxin's words, but he still could not help but turn around to face the beautiful young lady dressed in red behind him.

Looking at her tear stained cheeks, he felt a sharp ache in his heart. He walked up to her and said, "Qiqi... I'm sorry."

He really had no idea how he should express his apology toward this young lady.

The engagement with the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan was a huge matter on the Master Teacher Continent. Innumerable clan heads, powerful experts, and esteemed seniors had come to witness this momentous event, yet he was simply going to walk out of this.

He knew that his actions would inflict grievous damage on the young lady, but he could not imagine a life without Luo Ruoxin, and he could not let Luo Ruoxin down.

“Why?” Luo Qiqi asked silently.

In the eyes of outsiders, she was an unparalleled genius who had broken innumerable records. But those who knew her would know that she was simply an innocent little girl who lacked a sense of security.

It was due to this that Luo Xuanqing had constantly been looking out for her, fearing that she would be taken advantage of by others.

“I...”

Zhang Xuan had no idea how he should respond to the young lady’s question.

It had never been his intention to hurt her, which was also why he had never rejected her confession directly. He had thought that their fate would have ended with her departure, but who could have thought that life had something like this in store for them?

While trying not to harm her, he ended up inflicting the greatest damage upon her.

After a long moment of silence, Zhang Xuan spoke up. “I always thought that you were the princess of the Baiyuan Empire...”

Back then, when they parted at the Qingyuan Empire, Yu Feier had said that the reason Luo Qiqi had been able to enroll into Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy back then was because of an insignia from the Baiyuan Empire’s royalty, which left him thinking that Luo Qiqi was the princess of the Baiyuan Empire.

Not even in his wildest dream would he have thought that Luo Qiqi had anything to do with the Luo Clan.

“In order to hide my tracks from the Luo Clan, I used the powers of the Dimension Silencer to seal my bloodline and cultivation. While I have assimilated the Dimension Silencer, I

have yet to fully master it, so there are abilities that I'm still unable to fully control. As a result, not only did my cultivation fall to the Transcendent Mortal realm, some of my memories ended up being sealed, too. I had to slowly raise his cultivation in order to unseal my memories once more..." Luo Qiqi looked into the sky and said solemnly, "That is also why I was unable to save you back in the underground cavern despite the danger we were in."

Zhang Xuan nodded.

When he found out that Luo Qiqi was the little princess, he had already figured most of the story out.

There were indeed some methods on the Master Teacher Continent that allowed a cultivator to seal their cultivation and bloodline. For example, Zhao Ya's mother had sealed away her Pure Yin Body and hidden herself away in the ancient domains. Afterward, she had married Zhao Ya's father, and despite having been together for many years, no one was any the wiser of her true strength.

As for the reason that Luo Qiqi had been in Grade 2 back at the Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy...

Considering when she left the Sanctum of Sages, there was no way that she could have been in Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy for more than a year. However, Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy worked by a system where a student was promoted by their strength and master teacher rank rather than the time that they had spent in the academy.

Rational explanations could easily be found for most parts of Luo Qiqi's history, but there was just one doubt that he was unable to make sense of.

The Luo Clan's little princess possessed the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, which should have made it impossible for him to use the Library of Heaven's Path on her. At the very least, this was the reason he thought that the Library of Heaven's Path did not work on Luo Ruoxin.

However, he did use the Library of Heaven's Path on Luo Qiqi, and a book had successfully been compiled on her. Yet,

her true identity had not been detailed within the book. Could this mean that those who possessed the Discarnate Constitution of Divination possessed the ability to fool and provide incorrect answers to the Library of Heaven's Path?

If that was really the case, that would be really fearsome!

He would have to slowly search for the answer in the future, or else he could not fully believe the information provided by the Library of Heaven's Path anymore.

“Back when I was still the little princess of the Luo Clan, I did the royal family of the Baiyuan Empire a great favor. Even though I had sealed my cultivation, they were still more than willing to introduce me to the Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy as a 4-star master teacher. It was with such an identity that my clan was unable to find me easily.

“I had always been the center of attention from the moment I was born, and I know that many would love to be in the position I am in. But this is not what I wanted. All I wanted was an ordinary life, living my days out peacefully and happily,” Luo Qiqi muttered with a desolate look on her face.

Even though she had sealed her cultivation and bloodline, due to her past relationship with the royalty of the Baiyuan Empire, she had easily been able to convince them to do her a favor and recommend her to Hongyuan Master Teacher Academy. Furthermore, given her standing, the Baiyuan Empire had been more than willing to allow her to pass off as their princess.

It was due to this convincing identity that she had been able to remain in the Hongyuan Empire for so long without anyone noticing. Even her close friend, Yu Fei-er, was oblivious to her true identity.

In a sense, this was similar to how Zhang Xuan passed himself off as Yang Shi's student. As long as one had a convincing cover, it would be unlikely for others to dig too deeply into one's identity.

“I told you before that there's someone whom I like, and that person is actually Luo Shi. All along, I thought that she was

the little princess of the Luo Clan, which resulted in this misunderstanding...” Zhang Xuan lowered his head as he spoke softly.

He had to explain this matter properly to the young lady before him, or else the person who would be hurt would not only be her but Luo Ruoxin as well.

“I guessed...” Luo Qiqi nodded quietly before lowering her head, concealing the tears glistening in her eyes.

“Qiqi, I am sorry...” Zhang Xuan bowed deeply.

He finally understood why she had been able to take out so many thousand-year-old medicinal herbs the very last time that they met, as well as why Luo Chengxin suddenly appeared before him shortly after she left.

From the looks of it, it seemed like Luo Chengxin had found her in Qingyuan City, and aware of her impending departure, she had made use of the excuse of needing to practice her pill forging techniques to gift those medicinal herbs to him.

At this moment, he also recalled Luo Xuanqing saying that his younger sister had high aptitude in most occupations, but somehow, when it came to pill forging, her talents seemed to fall flat. He had not thought too much about the matter back then, but everything seemed to fit like pieces of a puzzle to him now.

That would also explain how a 5-star master teacher like her had been able to easily track down the underground cavern that Wu Yangzi had been locked in through the peculiar smithing method when no one in the Hongyuan Empire had been able to...

Even with a huge portion of her memories sealed, her instincts were still far beyond those of ordinary cultivators.

That would also explain why she had been able to improve far quicker than Yu Fei-er and even his direct disciples.

Most likely, when she achieved a breakthrough to the Saint realm in the Qingyuan Empire, the seal that she had placed on herself had begun to unravel, rendering it impossible for her to conceal her bloodline anymore. This had allowed Luo



Chengxin to find her, eventually leading to this series of events...

Lifting her eyes to take one final glance at the young man before her, Luo Qiqi decisively turned around, bellowing, "Scram! I never want to see you again!"

"Thank you..." Understanding Luo Qiqi's intentions, Zhang Xuan muttered softly before turning around and walking away.

Nothing that he could say would mend the damage that he had done. Staying there would only worsen the other party's pain.

"Where do you think you are going?"

Huala!

Barely after taking two steps, innumerable cold glints suddenly shimmered from the surroundings. The wounded elders of the Luo Clan, along with Luo Xuanqing, had drawn their blades, and every single one of them was glaring at Zhang Xuan with wintry eyes.

"Zhang Xuan! If you dare walk away today, you will be an eternal enemy of the Luo Clan! The relationship between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan will become irreconcilable!" the head of the Luo Clan roared furiously.

"If you dare leave with that demoness, you'll become my sworn enemy. I, Luo Xuanqing, swear that I'll devote my life to hunting you down and killing you!" Luo Xuanqing bellowed wrathfully.

Zhang Xuan's footsteps visibly halted for a brief moment, but he still chose to continue advancing toward Luo Ruoxin.

"Die!"

Seeing that Zhang Xuan was still adamantly walking forward, Luo Xuanqing flicked his palm and thrust it toward Zhang Xuan.

"Hold it right there!"

With a flick of his spear, Zheng Yang dissipated the force of Luo Xuanqing's palm strike. At the same time, Lu Chong,

Wang Ying, and the others also quickly stood in between their teacher and the Luo Clan.

# 1580 Zhang Xuan Breaks the Engagemen

“Progeny of Combat and Guild Leader Wang Ying, are you two planning to make enemies out of our Luo Clan?” the head of the Luo Clan growled menacingly.

“Didn’t your Luo Clan’s Luo Xuanqing nearly take our teacher’s life earlier? You should be glad that he failed. Know that I won’t allow any of you to put our teacher’s life in jeopardy anymore! If you wish to harm even a single strand of my teacher’s hair, you’ll have to step over my dead body!” Zheng Yang glared down at the crowd of the Luo Clan intimidatingly.

“Anyone who intends harm to our teacher will be our enemy!” Wang Ying and Lu Chong stepped forward as well.

The auras emanated by the three of them towered as if an unscalable mountain. The elders who had intended to make a move earlier were forced to stop in their footsteps, not daring to move at all.

They could not have cared less about the enmity between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan, but anyone who dared lay their hands on their teacher would be their enemy!

“Well said!” Sword Saint Meng stepped forward and swung her sword threateningly too. “My son will have my full support no matter what he does. If you intend to hurt him, don’t even expect my blade to take mercy on you!”

“You...” The head of the Luo Clan’s face turned red with rage. He immediately turned his gaze toward Sword Saint Xing and questioned sharply, “Is this your intention too?”

“I...” Sword Saint Xing was put on the spot.

The marriage between the two clans should have been happy news, but who could have thought that it would end in such a state?

Seeing Sword Saint Xing's hesitation, Sword Saint Meng roared furiously. "Zhang Zhenxing! You have already sacrificed your son once! If you make him suffer any more grievances, I'll take my son and leave the Zhang Clan immediately for a place where you will never find us!"

"This..." Sword Saint Xing scratched his head in embarrassment before clapping his fist toward the head of the Luo Clan and bowing. "My apologies, Clan Head Luo, but I'll have to side with my own son!"

As he said those words, he went over and stood beside Sword Saint Meng.

It was not just because he was afraid of his wife but also because he was painfully aware of the fact that he was indebted to his son.

"Good. Very good! It seems like all of you are intending to sever relations with our Luo Clan today!" The head of the Luo Clan ground his teeth and roared with seething fury. "Since that's the case... elders of the Luo Clan, heed my orders! Seal the Shrouding Ethereal City and prevent anyone of the Zhang Clan from escaping!"

"Yes, clan head!"

Hualala!

Upon receiving their orders, the elders of the Luo Clan immediately moved to seal the surrounding space, such that even Teleportation Formations were rendered ineffective.

Seeing that the Luo Clan had chosen to make a move, one of the elders of the Zhang Clan bellowed in response, "Disciples of the Zhang Clan, bear arms and protect your clan head!"

Since both clans had already fallen out, there was no need for them to put up a front anymore. If a battle was inevitable, the Zhang Clan would not go down without a fight!

"This..."

"If I knew that this would happen, I never would have come to this engagement ceremony..."

No one could have thought that the two clans, which had been chummy with one another a moment ago, would suddenly fall out in the blink of an eye. The clan heads of the other Sage Clans watched the situation hesitantly by the side, not knowing what they should do.

Helping the Luo Clan would mean offending the Zhang Clan, and vice versa... but they could not afford to offend either of these two powers!

From the looks of it, it seemed like this matter would not end well.

“Stop!”

Seeing that a battle would break out at any moment, a sharp voice echoed across the entire city. The next moment, the little princess of the Luo Clan, Luo Qiqi, stepped forward.

Weng!

A spherical artifact materialized in her hand, and with a slight jolt, the sealed space immediately shattered apart, reverting to its original form.

The Dimension Silencer, the ultimate treasure of the Luo Clan!

Its very presence carried an inviolable authority that made others not dare face it.

“Yuxin...” Taken aback by his daughter’s actions, the head of the Luo Clan panicked.

“Little Sister...” Luo Xuanqing was also uncomprehending of his younger sister’s actions.

“Father, Elder Brother, and elders, I hope that you can allow me to deal with my own matters...” Luo Qiqi clasped her fist.

“This...” Seeing his daughter’s determined gaze, the head of the Luo Clan’s fury dissolved into tenderness. “Forget it! If you suffer the slightest grievance, make sure to tell me. I might be getting old, but I haven’t grown senile. I won’t allow others to bully my daughter!”

“Thank you, Father!” Luo Qiqi nodded. She turned her gaze toward Zhang Xuan, and with a pleading look in her eyes, she

said, “Teacher, you once told me that you would redress my grievances for me if someone bullied me... Do those words still count?”

“I...” Zhang Xuan was stunned, not knowing how he should respond.

Those were the words that he had told her when they parted at Qingyuan City, but who could have thought that this would happen instead?

When the one who had bullied her was him, how was he supposed to redress her grievances?

“I’m the one who did you wrong, Qiqi...” Zhang Xuan paused for a moment before saying, “Let’s nullify the engagement between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan. You will no longer be bound by the restraints of your engagement. You will finally be able live your life freely.”

He could not redress her grievances anymore, and the only thing that he could do was nullify the engagement and set her free.

“You are nullifying the engagement between the two of us?” Luo Qiqi shook her head. She stared into the distance with glazed eyes as a bitter smile spread upon her lips. “Those that I hold dear will not necessarily be with me for life. Just like the broken artifact back then, no matter what I do, it can just never be the same anymore... You might be granting me the freedom I seek, but if that means that the person I love will leave me, never to return again... Teacher, you also know that I’m an obstinate person. I disagree to the nullification of our engagement!”

“You... Why do you have to do this to yourself?” Zhang Xuan looked at the young lady with a pained expression. “If you announce the nullification of our engagement, your Luo Clan will at least be able to preserve its dignity and honor!”

“I know! I know it... but my heart doesn’t allow me to do so!” Luo Qiqi cried.

If she proposed the nullification of their engagement, while this matter would still be a huge stain on the Luo Clan’s

history, it would at least preserve their reputation and honor. However, that would also mean extinguishing the final flicker of hope that they could be together.

It was simply too cruel for her to make such a decision. She had put all of her heart into this relationship, only to meet with such an ending. She could not accept it, and she did not want to accept it either!

“You should know that there’s no other way out of this,” Zhang Xuan said.

Since the person that he had chosen was Luo Ruoxin, he had to nullify the engagement. Otherwise, he would only be further hurting everyone around him.

Luo Qiqi turned around and said, “Then... you should be the one to do it...”

“I’m sorry...” Knowing that Luo Qiqi would not be able to do it, Zhang Xuan tossed his clan head token into the air and declared, “I, Zhang Xuan, in my capacity as the head of the Zhang Clan, hereby announce the nullification of my marriage with the little princess of the Luo Clan. This nullification stems from my own problem, and I am unworthy to take her as my wife!”

Those words reverberated across space, causing the air to tremor.

“Yuxin...” Upon hearing those words, the head of the Luo Clan widened his eyes in shock.

At the same time, Luo Xuanqing also glared at Zhang Xuan as if he was facing his sworn enemy.

Even with Zhang Xuan’s clarification, the world would not remain oblivious to the truth. Word would spread, and the reputation of the Luo Clan would inevitably be sullied.

“Pavilion Master Ren, I have already made up my mind. I’ll have to trouble the Master Teacher pavilion to relay my declaration to the world word for word!” Zhang Xuan took back his clan head token before clasp his fist toward Ren Qingyuan to make that request.

The fastest way to disseminate the news would be through the Master Teacher Pavilion.

“I understand, Zhang shi!” Ren Qingyuan nodded.

When it came to relationships, no matter how one tried, it was impossible for everyone to be happy. There would never be a clear right or wrong.

“Qiqi, take care of yourself!” Having done that, Zhang Xuan took one last glance at the forlorn back of the young lady before walking away.

The elders of the Luo Clan wanted to stop him, but looking at the Dimension Silencer floating in the air, they had no choice but to hold themselves back.

“Teacher...”

Barely after taking a few steps, the young lady’s voice sounded once more.

Zhang Xuan stopped in his tracks and slowly turned around to look at the young lady’s back.

It was a long while before the young lady spoke once more.

“Will you... still teach me pill forging in the future?”

“Of course!” Zhang Xuan nodded. “I’ll teach you whatever you want to learn!”

—

Translator’s Note: This is one of the arcs that I like the most yet feel the most resentful toward too. In this arc, we saw Zhang Xuan’s rise to power and Luo Ruoxin’s return. Honestly, the reveal that the little princess as Luo Qiqi should have been much less obvious, but it’s always easy to put the clues together once you have been spoiled and know the endpoint. I have been following the comment section, and it’s apparent how much spoilers have ruined all the suspense for future plot details.

As always, I would ask for those who have read the raws or heard spoilers not to post future content in the comment section because it really ruins immersion.



If you have read the raws or looked up spoilers, I'm sure you do have some love for this book, so please don't kill it through posting spoilers here. There are other more appropriate places to post and ask for spoilers.

Even if I could delete comments, it would be hard for me to distinguish between legitimate theories and spoilers, so I can only appeal to your goodwill not to post spoilers, as well as the community to denounce those who spoil the story and not give a thumbs up to their comments.

—

Author's Note: The Eleventh Arc [Zhang Xuan Breaks the Engagement] hereby comes to an end. The confession from Qiqi was designed in accordance to a song that I really liked half a year ago, by Xiao Quan, the idea that my feelings for you don't just stop at the level of like, but I can't find the answer I am seeking for in your eyes.

Each time that song plays on the car radio, I couldn't help but think of the second female lead of that drama and cry. For this character, I have cried many times.

Anyway, let the curtain unfold on the next arc [Finale at the Master Teacher Pavilion]. In the next arc, Zhang Xuan shall become a Great Sage realm expert and stand at the top of the continent.

Anyway, with this arc coming to an end, pour in your power stones and let's secure the top spot together!

# 1581 Why Not Marry Them Together!

The crowd from the Zhang Clan flew out of the Shrouding Ethereal City. Looking at the majestic buildings beneath, Zhang Xuan could not help but feel as if he had just been through a dream.

He knew that he had really hurt that kind young lady this time around, but there was no way that he could dictate his emotions. If he forced himself to act against his will, he would only end up hurting everyone in the end. Rather than resorting to that, it would be better for him to end it decisively.

It would be difficult at first, but once the young lady was able to let him go, she would be able to seek the true happiness that she deserved.

Luo Ruoxin glanced over and asked, “You can’t bear it?”

Zhang Xuan shook his head and said, “This misunderstanding only happened because I thought that you were the little princess of the Luo Clan...”

“It’s alright, I understand. You don’t have to explain anymore.” Luo Ruoxin nodded as she reverted to her usual nonchalance. “I can still discern the truth.”

Seeing that Luo Ruoxin had chosen to trust him, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief. “You said that you would bring me somewhere. Where are we going?”

“You were investigating the kidnapping of Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao, right?” Luo Ruoxin asked with a smile.

Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up. “You know where they are?”

“I don’t know where they are, but I have a good idea who the culprits that took them away are,” Luo Ruoxin replied.

“Who are they?” Zhang Xuan asked with clenched fists.

He would never forgive those who dared to make a move on his students. If he could just find out who the culprits were, he would never let them go!

“I still can’t confirm their background yet, but one of the reasons I came to find you is to stop them!” Luo Ruoxin said.

“Stop them? Are they still intending to abduct more people?” Zhang Xuan asked with narrowed eyes.

“That’s not it. They are looking for a certain object,” Luo Ruoxin explained. “Most likely, it’s a Celestial Amulet of Legacy!”

“They are really eyeing the Temple of Confucius!” Zhang Xuan harrumphed coldly.

It seemed like it was really the doing of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, just as he had thought.

“It might get troublesome if there are too many people around, so it’ll be best if your clan members do not come along. While Zheng Yang and Lu Chong are considerably powerful, the place that we are heading to will be quite dangerous, so my view is that it would be best not to bring them along for the time being,” Luo Ruoxin said.

The more people around, the more likely that they would be detected by the culprits. Furthermore, if anyone was caught by the culprits in the midst of the operation, that person would likely be used as a hostage against them.

While Zheng Yang and the others were considerably powerful, they were still lacking in worldly experience. In treacherous lands, they might not necessarily have the intuition to avoid danger, and that would place their team in a vulnerable position.

“I concur with your view, but... what if the culprits go after the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan while we are away? Wouldn’t that simply put us in more trouble?” Zhang Xuan was still a little worried.

“Rest assured, with Yang Shi and so many experts around, even if the culprits go for them, they will eventually have to retreat in disappointment!” Luo Ruoxin replied with a smile.

“I guess you’re right...” Zhang Xuan nodded.

With Yang shi, the Xingmeng Sword Saints, Zheng Yang, Lu Chong, and the experts of the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters to hold the fort while they were gone, even if an Ancient Sage arrived, he might not necessarily be able to get away unscathed.

“Alright, let’s go!”

Having made up his mind, Zhang Xuan quickly spoke with his parents to fill them in on what was going on. After which, he handed back the clan head token and advised them to help groom Zhang Jiuxiao as the next clan head before heading off with Luo Ruoxin.

“Just who in the world is that Luo Ruoxin?”

Watching as the two of them flew into the distance, Sword Saint Meng could not help but turn her gaze toward Yang shi.

He was the most knowledgeable of them there, so if anyone could recognize her, it was him.

Yang shi pondered for a moment before saying, “I’m not too sure either, but I think that she might be related to ‘that place’!”

“That place?” Sword Saint Meng asked in incomprehension.

However, the very next moment, Sword Saint Xing suddenly interjected. “Yang shi, are you referring to the Hundred Schools of Philosophers?”

“Indeed. Shortly after Kong shi departed back then, all of his students vanished one after another. While no one had any concrete news on them, based on some of the records and conjectures of our predecessors, it seems like they took root in a place away from the continent!” Yang shi replied.

“A while ago, the Master Teacher Pavilion sent me a message saying that shortly after the Temple of Confucius came into sight, suspicious figures that could possibly be the descendants of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers were spotted in the vicinity. In fact, they possessed the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, which prevented the seers from divining their

identities. They disappeared very quickly from the area, so our men weren't able to interrogate them. Considering the sudden appearance of Luo Ruoxin, and the formidable might wielded by the adolescent boy beside her, I think that there's a good chance that it might be them!"

"The Hundred Schools of Philosophers possess the true heritage of Kong shi, cultivating unparalleled secret manuals. On top of that, they are also blessed with superior innate strength. Now that you mention it, it does seem likely." Sword Saint Meng also came to a realization. "I was thinking that Xuan-er was too short-sighted to have given up on a watermelon for a sesame seed, but since she's an offspring of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, I can rest easy now!"

After saying those words, a gleeful smile emerged on her lips.

The marriage with the Luo Clan should have been the most perfect ending. Not only would it have widened the Zhang Clan's influence, it also would have propped her son up to the top of the Master Teacher Continent in an instant, granting him strength to stand against even the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters.

However, since her son did not like it, there was nothing that she could do.

She owed her son simply too much, so the least she could do was allow him to pursue his own happiness.

Nevertheless, she still understood that this was a great loss to the Zhang Clan, considering that they had made enemies out of the Luo Clan. However, who would have thought that this mishap would actually end up drawing connections with the powerful Hundred Schools of Philosophers instead? If that's truly the case, not only did the Zhang Clan not make a loss, its future growth potential had also become unlimitedly great!

"Can feelings even be measured using gains and losses?" Seeing his wife's response, Sword Saint Xing was rendered speechless. "The marriage between the Zhang Clan and the Luo Clan should have provided us with the key to opening the Temple of Confucius, but with the fallout with the Luo Clan, we won't be able to break the seal anymore. Not only have the

plans of the Master Teacher Pavilion fallen through, the safety of mankind could very well be at risk!”

As Sword Saint Xing spoke, a hint of jealousy seemed to seep into his voice.

Ever since his son had appeared, his position in the family seemed to have been falling lower and lower.

It was one thing for him to be scolded every single day, but to think that he would end up having to fuss over minor matters such as his son’s future wife instead of conferring over major matters that affected the safety of mankind. Really, just how low had he fallen?

“Why should my son be sacrificed for the rest of the world? There are plenty of people out there to think about the Temple of Confucius anyway! All I hope is for my son to live his life happily and peacefully!” Sword Saint Meng waved her hands indifferently.

“Narrow-minded!” Sword Saint Xing harrumphed coldly.

“Zhang Zhenxing, I dare you to repeat those words!” Sword Saint Meng flew into a rage.

“Alright, alright! While the Temple of Confucius has started to surface, it seems like there’s still some time before it truly appears,” Yang shi said. “My senior should still have time to mend the relations between both clans. Furthermore, judging from the little princess’ attitude, it seems like she still harbors deep feelings for my senior. As long as we explain the matter properly to her, I think she should be willing to go along with us!”

While things had not gone very well, as long as the little princess did not harbor that deep a grudge toward Zhang Xuan and the Zhang Clan, there should still be some room for reconciliation.

Besides, the predecessors of the Luo Clan had also made many sacrifices to protect mankind, which showed that they were not narrow-minded people who would allow personal grudges to get in the way of important matters. While they had been humiliated by Zhang Xuan’s actions, when the safety of

mankind was at stake, they would still be likely to swallow their grudges temporarily and grudgingly collaborate with the rest of them.

“Yang shi is right. Later on, I’ll try to talk to my son about this matter. It’s nothing much for a man to take several wives at once, and if it really comes down to it, he could just marry the little princess of the Luo Clan as well. The young lady is quite a beauty anyway. More importantly, she has quite a bottom, which means that she’s suited to bear children! Regardless of whether it’s Luo Ruoxin or Luo Qiqi, wouldn’t it be good to take all of them in? That would be a happy ending, right?” Sword Saint Meng nodded.

“Of course, dear. It’s nothing much for a man to take several wives, so having two wives is not too big a deal!” Sword Saint Xing nodded in agreement.

“Having two wives is not too big a deal? Zhang Zhenxing, are you planning to take in another woman?” Sword Saint Meng sneered as she glared at Sword Saint Xing murderously.

“I... I... I’m referring to our son...”

As if plunged into an icy cavern, Sword Saint Xing felt his hair raising on end. “I really am not talking about myself! Ahhh, save me! I’ll never dare to say such words in the future again... Yes, you’re right... No, I won’t even think of it anymore...”

—

Please don’t kill this book by posting spoilers.

# 1582 White Creek Mountain

Standing atop the back of an aerial saint beast while gazing at the white clouds that were swiftly flitting past them, Luo Ruoxin explained, “The place that we are heading to is the Empire Alliance’s Whitestream Mountain!”

“White Creek Mountain?” Zhang Xuan’s body jolted in astonishment. “I know that place...”

That was the name of the mountain range that had appeared on Qingtian Emperor’s painting. He had seen Kong shi’s illusory figure on the mountain range, and in order to conceal the truth from the Qingtian Emperor, he had altered it into a picture of bathing beauties.

He had learned its name from Luo Xuanqing a while back, but with too many matters on hand, he had not had a chance to check on it yet.

Could it be that the illusory figure of Kong shi actually hinted at the location of a Celestial Amulet of Legacy?

There might just be such a possibility, or else it would not have compelled the entire Qingtian Lineage and even Vicious to risk exposing themselves for it!

“Since we know the location, why don’t we just teleport right over? It would be faster that way,” Zhang Xuan suggested.

“There’s no need for that!” Luo Ruoxin replied with a smile. “It would be too troublesome to travel there through teleportation, and it isn’t safe either... Wu Chen!”

“Yes!” The adolescent boy nodded.

He walked up to the window and tapped his finger lightly on it.

Hu la!

The surrounding air suddenly began warping frenziedly, and spatial folds appeared all around. Before long, a massive vortex was formed around them.



As the vortex spun faster and faster, the area that it covered grew larger and larger. Very soon, the eye of the vortex formed a stable white region.

Hu!

The aerial saint beast beneath them seemed to be accustomed to such a situation. Flapping its wings, it dived right for the middle of the vortex.

“This is... Spatial Compression!”

A look of disbelief surfaced on Zhang Xuan’s face.

It was said that those who had mastered space would be able to compress it infinitely, allowing one to traverse over a thousand li with a single step.

He had thought that it was just a legend, but who could have thought that the adolescent boy would be able to pull it off so easily?

“It isn’t Spatial Compression but the exploitation of a unique trait of space!” the adolescent boy explained nonchalantly.

“The space that we see appears to be stable and impeccable, such that even our Spiritual Perception can’t notice any anomalies in it. However, there are inherent wormholes weaved into it that can be utilized to swiftly leap from one location to another.”

“I see...” Zhang Xuan could roughly grasp the concept, but it sounded a little faraway to him.

Even though he had learned the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, he had only reached a mastery of 3-dan in it. There was still some way off before he could reach the top.

“Spatial Leap is a technique that only Ancient Sages are able to utilize. Wu Chen is only able to pull it off due to the unique bloodline of the saint beast and his deep comprehension of space,” Luo Ruoxin added.

“I see!” Zhang Xuan nodded. At this point, he could not resist asking out of curiosity, “Given how young Wu Chen is, how can he wield such formidable strength?”

No matter how he looked at the adolescent boy, the latter appeared to be only around thirteen to fourteen. Yet, the boy already possessed strength that he could only match while using Kong shi's blood essence.

This was inconceivable to him. Even if the adolescent boy was a Connate Saint, causing his body to age much slower than others, it was hard to imagine him achieving such strength within a short period of time.

“Wu Chen looks younger than he actually is due to his unique bloodline,” Luo Ruoxin explained with a shake of her head. Not intending to linger too long on this topic, she pointed to the area ahead and said, “We've arrived.”

Looking ahead, Zhang Xuan realized that the aerial saint beast that they were on had already traversed through the passageway, and a majestic mountain range had appeared around him.

The mountains around him pierced right through the layers of clouds, and they spanned a vast area around him. The imposing scale of the mountain range felt incredibly pressurizing, leaving one's breathing a little ragged.

“It's the White Creek Mountain!” Zhang Xuan remarked grimly.

This was indeed the mountain range that he was depicted on the painting of the copper-masked figure back then. They would have been identical if not for the real mountain range being even more towering and imposing.

“A Celestial Amulet of Legacy is within the mountain range. I'm not too sure about its exact location at the moment, but we can check using a unique artifact.”

As Luo Ruoxin spoke, she flicked her wrist in the air, and a book materialized in front of her.

This book carried an aura that left one with a dreamy feeling. Looking at it curiously, Zhang Xuan was just about to ask what it was when he suddenly sensed something. He quickly flicked his wrist, and a crystal sphere materialized in his hand.

This crystal sphere was none other than the Qiu Wu Palace!

That was the ancient domain left behind by Kong shi's follower, Ancient Sage Qiu Wu. He had entered its premises with Luo Ruoxin previously, and it had also been the location where they confirmed their relationship. At this moment, the Qiu Wu Palace was shaking non-stop, as if it was resonating in harmony to the book that Luo Ruoxin had taken out.

"This..." Zhang Xuan frowned doubtfully.

As the master of the Qiu Wu Palace, he could clearly feel that the book before him had come from the same origin as the crystal sphere. There was an inseparable connection between the two of them.

"I acquired this book from the Qiu Wu Palace. Using it, we will be able to find the exact location of the Celestial Amulet of Legacy." Luo Ruoxin answered the doubts in Zhang Xuan's mind.

However, that only left Zhang Xuan even more taken aback.

"This..."

He had been together with the young lady in the Qiu Wu Palace, so why was he unaware that she had acquired such a book?

There were rumors that the Qiu Wu Palace contained a clue to finding the Celestial Amulet of Legacy, so he had searched the entire place multiple times, only to be unable to find the supposed clue. Who could have thought that it was already in her hands?

"The reason I wanted to enter the Qiu Wu Palace was to find this item. Do you remember how I wandered freely for quite a while after entering the Qiu Wu Palace? It was during that period of time that I found this book," Luo Ruoxin explained.

"I see!" Zhang Xuan nodded.

To be honest, he had found it bizarre how the young lady had insisted on entering the Qiu Wu Palace with him, only to refuse all treasures, cultivation technique manuals, and the like. Not to mention, she had even helped him assimilate the entire Qiu Wu Palace!

So, it turned out that she had already acquired what she had been looking for!

Weng!

While the two of them were speaking, a light hum sounded from the book as it began surging toward the top of the mountain.

“Let’s follow it.”

The two of them quickly followed the movements of the book so as to not lose sight of it.

Not too long later, just when they were roughly at the midpoint of the mountain, the book finally came to an abrupt halt.

“This is the place...” Zhang Xuan swiftly cast a sweeping gaze over the surroundings before nodding slowly.

This was indeed the exact spot on the painting where he had altered Kong shi’s silhouette for the bathing beauties.

It would be too much of a coincidence for the two clues to point to the same point by sheer coincidence. Chances were that there was a folded space somewhere here that would lead them to an ancient domain where the Celestial Amulet of Legacy was hidden!

“It’s good enough that we have confirmed the location. If my intuition fails me not, the culprits who have captured Zhao Ya, Wei Ruyan, and Yuan Tao should be heading here very soon!” With a wave of her hand, Luo Ruoxin placed the book back into her storage ring before standing patiently on the spot, not anxious about finding the hidden folded space at all.

“The Zhang Clan, Luo Clan, and the Master Teacher Pavilion have a Celestial Amulet of Legacy each. Are you certain that the culprits will come here instead?” Zhang Xuan asked doubtfully.

If the goal of the culprits was to open the Temple of Confucius, they were already halfway there with the capture of Zhao Ya and the others. It was a known fact that the Master Teacher Pavilion headquarters, the Zhang Clan, and the Luo

Clan had a Celestial Amulet of Legacy each, so those three powers should have been the primary targets for the culprits!

Furthermore, it should have been impossible to find this location without the map from the Qingtian Emperor or the book in Luo Ruoxin's possession!

—

Please don't kill this book by posting spoilers.

# 1583 Luo Ruoxin's Identity

“It's stated in the records of the Master Teacher Pavilion that there are six Celestial Amulets of Legacy. However, that isn't entirely correct.”

Instead of responding to Zhang Xuan's question directly, Luo Ruoxin began explaining slowly.

“The six Celestial Amulets of Legacy are the Subordinate Amulets that are used to open the six Subordinate Halls in the Temple of Confucius. However, to acquire the Great Codex of Spring and Autumn, one must enter the Prime Hall, and the key to the Prime Hall is the Prime Amulet!”

“Prime Amulet?” Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up.

“That's right.” Luo Ruoxin nodded. “If the culprits are who I think they are, it's likely that they have a clue to finding this place too. After all, Kong shi couldn't possibly have just left a single clue leading to the Prime Amulet. Furthermore, the one who possesses the Prime Amulet will be able to command the Subordinate Amulets too. Rather than wrestle the Subordinate Amulets from the experts of the Zhang Clan, the Luo Clan, and the Master Teacher Pavilion, it would be much easier for them to head here and obtain the Prime Amulet!”

“That's true...” Zhang Xuan nodded contemplatively.

If that was indeed true, with the capture of Zhao Ya and the others, all they required was the Prime Amulet.

Given so, all the two of them had to do was camp there and wait for the culprits to arrive.

Just that... the matter concerning the Prime Amulet and Subordinate Amulets should be confidential. In fact, it was likely that even Yang shi was unaware of it, or else the other party would have informed him of it. How did Luo Ruoxin know such details?

Unable to take it any longer, Zhang Xuan asked, “Ruoxin, if you aren't from the Luo Clan... who are you? Why do you

know of so many secrets that even the Master Teacher Pavilion is unaware of?”

He reached out to grab the young lady’s hand gently. “Since we have decided to be together, I hope that you’ll allow to help shoulder the burdens that you carry!”

Even though Luo Ruoxin had said that it was not inconvenient for her to reveal her true identity, Zhang Xuan still could not help but worry, especially after the huge misunderstanding earlier.

At the very least, if he knew Luo Ruoxin’s identity in advance, he would be able to prepare himself to face whatever came in the future.

“I...” Luo Ruoxin instinctively attempted to retract her hand upon being grabbed, but meeting the young man’s earnest eyes, she eventually decided against it. Shaking her head helplessly, she said, “You will only be hurt if you learn of my identity right now. More importantly, it might foil the greater scheme of things, and that will only bring great trouble to you... I’m sorry...”

“I’m not afraid!” Zhang Xuan said resolutely.

“I know you aren’t afraid... but I am!” Luo Ruoxin shook her head with a distressed frown. She looked at the young man said tenderly, “Don’t worry. As long as you trudge on, we’ll eventually be together. Not even the heavens will be able to stop us!”

Judging from the look on Luo Ruoxin’s face, Zhang Xuan could tell that it would be impossible for him to change her mind, so he could only sigh deeply. Relenting on his stance, he asked, “Then, at the very least... can you tell me if you are an... Otherworldly Demon?”

It took Zhang Xuan a lot of courage in order to ask this question.

Despite not being the little princess of the Luo Clan, the strength that she wielded was truly incredible, especially given her young age. Not to mention, the adolescent boy that followed her was a formidable expert who could stand equal

grounds with Yang shi, if not surpassing him. If she was not a member of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, chances were that she was related to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

This possibility was further supported by how knowledgeable she was regarding Kong shi and the secrets of the Master Teacher Continent, possibly knowing even more than the esteemed Yang shi... The only possibilities that Zhang Xuan could think of was that she belonged to either of those two major powers!

If she was from the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, considering how the Hundred Schools of Philosophers was under Kong shi's lineage, even if she was not a master teacher, her identity would still be accepted on the Master Teacher Continent.

The problem was that Zhang Xuan had looked into the clans of the Hundred Schools of Philosophers, and there was no Luo Clan among them.

If she was really an Otherworldly Demon, that would spell trouble.

Ultimately, Zhang Xuan's allegiance still lay with mankind. Even if he loved Luo Ruoxin, he could not compromise on his values and principles!

This was his bottom line. Love was important, but it could not be one's everything!

"I'm not an Otherworldly Demon."

Knowing what Zhang Xuan was worried about, Luo Ruoxin shook her head and chuckled softly. "Don't worry, I'll never do anything that would harm mankind. I'm here just to find something that a very close relative of mine lost..."

"A very close relative?"

"Un. He is someone that I really respected. He imparted my values and principles to me when I was younger. Those days that I spent with him were happy and worryless, but..."

At this point, Luo Ruoxin suddenly fell silent as she lowered her head in contemplation. An aura of sorrow seemed to



gloom around her as her hands trembled slightly in Zhang Xuan's grasp. "If I had a choice, I would rather the one who had met such a mishap be me instead of him!"

"This..." Hearing that Luo Ruoxin had no relations with the Otherworldly Demon, Zhang Xuan inwardly heaved a sigh of relief before hurriedly consoling her. "If that relative of yours is ill, I might be able to help him..."

Possessing the Library of Heaven's Path, he was able to trace down the root of any illness. Even if he was unable to treat Luo Ruoxin's close relative due to the limitations of his cultivation, he might at least be able to offer a plausible direction to work toward in order to treat him.

"It's not a problem of medicinal skills..." Luo Ruoxin shook her head before directing a tender smile toward Zhang Xuan. "It's fine, you don't have to worry about these problems. If you really wish to be with me, you must raise your cultivation as quickly as possible. That would be the best way you can help me!"

"Un!" Zhang Xuan nodded as he squeezed the young lady's hand reassuringly.

If Luo Ruoxin was unwilling to speak of her affairs to him, it was likely that she already had some other thoughts in mind. As long as her actions did not violate the principles that he embraced, he would give her all of his support.

Luo Ruoxin had always been a cold and lofty person, emanating a distant aura that kept everyone at bay. Even Zhang Xuan found himself unable to see through her thoughts and understand her.

But in this moment, it felt like Luo Ruoxin had finally started opening up to him, viewing him as a person whom she could share her inner thoughts with.

She was still keeping some secrets from him, but so what? He was certain that the day would come when she would be comfortable with opening up to him, so there was no need for him to rush into it immediately.

For the time being, what he had to do was trust her and give her support!

“You are currently at Saint 9-dan primary stage. You should try to achieve a breakthrough to Great Sage as soon as possible,” Luo Ruoxin said. “Due to my special constitution, the cultivation techniques that I practice are completely different from yours, and I’m not in a good position to offer you any guidance. More importantly... if I share too much with you, not only will that bring trouble to you, it could potentially place a cap on your future growth. Wu Chen over here is quite knowledgeable, so feel free to raise any doubts with him. Having someone to trade insights with should help you in your cultivation!”

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

After scaring the lightning tribulation away the day before in the Luo Clan, his cultivation had already reached Saint 9-dan primary stage. While he could already walk unmatched among the younger generation on the continent, he still could not help but feel deeply pressured at this moment.

Zhao Ya, having awakened her Pure Yin Body, was stronger than him! Zheng Yang, after becoming the Progeny of Combat and cultivated in the Hall of Spring of Autumn, was stronger than him! Wei Ruyan, Yuan Tao, Lu Chong, and even Wang Ying were all stronger than him!

To be at the very back of the pack despite being their teacher had left him feeling deeply indignant and frustrated.

The prowess displayed by his girlfriend was not helping either. Even her subordinate was able to easily stir up a storm in the Luo Clan, and it was questionable if Yang shi would be able to stop him.

Without a doubt, Luo Ruoxin would be even stronger than her subordinate!

As her boyfriend, the pressure that was on him could really drill him to the opposite end of the continent.

If he could not raise his cultivation quickly, how embarrassing would it be if others said that he was a person who could only

rely on his girlfriend?

So as to not interrupt their conversation, Wu Chen had tactfully chosen to stand by the side, but upon hearing Luo Ruoxin calling for him, he quickly walked over.

“Macrocosm refers to the entire spatial world that we perceive formed by the three dimensions. Saint 9-dan Macrocosm Ascendancy realm is intricately linked with one’s comprehension of space. While you have reached Saint 9-dan primary stage so far, in order to reach the pinnacle of the realm, not only must you accumulate sufficient energy, more importantly, you must also deepen your comprehension of space. I have a few books containing my insights of spatial laws here, and they might be of some use to your cultivation!” Wu Chen said as he passed a couple of books over.

He might have appeared to be a thirteen to fourteen year old boy in his adolescence on the surface, but when it came to cultivation, he swiftly assumed the air of an old expert, reminiscent of a grandmaster of the current era.

“Thanks!” Having witnessed the adolescent boy’s skillful manipulation of space, Zhang Xuan knew that the books that the other party had offered him were bound to be extraordinary.

He quickly picked up the books and browsed through them, and before long, he was nodding in approval.

These books came nowhere close to matching the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, but their contents were worth ruminating over. If he compiled those books with the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, he should be able to resolve a handful of the flaws in the latter.

Just as he was about to do so, he suddenly saw the adolescent boy looking over with a grim look on his face.

“These books are profound, so you must make sure to go through them very carefully. If there’s anything that you don’t understand, make sure to clarify it with me as soon as possible. Don’t get greedy and attempt to forcefully push your way ahead. As long as you study diligently, given your talent, it

won't be impossible for you to reach Saint 9-dan pinnacle within a single month!"

"A single month?" Zhang Xuan was taken aback.

"Indeed." The adolescent boy placed his hands behind his back and declared confidently, "I know that it's inconceivable to achieve a breakthrough to Saint 9-dan pinnacle in such a short period of time, but with my deep understanding of space, I'm confident that you'll be able to achieve it with my strict guidance!"

"No, that's not what I meant. What I am saying is that one month... is too long!" Zhang Xuan scratched his head awkwardly.

"Too long?" The adolescent boy was flabbergasted by what he had just heard.

"Indeed... It'll be hard to explain it with words, so just give me a moment, and I'll show you," Zhang Xuan said before closing his eyes.

Hong long!

In an instant, Zhang Xuan drove his zhenqi to its limit, and soon, his cultivation began surging ahead.

After leaving the main hall of the Luo Clan, his parents had passed him a storage ring filled with the Saint 9-dan cultivation technique manuals that Ren Qingyuan had entrusted to them. With a swift glance over those books, he had collected them into the Library of Heaven's Path and compiled them to form the Saint 9-dan Heaven's Path Divine Art.

While the adolescent boy's books on spatial laws were a great help, ultimately, they were only supporting material when it came to raising one's cultivation. In this world, there was nothing more suitable for raising one's cultivation than the Heaven's Path Divine Art.

Back when he was still at the Zhang Clan, Sword Saint Xing had given him a huge stockpile of cultivation resources. Even after raising his zhenqi cultivation, soul cultivation, and the

cultivation of the Inferno Qilin and Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast, he still had more than half of the stockpile left.

Since there was nothing to do at the moment, this was a good opportunity to push for a breakthrough.

Gugugugu!

His zhenqi raced furiously through his meridians before accumulating in his dantian, and in just a few moments, he had already broken through his previous bottleneck.

Macrocosm Ascendancy realm primary stage!

Macrocosm Ascendancy realm intermediate stage!

...

“T-this...” The adolescent boy could not help but stagger backward with a pale face. “How can he grow so quickly?”

The Macrocosm Ascendancy realm required a cultivator to enhance their understanding of spatial laws and accumulate sufficient energy simultaneously in order to achieve a breakthrough. It was just a moment ago that he had handed over his books, and the young man was already achieving breakthroughs as if it was nothing at all.

Furthermore, he was improving with an imposing momentum that showed no signs of slowing down at all, such that it almost seemed as if he was just releasing a seal on his cultivation!

How could someone be so talented?

Seeing how shocked Wu Chen was, Luo Ruoxin explained with a light chuckle, “His condition is a little special, so it’s no surprise that he can achieve breakthroughs so quickly.”

As a Celestial Master Teacher, a person whose talent was recognized by even the heavens, it did not come as a surprise no matter how fast he grew.

“Special? But no matter how special his condition is, such an extent is inconceivable...” the adolescent boy exclaimed in disbelief.

Boom!

Before the adolescent boy could even finish his words, Zhang Xuan's cultivation had already come to a halt. He exhaled a mouthful of turbid gas as his cultivation stabilized at Saint 9-dan pinnacle.

“Done!” Zhang Xuan clapped his hand in satisfaction before directing a smile at Wu Chen. “How's that? It didn't take a month, right?”

# 1584 Who Is Guiding Whom?

The adolescent boy shook his head vehemently, almost as if he was expecting to see something different once he was done shaking.

He had seen geniuses and experts from various races, and he had clashed with the top experts of the continent. It went without saying that he had confidence in his judgement and talent.

But... to advance one's cultivation so easily as if it was just walk in the park... he had never even heard of something like this before, let alone seen it!

Even Kong shi back then did not seem to have improved so quickly!

Was this still a humanly possible deed?

“You managed to achieve a breakthrough from the books I just gave you?” the adolescent boy questioned.

It was only after taking his books and flipping through them that the young man abruptly achieved breakthroughs to Saint 9-dan pinnacle... Could it be that his books had inspired the young man?

Then again, he had written those books personally, and he knew their contents by heart. There should not have been anything in them that would allow one to advance one's cultivation so quickly!

“Oh. I had a look at those books, and while they do offer a fresh perspective, there are simply too many flaws with them. It would be problematic to cultivate them directly!” Zhang Xuan replied earnestly.

“Too many flaws? Problematic?”

Those words immediately riled the adolescent boy up.

He was able to overcome the Demon Subduing Sphere of the Luo Clan easily with a flick of his hand and carry out a Spatial Leap to cover several million li in just a few moments. No matter how one looked at it, his comprehension of spatial laws was definitely on par with the heritage of the Luo Clan, if not surpassing it.

Yet, for what he had personally written to be described with ‘too many flaws’ and ‘problematic’... And that disdainful look on the young man’s face was not helping either!

Disdain your head!

“May I know what kind of flaws there are in my books that made you find them problematic? Why don’t you share them so that I can learn from my mistakes?” It took some effort for the adolescent boy to calm himself down and squeeze those words politely out of his mouth.

If not for Luo Ruoxin watching by the side, he would have given that arrogant young fellow a good smack!

“I guess I could enlighten you since you are asking so politely!” Zhang Xuan nodded. “You wrote in the book that the more stable a space is, the more unlikely it will collapse. Only in stable spaces should one find wormholes and conduct Spatial Leaps, or else the stress from the Spatial Leap could potentially cause the space to collapse inward, and that would be dangerous!”

“That’s indeed the case!” The adolescent boy nodded. “The stability in folded spaces is severely lacking. If one places it under too much stress, it will collapse on itself. Thus, abilities like Spatial Leap are only feasible on the Master Teacher Continent, where space is far more stable. Is there any mistake in that interpretation?”

Such an interpretation of space had been acknowledged by expert cultivators over the past tens of thousands of years. It was impossible for there to be a mistake with it!

“Yes, there is a huge mistake in that interpretation. You are assuming space to be stationary,” Zhang Xuan replied.



“Assuming space to be stationary? Are you implying that space flows like a river?” The adolescent boy burst into laughter. “You must be messing with me! If the space we live in is moving, how can we possibly be unaware of it?”

“The world we are standing on is constantly moving. Are you able to feel its movements?” Zhang Xuan replied.

“This...” The adolescent boy was taken aback.

He had flown high enough to see the entire Master Teacher Continent before, and from afar, he could tell that the continent was in a state of constant rotation, giving it day and night. But when he was standing on the continent, its rotation was imperceptible to him.

“It’s due to the movement of space that the locations of spatial wormholes are constantly changing. If one is able to grasp the movement of space and move alongside it, movement through the spatial wormhole will result in minimal instability to the surrounding space, and naturally, the space won’t collapse either!” Zhang Xuan explained.

In truth, this was not a theory that he had come up with but something derived from Lu Chong’s Soul Traverse.

Through Soul Traverse, soul oracles were able to pull off short distance teleportation discreetly, thus allowing them to conduct surprise attacks. If space was truly stationary, their abrupt movements would create a huge disturbance in space each and every time, making it impossible for their movements to be discreet. However, if they moved in harmony with the flow of space, the disturbance caused by their movements could be reduced to the minimum.

“This...” The adolescent boy fell into deep thought.

This was the first time that he had encountered a theory of moving space, so it was inevitable that he would be somewhat skeptical toward it. However, when he gave it further thought, he realized that it reconciled all of the spatial phenomena that contradicted the concept of flowing space. To put it in simpler words, it was indeed very likely for space to be flowing!

This had really overthrown everything that he had thought in the past.

“There’s one occupation in the world that boasts the greatest understanding of space... I have read all of the theories and speculations as to what the foundation of space truly is, and all of them are built on the idea of stationary space. This is the first time that I have heard something like this!” the adolescent boy remarked in astonishment.

“The occupation you are referring to is soul oracle, right? Soul oracles are an agglomeration of will, which makes them more sensitive to the world around them. As a result of that, they have finer control over space than ordinary cultivators. However, you mentioned that you have books from the soul oracles?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

Of all the occupations that he had come into contact with, the one that had the greatest control over space was indubitably the soul oracle.

In fact, Soul Traverse was the very proof of the soul oracles’ ingenuity when it came to space!

It was unfortunate that the soul oracles and their heritage had been destroyed by the Master Teacher Pavilion after they had chosen to ally themselves with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe.

Even Lu Chong had only managed to obtain their heritage through entering the secret Ancient Domain of the Soul Oracles, so where in the world did the adolescent boy find the books of the soul oracles?

Furthermore, judging from his tone, it seemed like he had accessed quite a huge collection of them at that!

Or... could it be that the Hundred Schools of Philosophers still had the heritage of soul oracles with them? That was possible, considering that their heritage had come directly from Kong shi.

“Hmm...” Instead of answering Zhang Xuan’s question, the adolescent boy looked at him earnestly and asked, “Other than

the idea of stationary space, may I know what other errors the books have?”

If he thought that Zhang Xuan was spouting nonsense previously, after that exchange, it had already become apparent to him that the young man’s understanding of space was likely to be deeper than his.

“There is a total of thirteen major conceptual flaws in your books...” Zhang Xuan replied honestly.

“...” Luo Ruoxin.

Her intention was to have Wu Chen offer pointers to the person that she loved so as to help him advance his cultivation. But somehow... things seemed to have gone in a different direction from what she had expected.

Not only so, Wu Chen was even nodding vehemently, as if having epiphanies one after another.

Just who was guiding whom?

Just as Zhang Xuan was about to go through the thirteen flaws in detail, Luo Ruoxin suddenly sent a telepathic message to the two of them.

“Someone is coming.”

The two of them widened their eyes in alarm as they quickly fell silent.

Earlier, when they landed in the vicinity, they had already used a secret art to seal the space around them and conceal their presence. As such, even if they continued speaking, no one in the external world would be any the wiser.

Zhang Xuan turned his head forward, and without him realizing, several long-robed figures had appeared in the midst of the mountain range.

Their robes were made in a similar fashion to that of the master teacher robe, but perhaps because they were made of black cloth, Zhang Xuan could not help but find them a little incongruent and odd.

He activated his Eye of Insight to take a closer look.

There were four people in total. They did not look too old on the surface, seemingly only in their early to middle thirties.

Are they the Otherworldly Demons who have kidnapped Zhao Ya and the others? Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up.

His previous analysis of the incident was that the culprits could only be the Hundred Schools of Philosophers or the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe. Since Luo Ruoxin was not an Otherworldly Demon, it stood to reason that the group in front of him was from the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe!

Clenching his fists tightly, he took a deep breath as he readied himself to activate the blood droplet in his hand at any moment. He turned to the young lady beside him and asked, "Now?"

"Wait a moment first." Luo Ruoxin shook her head. "We aren't too familiar with the ancient domain, so it would be best to let them enter first before deciding our next move."

"Alright." Zhang Xuan nodded.

# 1585 Ancient Sage Ran Qiu

He had only learned about this place from the copper-masked figure's painting. As for the exact location of where the ancient domain was, what was hidden in the ancient domain, and what kind of dangers lay in it, he was completely oblivious.

Since these Otherworldly Demons were intending to enter the ancient domain, he was more than happy to let them scout the way ahead for them. Even if they were discovered afterward, he could activate Kong shi's blood droplet to deal with them. As long as none of them were Ancient Sages, he was confident that he could kill or even apprehend them all.

“Where is it?”

While they were lying in wait, the four new arrivals were carefully scanning the area, seemingly trying to determine the exact location of the folded space.

“Give me a moment, I'll check on it!”

A frail-looking young man took a step forward, and with a tap on his finger, a book materialized and floated right in front of him, emanating a faint turquoise glow.

“It looks quite similar to the book you have,” Zhang Xuan remarked to Luo Ruoxin.

In terms of appearance, it could be said to be identical to the one that she had acquired from the Qiu Wu Palace.

It seemed like she was indeed right. There was more than one clue leading to the ancient domain.

It seemed like it was not without reason that the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had been able to render mankind utterly helpless until Kong shi appeared. They were indeed far more resourceful than he had thought.

Not even the Master Teacher Pavilion was aware of the distinction between the Master Amulet and the Subordinate

Amulets, yet the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe had already acquired the artifact required to track the Master Amulet down.

Weng!

The book gradually drifted ahead, slowly combing the entire area before abruptly jolting. With a light buzz, it came to a halt.

“It’s here!” the frail-looking young man exclaimed.

“Un!” The young man who had issued the command before nodded as he quickly rushed over.

This young man had a clean-looking face and the air of a scholar, which formed a stark contrast to the vicious appearance of the Otherworldly Demons that Zhang Xuan had met before. If not for the fact that he had appeared there, there was no way that one would have been able to imagine that he was one of the culprits who had made a move against Zhao Ya and the others.

Previously, Zhang Xuan had heard that the Otherworldly Demonic Emperors were able to impersonate humans, such that even master teachers would have difficulties seeing through their disguise. From the looks of it now, that was indeed true.

“Open!” The scholarly young man raised his hand and pumped a surge of tremendous power into the space in front of him.

Jiyaya!

A deafening noise echoed in the air as a door made solely out of light materialized before their eyes. Incredible energy flowed within the door of light, making it impossible to discern where the door would lead one to.

Instead of entering the ancient domain immediately, the scholarly young man turned around and instructed severely, “Everyone, be careful. This ancient domain was left behind by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, so we must maintain the utmost caution!”

The other three young men quickly nodded in response.

“Ancient Sage Ran Qiu?” Zhang Xuan gasped in astonishment.

The seventy-two direct disciples of Kong shi were known as the seventy-two Philosophers.

Of them, the ten strongest disciples were collectively known as the Ten Apostles, and Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was one of the apostles. He was equal to Ancient Sage Bo Shang in terms of standing, and in terms of strength, he was reputed to be the strongest among the Ten Apostles.

Back during the war with the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, he had charged into armies of enemies with just a single spear in hand, killing innumerable Otherworldly Demonic Emperors.

In fact, he was the founder of the Combat Master Hall!

If he was indeed the man behind the ancient domain, there was little doubt that the ancient domain would be fraught with dangerous trials.

“Let’s go!”

After warning the others to keep their guard up, the scholarly young man walked into the door of light, and with a pulsation of energy, he disappeared from everyone’s sight.

The other three young men followed behind him, and they vanished in the blink of an eye as well.

“Let’s head in, too!”

Seeing that the four of them had entered the door of light, Zhang Xuan was just about to step out of their concealment when Luo Ruoxin suddenly grabbed his arm and said, “Wait a moment first.”

Zhang Xuan was taken aback for a moment before widening his eyes in realization. “Have they noticed our presence?”

“I don’t think they are able to sense our presence, but I think it’s better to be safe,” Luo Ruoxin replied before falling silent.

They waited on the spot for roughly half a tea’s time before the door of light suddenly wavered once more. The scholarly young man who had entered first earlier walked out, scanned

the surroundings, and heaved a sigh of relief after finding nothing. After which, he entered the door of light once more.

This time, the door of light did not last too long before dissipating.

“What a cautious bunch they are! To think that they would be hiding on the other side of the door, waiting to ambush anyone tailing them! If we had entered earlier, we would have been attacked!” Zhang Xuan was astonished.

All along, he had been the one scheming against others, but who would have thought that his complacency would nearly get the better of him? If not for Luo Ruoxin stopping him, he might have fallen into their trap!

It was true that activating Kong shi’s blood droplet would grant him strength that was unrivalled by all those beneath Ancient Sage, but if he came under the simultaneous assault of four experts, it was questionable whether he could really hold his ground or not.

He really would have to pay more attention to such matters so as to not fall into such traps again in the future.

“Humph, you want to play with me? Let’s see who will be played with at the very end!” Zhang Xuan harrumphed coldly.

Back then, despite his weak cultivation, he had still managed to eliminate the entire Qingtian Lineage. Now that he had reached Saint 9-dan pinnacle and had Kong shi’s blood droplet with him, he could not possibly allow himself to fare worse than he did back then!

“Let’s enter.”

Removing the spatial secret art around them, Luo Ruoxin walked up to the space where the four men disappeared from previously.

Wu Chen walked to her side, and taking a deep breath, he played his hand and pressed it downward.

Weng!

By infusing his energy into the space, just like what the scholarly young man had done previously, a door of light



gradually materialized out of nowhere.

Wu Chen was the first to enter the door, and he vanished on the spot.

Zhang Xuan and Luo Ruoxin traded glances before entering the door of light together.

With a light buzz, Zhang Xuan suddenly found himself standing in the midst of a vast grassland. There was a clear sky, and the surrounding air was crisp and refreshing. With a quick look, it felt as if they had been teleported away instead of entering a folded space.

“The space in here is really stable,” Zhang Xuan remarked in astonishment.

Even folded spaces on the level of the Qiu Wu Palace were extremely crass in construction, and exertion of excessive strength could easily result in their collapse. On the other hand, the space that they were currently in was extraordinarily stable, such that it made them doubt if they had really entered a folded space.

“The greater stability of the space only goes to show how dangerous it will be here. I’ll first look ahead to scout the path they have taken. As long as we trace their footsteps, we should be able to avoid most of the dangers!” Wu Chen clasped his fist.

Luo Ruoxin nodded, granting her permission.

Wu Chen quickly examined the surroundings. Slowly, a deep frown etched itself onto his forehead.

“It’s very dangerous in here. There are formations and spatial rifts all around, and the slightest misstep could possibly land us in one of those. We need to be...”

Before Wu Chen could finish his sentence with the word ‘careful’, Zhang Xuan had already taken a huge stride forward.

As he walked, he even beckoned to them leisurely, saying, “Quick, over here. Follow me...”

“You...” Taken aback by the young man’s reckless action, Wu Chen suddenly felt his heart tightening in anger. “What are

you doing? Don't you know what kind of treacherous place we are in? I haven't found the path that they have walked in yet! It's very dangerous to be roaming dangerously in here..."

Just as Wu Chen was about to grab the young man back, he saw Luo Ruoxin following the young man's footsteps without saying a word.

"Milady! It's dangerous..." Wu Chen exclaimed anxiously.

It was one thing for the weak Zhang Xuan to not know better, but why would Luo Ruoxin be so rash as well?

While Wu Chen was still panicking inside, Luo Ruoxin's voice drifted to his ears. "He has the Eye of Insight. It'll do to follow him."

"Eye of Insight? The ability that allows one to see through all facade?" Wu Chen widened his eyes in astonishment.

To possess the Eye of Insight and command such a deep understanding of space... Am I the expert, or is he the expert?

Why does it feel like my feeling of superiority as an expert seem to vanish before the young man?

# 1586 Yellow Water of the Netherworld

The trio slowly advanced ahead.

As they were following the trail of the group of four before them, they did not meet much danger along the way.

Those four young men did not leave the slightest trail behind when they kidnapped Zhao Ya and the others, which went to show that they had intentionally destroyed all marks of themselves.

In this ancient domain, however, perhaps because danger was all around, they could not bother about it anymore, or maybe they felt that no one would be able to follow them there—regardless, they had lowered their guard. That being said, their trail was still very faint, to the point of nearly being indiscernible, but fortunately, it was still barely visible through the Eye of Insight.

Those four are indeed powerful... Zhang Xuan thought grimly.

If not for his Eye of Insight improving along with his cultivation, even he would have had trouble making out their nearly indiscernible trail!

To be able to do so without intentional concealment, just how powerful would they really be?

Most likely, even if they were not on Yang shi's level yet, they were not too far from it. If the four of them collaborated with one another, even Yang shi would be no match for them!

With their cultivation and the element of surprise on their side, it was no wonder Zhao Ya and Wei Ruyan had fallen to them.

They are likely notable figures even within the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe! Zhang Xuan thought with narrowed eyes.

While those of the Otherworldly Demon Tribe were born with greater innate strength and longer lifespans than humans, there

was no doubt that only a small handful would be able to reach such a level, which meant that the group of four consisted of the elite of the elites. Otherwise, there was no way mankind would have been able to keep the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe away from the Master Teacher Continent for so many years.

Even if Zhang Xuan's group was able to subdue the four of them, chances were that they would sustain severe damage in the process.

...

“There are signs of battle ahead...”

After proceeding ahead for a moment, the adolescent boy Wu Chen suddenly raised his hand to warn the group before walking over alone.

Zhang Xuan quickly followed behind him, and he swiftly noticed pits of varying sizes and depths all around the area, a sign that an intense battle had just occurred.

“No, something is wrong...” Doubts surfaced in Zhang Xuan's eyes as he analyzed the surroundings. “While these marks appear to originate from a battle, the fact is that they originate from a single source. In other words, it's the doing of an individual—there are no marks around that suggests that he was facing an opponent!”

Through the discerning Eye of Insight, Zhang Xuan could tell that despite the chaotic marks all around, they were all inflicted by the zhenqi of a single person. There was no other person to fight with if a battle had truly happened here!

“Could it be...” Luo Ruoxin's eyebrows shot up. “... a hallucination?”

There could only be one reason for a person to desperately launch attacks one after another in the presence of no opponent at all—he was in a disorientated state, thus compelling him to make such irrational actions.

Such was the case when they entered the Qiu Wu Palace back then. They had immediately been exposed to a demonic tune, which placed them in a poor state of mind. If not for Zhang

Xuan finding the core of the formation and destroying it, the group would have marched on till they finally died of exhaustion.

“That does seem to be the case!” Wu Chen nodded. “Illusory Formations blur the distinction between reality and hallucinations, and that could be extremely dangerous in here. Milady, Zhang shi, please wait here for a moment while I find a way to destroy the formation!”

“Be careful. The fact that this formation was able to trap one of those four shows that it’s of formidable prowess,” Luo Ruoxin warned.

“I understand!” Wu Chen nodded.

Gritting his teeth, he began advancing slowly. However, barely after taking two steps, he suddenly found Zhang Xuan walking right past him before halting at a certain point and stomping his foot forcefully on the ground.

Hu!

The surroundings seemed to waver for a moment, as if something had come undone.

Clapping his hands together, Zhang Xuan turned around and said, “Job’s done. The Illusory Formation has been dispelled!”

Wu Chen felt goosebumps rising all over his body. He hurriedly walked forward and extended his Spiritual Perception to the surroundings before he was able to convince himself that the formation had indeed been deciphered!

“You...” Wu Chen stared at the young man not too far away in frenzy.

It was one thing for the young man to be more formidable than him when it came to spatial manipulation and eye of discernment... but to think that the young man would wield such amazing prowess in formations as well! He had not even located where the formation was when the young man was already done deciphering it... How could that be?

Was there anything that the young man was incapable of?

It was almost as if they had been given the wrong scripts!

He was supposed to be the knowledgeable expert whereas the young man was the countryside bumpkin!

“Milady...” Wu Chen quickly turned to the young lady behind him, wanting to see her reaction to this matter, only to see a faint smile on her face.

It was as if she had known that the young man wielded such capabilities from the very start, and she was not surprised in the least.

Seeing that Luo Ruoxin was not saying anything, he did not feel that it would be appropriate for him to comment on the matter. Thus, despite the strange feeling in his heart, he decided to keep his silence and trudge on ahead.

This time, the group did not walk too long before a river came into sight.

The river water was slightly yellowish and translucent, making it hard to see through it. Looking at it from afar, it did not seem to be flowing either, almost as if it was a still painting.

Wu Chen observed it for a while before flicking his wrist to take out a Saint high-tier artifact to toss into the river.

Tzzzzzzzz!

A trail of smoke rose from the tip of the weapon, and it did not take long for the Saint high-tier artifact to be completely corroded by the river water, leaving nary a trace at all.

Following which, Wu Chen took out a Saint pinnacle artifact and placed it in the river water. In less than ten breaths, a scorched mark had already appeared on the surface.

“This is the Yellow Water of the Netherworld. It’s highly corrosive, capable of devouring a Saint high-tier artifact within moments. Even Saint pinnacle artifacts won’t last too long in it. It’s also extremely harmful to cultivators and their zhenqi. If one falls into the water, their Primordial Spirit will swiftly become corrupted, inflicting irrecoverable damage!” Wu Chen said grimly.

“Yellow Water of the Netherworld?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

He had read many books, but he had never heard of such a liquid before.

“Un. It’s a natural product of the world, and it’s also commonly known as Yellow Springwater. Even Great Sage realm cultivators would not dare come into contact with it easily. From the looks of it, we’ll have to cross this river in order to advance further in the ancient domain. However, the river corrodes the air directly above it as well, so even flying past the river will be extremely dangerous. Unless...” Wu Chen paused for a moment before continuing. “Unless we build a Netherworld’s Bridge!”

“Netherworld’s Bridge?” Zhang Xuan was even more confused.

Was it not a little troublesome to construct a bridge on the spot? How did the group of four ahead of them manage to get past the river then?

“To cross the netherworld without falling into it, the Netherworld’s Bridge is of paramount importance. Most likely, the four of them were able to cross because they were aware of the situation in the ancient domain and made preparations in advance, such as bringing along the Netherworld’s Boat or artifacts of a similar nature,” Wu Chen explained.

“Similar to the Netherworld’s Bridge, the Netherworld’s Boat allows one to traverse through the Yellow Water of the Netherworld freely without falling into it. However, its construction method has long disappeared from the world!”

“Considering how the Yellow Springwater is able to corrode even Saint pinnacle weapons, does that mean that the Netherworld’s Boat is a Great Sage artifact?” Zhang Xuan asked out of curiosity.

In the three days that he had spent traveling to the Luo Clan, he had conversed at length with Sword Saint Xing and Yang shi, and he had learned much about the higher realms.

Saint artifacts were divided into low-tier, middle-tier, high-tier, and pinnacle, and beyond that were Great Sage artifacts!

There was no finer distinction to Great Sage artifacts as most of them had unique properties that would be difficult to classify properly. Nevertheless, depending on how they were forged, there could still be vast differences in their quality.

To date, Zhang Xuan had yet to see any Great Sage artifacts, so he was not in a good position to comment either.

Since the Netherworld's Boat that Wu Chen had mentioned was able to travel through the Yellow Water of the Netherworld safely, could it possibly be a Great Sage artifact?

Otherwise, how could it withstand the corrosion of the Yellow Water?

“You might not believe it when I say this, but it isn't a Great Sage artifact but simply...” Wu Chen shook his head bitterly. “Paper! The Netherworld's Boat is a type of paper boat!”



# 1587 Delicious

“Paper boat?” Zhang Xuan was taken aback. “Even Saint pinnacle artifacts are unable to withstand the corrosion of the Yellow Water of the Netherworld, so how could they travel safely through it in a paper boat?”

The entire matter was simply too unbelievable.

Even Saint 9-dan pinnacle experts would not be able to destroy Saint pinnacle artifacts, and yet, such an artifact could not last long under the corrosion of the Yellow Water either. On the other hand, even ordinary mortals would be able to tear paper apart, so it was ridiculous to think that a paper boat would be able to float one across the river.

“To be honest, I don’t know either. This is beyond my understanding as well. It’s said to be a method that Kong shi came up with back then, but the art has long been lost. It’s unlikely for even the Master Teacher Pavilion to have a record on it!” Wu Chen shook his head.

“Doesn’t that mean that it’ll be impossible for us to cross this river?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

Just by hearing the term, he could already imagine how troublesome it would be to construct the Netherworld’s Bridge. At the same time, he had no idea how to construct the Netherworld’s Boat either, so there was nothing more they could do, right?

Could they only wait there helplessly?

“If it was any other occasion, I would still be able to cross the river without much trouble... but without sufficient power and resources on hand at the moment, I fear that there’s nothing much I can do!” Wu Chen remarked helplessly.

“This...” Zhang Xuan turned his gaze to Luo Ruoxin, only to see the latter shaking her head too.

“I do know of some methods that would allow us to cross the river, but with my current strength, it would be a little difficult

for me to execute them.”

“I see... I’ll try to think of an alternative solution then!” Zhang Xuan said.

Considering that the group of four ahead of them had already crossed the river, if they continued wasting time, it was likely that the Master Amulet would be gone before they could even set their eyes on it.

Thus, after some hesitation, Zhang Xuan walked up to the river and placed his hand into the water.

“Are you insane!” Seeing the young man touching the water directly with his hand, Wu Chen nearly fainted from shock.

Was he tired of living?

Wu Chen was just about to rush over to drag the young man away when he saw a bizarre look surfacing on the young man’s face. After which, the young man scooped a mouthful of water from the river and licked it with his tongue before gulping it down.

A brilliant gleam shone from the young man’s eyes as he exclaimed in agitation, “It’s actually quite delicious! Come, try some!”

“Try some?” Wu Chen nearly fainted on the spot.

As the name suggested, the Yellow Water of the Netherworld would send those who dared touch it into the cycle of reincarnation.

Yet, not only did that fellow touch it, he even drank it...

Did the young man really have to be so tenacious?

“Seriously speaking, aren’t you over exaggerating?” Zhang Xuan said as he took another mouthful, and a feeling of invigoration consumed his body.

It was almost as if he was drinking the nectar of life!

The adolescent boy had described the water to be so treacherous that even Great Sages would avoid it like the plague, but when he touched it, he did not feel any of that at all.

He also activated the Library of Heaven's Path on it, and it was not as frightening as the adolescent boy had described.

Not only was it not dangerous, it was delectable with a nice texture to it! Was this an attempt by the adolescent boy to scare him?

“ ... ”

Seeing how the young man was completely unaffected by the Yellow Springwater, not sustaining the slightest damage even when ingesting it directly, Wu Chen could not help but gape at the young man doubtfully.

Could he have really made a mistake?

As such a thought arose in his mind, he slowly walked over to the river and placed a finger in.

**TZZZZZZZZZZ!**

A heart-wrenching pain assaulted him, and he swiftly retracted his hand like a bolt of lightning. Even so, it was already charred black. Had he been even a split instant later, he might have lost his entire finger!

Clenching his jaws tightly together to bear through the pain, the adolescent boy took another look at the young man, who was splashing the water around merrily as if a little child, and he felt like bursting into tears.

The adolescent boy had absolute confidence in his strength. Even when taking the entire Master Teacher Continent into consideration, he did not think that there would be anyone who was a match for him. Even so, his finger still swiftly corroded upon contact with the water... yet the young man was actually completely fine?

This was illogical!

“No, that's not right... There's something wrong with your physical body and soul!” Wu Chen widened his eyes in a mixture of realization and astonishment.

“There's something wrong with my physical body and soul?” Zhang Xuan stopped his merrymaking and turned a doubtful look toward the adolescent boy.

Even though his body had been tempered by the Heaven's Path Golden Body and was comparable to Saint pinnacle artifacts, it was still nowhere close to that of Great Sage 4-dan Sempiternal realm cultivators. Considering how the adolescent boy would challenge even Yang Shi to a battle, it was likely that he had already reached this level.

To be honest, he was not really able to make sense out of the bizarre turn of events.

"I can sense the presence of lightning within your body and soul. It is the lightning energy that's keeping the corrosion of the Yellow Springwater at bay!" Wu Chen said.

"Lightning?"

"Indeed. The Yellow Water of the Netherworld is hidden deep underground, cold and eerie. On the other hand, lightning is the element of absolute yang, the manifestation of the authority of the heavens. In the face of the heavens, the demons and specters of the netherworld would dare not step out of line," Wu Chen exclaimed in disbelief. "But how can your body and soul harness the Power of Lightning without crumbling?"

While cultivators would have to face the lightning tribulation from the Leaving Aperture realm onward, they could only take a passive role in the process, gritting their teeth and praying for the lightning tribulation to be over as soon as possible.

There were indeed experts in the world who had successfully cultivated lightning attribute cultivation techniques, but even they were unable to infuse lightning into their very body and soul without sustaining permanent damage!

This was especially so for one's soul.

Even after metamorphosing into a Primordial Spirit, it still remained extremely vulnerable to lightning, just like how fire would always remain the nemesis of ice.

The young man before him had not reached Great Sage yet, but his body and soul were charged with the Power of Lightning. It was this Power of Lightning that protected him against the corrosion of the Yellow Springwater!

“I see...” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in realization.

He had spent his last two months absorbing the lightning energy within lightning tribulations in order to achieve breakthroughs, so his body and Primordial Spirit were already suffused with the Power of Lightning. If the Yellow Water of the Netherworld was indeed fearful of the Power of Lightning, it was understandable why he possessed such strong resistance against its corrosion.

“Since lightning energy is able to oppose the corrosion of the Yellow Springwater, won’t we be able to cross the river easily as long as we summon lightning here?” Zhang Xuan’s eyes lit up as an idea crossed his mind.

As long as they could summon something that the Yellow Springwater feared, they would be able to curb it and cross the river with ease!

“Summon lightning?” Hearing those ridiculous words from the young man’s mouth, Wu Chen could not help but shake his head in disapproval. “You are putting it too lightly. Lightning is the authority of the heavens. While it’s possible to summon a lightning tribulation by making a breakthrough, who of us here will be able to make a breakthrough right now? Taking a step back, even if we successfully summon a lightning tribulation here, we will already have our hands full dealing with it, let alone channel its powers to help us cross the river!”

There were times that the young man displayed incredible acuity for things, seeing through the very nature of things without being restrained by prior ideas. However, there were also times where he seemed like a complete amateur, showing an absolute lack of common sense!

Lightning was the retribution that the heavens brought upon cultivators... Just how naive did one have to be to even conjure the notion of using it to cross the river?

Seeing that this was what the adolescent boy was worried about, Zhang Xuan replied with a smirk. “Don’t worry, that isn’t a problem at all...”

With a flick of his wrist, a saint beast flew forth from his storage ring and circled in the sky, emanating a frightening aura.

Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast!

“I have just checked on it, and the water in here should be able to help you achieve a breakthrough. I’ll point out the flaws in your cultivation right now, so use the Yellow Springwater here to stimulate the acupoints that I mention. With that, you should be able to push for a breakthrough to the next realm...” Zhang Xuan looked at the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast flying above him and issued his instructions.

The Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast harnessed the cold attribute of the netherworld, too. Absorbing spiritual energy of a similar attribute to it would help to accelerate its cultivation, and the Yellow Water of the Netherworld happened to be one such source. While the corrosion would also deal significant damage to it, as long as it was utilized carefully, it could potentially achieve unexpected effects.

Perhaps, it might even successfully push for a breakthrough to Great Sage!

# 1588 Offering Pointers to the Lightning Tribulation

“The Great Sage realm is the greatest hurdle for Saint cultivators. It’s like bridging the gap between the earth and the heavens for human cultivators, and even more so for saint beasts. Without a sufficiently pure bloodline, it’s impossible to succeed. Yet, you want it to achieve a breakthrough on the spot and summon a lightning tribulation? You... are you actually serious about this?” Wu Chen was beyond frenzied.

It was as if the lad was jumping from one impossibility to the next!

If it was that easy to make a breakthrough to Great Sage, there would not be so many cultivators who departed the world with regrets due to being unable to take the final step forward.

And the case was much worse for saint beasts. The requirement on their bloodline was extremely strict, so most saint beasts would require further refinement of their bloodline before they could advance their cultivation. However, to use the Yellow Water of the Netherworld to refine its bloodline?

To think that the lad could even think of something as ridiculous as that!

Wu Chen turned to look at Luo Ruoxin, hoping that she would talk the young man out of his futile pursuit. Contrary to his expectations, she simply looked at the situation with a calm smile, not finding the young man’s actions nonsensical at all. In fact, her demeanor seemed to suggest strong confidence in the young man!

Even after he suggested something so ridiculous, Luo Ruoxin still trusted that fellow.

Gritting his teeth furiously, he turned his gaze back to the young man and saw that the latter had already gotten to work. The young man had taken out many swords and placed them

together from end to end, forming a straight line. After which, the young man tied the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast on it with zhenqi treads.

From afar, it really looked like a skewer.

After all was ready, the young man placed his hand into the river and scooped up the water.

Tzzzzzzzz!

The Yellow Water of the Netherworld was sprinkled on the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast, and charred marks of corrosion swiftly appeared on its scales.

“Hai, just what heinous sins did the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast commit in its previous life to become this fellow’s tamed beast? This is not helping it advance its cultivation but kill it...” Wu Chen could not help but shake his head.

The Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast seemed to trust Zhang Xuan deeply, but the price of its trust turned out to be being corroded to death by the Yellow Water of the Netherworld. It sure was unlucky.

Sighing deeply, Wu Chen could not bring himself to watch on any longer. Just as he was about to avert his gaze, perhaps because watching his tamed beast being corroded by the Yellow Springwater was not enough to satisfy his depraved urges, the young man took out another dozen swords and plunged them right into the body of the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast.

However, as soon as the swords were plunged in, the Yellow Springwater began seeping into the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast’s body, and something seemed to have been stimulated. The Saint 9-dan beast began writhing intensely, and a moment later, devastating might suddenly burst forth from its body.

It seemed as if its bloodline had been filtered by the Yellow Springwater in an instant, raising its purity to a new level. Not only so, its body had also been tempered, and in the blink of



an eye, its cultivation was already surging toward the level of the Introspective Convalescence realm.

Hong long long!

A deep rumble echoed as innumerable storm clouds slowly gathered overhead, carrying a might that could tear even space apart.

“He really managed to summon a lightning tribulation...” Wu Chen’s eyes nearly popped out of their sockets, and he tore out clump after clump of his hair.

He had thought that it was utter nonsense, but the young man really had helped the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast achieve a breakthrough and summon the lightning tribulation! To think that there was a breakthrough method that would require one being tied up like a skewer, lubricated, and pierced... His eyes had truly been opened that day!

Then again... what use was summoning the lightning tribulation?

It was not as if they could use it to cross the river!

Wu Chen turned a doubtful gaze over, wanting to see what the young man would do next, only to see the young man directing an amicable smile toward the ominous clouds in the sky. “Little Leilei, you are finally here... Come to your Brother Xuan’s side. I need you to bring us across the river!”

Boom?

The lightning tribulation in the air quivered a little as an aggrieved rumble echoed within it. However, after a moment of hesitation, a surge of lightning still streaked across the air, forming a massive tangible bridge.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Xuan said.

He moved the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast back into his Myriad Anthive Nest to have it slowly comprehend the strength that it had just gained before stepping onto the bridge of lightning, taking huge strides toward the other end of the river.

“There... there’s actually such a method?” Wu Chen was completely stumped.

He had seen cultivators taming beasts, taming weapons, and even taming humans... However, he had never seen anyone taming the lightning tribulation before.

This sight had really overturned what he had deemed to be possible and impossible!

“Let’s go.”

Just as Wu Chen was shocked beyond words, he heard Luo Ruoxin’s voice by the side. Following which, he saw her stepping onto the bridge of lightning as well, slowly making her way over to the opposite end.

“Forget it, there’s no point thinking too much into it at the moment...” Seeing that the two of them were moving far ahead, Wu Chen knew that this was not the time for him to get shocked, so he quickly followed along as well.

Countless volts of blue lightning crackled wildly beneath his feet, but unlike ordinary lightning tribulations, it did not deal the slightest damage to him. Instead, it felt warm and nourishing.

With the presence of the lightning, the Yellow Water of the Netherworld beneath dared not run rampant, so it could only lie there peacefully.

It should have been impossible for them to cross the river without the Netherworld’s Bridge or Netherworld’s Boat, but who would have thought that they would actually be able to pull it off in such an inconceivable manner? He really could not help but wonder if it was all a dream.

He had come into contact with innumerable top-notch master teachers, and many of them were extremely talented individuals. However, none of them would be able to achieve this feat.

In fact, even Kong shi would not have been able to do so!

It did not take long for the trio to reach the opposite shore of the river. After they got down from the bridge of lightning,

Zhang Xuan turned around and smiled. “You should return for now. I’ll look for you the next time I need you! Right, I realized that you made a lot of mistakes when you gathered your lightning energy together earlier, resulting in the rate of gathering being needlessly slow and its final output being diminished. If you have time, feel free to look for me. I’ll give you some pointers to help you improve yourself!”

Boom!

The thunder seemed to rumble with a quaver, seemingly unable to believe what it had just heard.

It was actually... possible for it to improve itself too?

Seemingly seeing through its doubts, Zhang Xuan placed his hands behind his back and nodded. “You have a total of seven flaws. Listen to my words obediently, and I’ll reveal these flaws to you along with the method to correct them slowly over time!”

How embarrassing it was for him to trouble Little Leilei each and every time! Earlier, when the storm clouds began gathering, he had observed the process carefully using the Library of Heaven’s Path and found that there were many flaws in the process. Thus, he could make it up to Little Leilei by offering it some guidance when he was free.

Boom!

Upon hearing those words, the lightning tribulation rumbled excitedly before slowly dissipating before everyone’s eyes.

“It actually heeds your command? Furthermore... you are able to lecture it?” Seeing that the lightning tribulation had really left like an obedient child, Wu Chen clutched his hair in frenzy.

“Un, it’s a good kid!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

“Good kid?” Wu Chen nearly spurted a mouthful of blood.

The lightning tribulation had always been the nemesis of cultivators. Every year, countless cultivators would die in its hands, making it their object of fear. This was the very first

time that he had heard someone describing the lightning tribulation as a ‘good kid’!

If word were to spread, the cultivators of the world would go insane!

If even the lightning tribulation could be obedient, was there anything in the world that could not be obedient?

“If... the lightning tribulation has no flaws and is able to gather even faster, won’t that mean that there will be even more cultivators dying from it?” Wu Chen could not help but voice the question on his mind.

Putting aside how the fellow was able to make the lightning tribulation heed his orders, more importantly, if he was really able to correct its flaws and make it grow stronger, would the lightning tribulations for human cultivators not become harder?

The death toll was already as high as it was. If the lightning tribulation grew any stronger, who would dare cultivate in the future?

“Don’t worry, I’ll teach it ways to exploit the flaws of the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe so that it will only strike down Otherworldly Demons in the future. I’m pretty free at the moment anyway...” Zhang Xuan replied with a shrug.

“You...” Not expecting the young man to be so shameless, Wu Chen felt his hair standing on end. Just as he was about to say something, Luo Ruoxin’s voice suddenly sounded.

“Look!”

Zhang Xuan and Wu Chen quickly turned their heads over, and they swiftly noticed that a palace was floating quietly in the air not too far away.

# 1589 Dimensional Sand

The palace carried an ancient and distant aura to it, as if it had existed for innumerable years. It felt like a construction that had transcended history.

“This was likely left behind by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu. If there’s really a Celestial Amulet of Legacy here, it’s probably inside!” Luo Ruoxin said.

With just a glance, it was apparent that the palace was extraordinary. It was not an infrastructure that ordinary beings were capable of constructing, and the means that were concealed within would strike fear even in the hearts of Great Sages. This did seem like the work of Kong shi’s strongest disciple.

Activating his Eye of Insight, Zhang Xuan quickly scanned the area around the palace, and a moment later, he said grimly, “The trail ends here. Most likely, the four of them have already entered the palace. Let’s quickly enter as well!”

Knowing how important this matter was, the three of them quickly flew for the palace ahead of them.

While the palace might not have appeared to be too far away from them, roughly twenty li at most, they swiftly found that something was amiss. No matter how swiftly they tried to fly toward it, they found that the palace was still the same distance away from them, as if the gap between them and the palace had not reduced at all.

“Have we fallen into another Illusory Formation?” Zhang Xuan asked with an awful expression.

He had met with such a situation back at the Old Sword Maestro’s Sword Lagoon. It was like a supernatural incident. No matter how far he walked, he would end up coming back to the same spot.

Could this be the same situation as well?

“No, that’s not it.” Luo Ruoxin had noticed the problem as well, and a frown formed between her eyebrows. “If I’m not mistaken, it’s likely to be Dimensional Sand!”

“Dimensional Sand?” Zhang Xuan was perplexed.

Even Wu Chen was unable to make sense out of it.

“I read about it in a book of records. Dimensional Sand is the byproduct of a collapsed space, and if the sand is gathered back together, it is possible to recreate a complete space. However, traveling through Dimensional Sand poses a huge challenge,” Luo Ruoxin explained. “To make an analogy, it is similar to rowing a boat against the currents—the faster you row, the greater the counter force will be. As a result, no matter how powerful a cultivator is, they will be forced to stand helplessly before it, unable to advance a step at all.

“In other words, while we might feel as if we are traveling at a normal speed, the flowing space amid the Dimensional Sand is constantly repelling us, causing our movements to be as slow as a snail, thus creating the effect that we aren’t advancing at all!”

“There’s actually such a thing in the world?” Zhang Xuan was astonished.

He had never heard of Dimensional Sand before, but Luo Ruoxin’s explanation made perfect sense to him. In a way, it was similar to running on a treadmill. While one was attempting to run forward, the treadmill would push one backward, thus resulting in zero net progress. No matter how fast one ran, one would be bound to the spot, unable to advance at all.

“If that’s the case, it should be impossible to advance through here. Yet... how did those four manage to get through this obstacle?” Wu Chen frowned in doubt.

In terms of strength, they did not pale to the group of four that had come ahead of them, so why would the four of them be able to advance successfully through the Dimensional Sand while they could not?

“Most likely, they must have used some kind of artifact to seal the movement of the Dimensional Sand. Once the flow of the sand is stopped, it shouldn’t be too difficult to travel past it,” Luo Ruoxin explained.

“Isn’t it possible for us to use spatial wormholes to leap past the Dimensional Sand? This way, we will be able to circumvent it, right?” Zhang Xuan asked.

Previously, Wu Chen had made use of spatial wormholes to cover a distance of several million li in the blink of an eye. Considering how the distance between them and the palace was just twenty li, it should be much easier than before.

“The theory behind traveling through spatial wormholes is somewhat similar to that of Teleportation Formations. You’re not wrong in saying that we would be able to leap past the Dimensional Sand, but the problem is that Dimensional Sand is not stable in the first place. If we attempt to travel across it using a spatial art, I fear that it might create spatial turbulence. While this folded space is unexpectedly stable, I don’t think it would be wise to try its resilience against spatial turbulence,” Luo Ruoxin replied with a deep frown.

Even an Introspective Convalescence realm cultivator would have trouble surviving in spatial turbulence, so attempting to leap over it would be extremely dangerous to Zhang Xuan. Furthermore, it could lead to instability in the folded space that they were in, and that could potentially lead to many undesired outcomes.

“So, is there no way for us to get past it?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

It was impossible to fly over it, and Spatial Leaps were too dangerous to be utilized. The palace was right in front of their eyes! Was there really no way for them to get over there?

“That isn’t necessarily the case. As long as we are able to hold the Dimensional Sand still like they did, we should be able to travel through it easily,” Luo Ruoxin said.

“Hold the Dimensional Sand still?” As Zhang Xuan asked, his gaze instinctively drifted over to Wu Chen.

The adolescent boy's comprehension of space was on par with even the experts of the Luo Clan. Perhaps, he might have a solution to the quandary that they were in.

Sensing Zhang Xuan's gaze on him, Wu Chen shook his head. "If I had the Luo Clan's Dimensional Silencer, I might still be able to pull it off. However, I fear that I won't be able to do so in my current state!"

"Dimensional Silencer?"

"It's a treasure that the founder of the Luo Clan found by chance. It wields the ability to hold space still and calm spatial turbulences. The Dimensional Sand in front of us is difficult to deal with, but with the Dimensional Silencer, we would be able to halt its flow directly!" Wu Chen said with a nod of his head.

"The Dimensional Silencer is so formidable?" Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

He had long heard that the little princess of the Luo Clan, together with her Dimensional Silencer, wielded frightening prowess that would strike fear in the hearts of any cultivator. However, he had not sparred with her before, and deep within his heart, he still regarded her as the innocent and courteous little lass who addressed him as her teacher.

He had never really thought that the Dimensional Silencer would actually be so formidable.

"The Dimensional Silencer is a formidable artifact, and from the feeling I get, Luo Qiqi is still far from unlocking its true prowess," Luo Ruoxin remarked with a nod. "However, there's no point talking about this right now. The Dimensional Silencer isn't here, and even if we were to head out to fetch it right now, we wouldn't make it back in time."

"That's true..." Zhang Xuan nodded helplessly.

As powerful as the Dimensional Silencer was, they did not have it with them at the moment.

Furthermore, after the deep wound that he had dealt to Luo Qiqi's heart, no matter how thick-skinned he was, he could not



possibly bring himself to head to the Luo Clan and borrow their Guardian Artifact!

“Speaking of the Dimensional Silencer, an idea suddenly came into my mind. If we were to... No, that wouldn’t work either. Never mind!” Wu Chen suddenly interjected, but halfway through his words, a bitter smile broke out of his face, and he shook his head.

Zhang Xuan turned his gaze over and asked, “Feel free to voice of any ideas you have in mind. We might be able to build on them to derive a feasible solution.”

“Actually, the Luo Clan and Ancient Sage Qiu Wu’s comprehension of space are derived from the Dimensional Silencer. As such, the Quintessence of their spatial heritage lay in sealing and stabilizing space. If any of us are able to comprehend it, we will be able to halt the flow of the Dimensional Sand and easily fly across it!” Wu Chen said.

“However, Spatial Quintessence is much harder to grasp than other Quintessences. It took me countless years to achieve my current understanding of space, and I had to browse through innumerable ancient texts before I finally succeeded...”

Hearing those words, Zhang Xuan suddenly recalled a matter and asked, “If I divide space by the levels of Compress, Traverse, Control, Creation, and Destruction, which realm would I have to reach in order to comprehend the Spatial Quintessence of the Luo Clan?”

“If you were to divide it by those levels...” Wu Chen pondered for a moment before replying, “You should be able to comprehend the Luo Clan’s Spatial Quintessence by reaching the fourth level, which is the level of Creation!”

“The fourth level?”

Those words made Zhang Xuan’s eyes light up in agitation, and his lips crept up confidently. With a heated look in his eyes, he asked, “You mentioned earlier that you have many ancient books concerning space... Do you, by any chance, have them with you? I would like to browse them!”

# 1590 4-dan Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel

“You want to read right now?” Wu Chen was stunned to hear those words.

He could not figure out what the young man was up to.

Everyone is discussing how to escape from the Dimensional Sand and enter the palace in order to find the Celestial Amulet of Legacy, but at this crucial moment, you are telling us that you want to read books...

Can you propose anything more inappropriate for the situation than that?

“Zhang shi, we are currently in a tough spot. We can’t get to the palace, and there’s no place for us to retreat to either. Why don’t we discuss how we should proceed from here on instead?” Wu Chen advised awkwardly.

To be honest, if not for the fact that Luo Ruoxin liked this fellow, he would have already killed him with one crisp slap!

The least you can do is get your priorities straight, right?

“I said that in order to get us out of this situation,” Zhang Xuan said. “I have seen the Luo Clan using their bloodline ability and their spatial secret arts. As long as you give me the books that you have concerning space, I think I might just be able to derive a similar cultivation technique, comprehend Spatial Quintessence, and resolve the current situation!”

“You want to cultivate right now?” Wu Chen nearly spurted blood.

So, that was what the fellow was thinking of...

He sure knew how to daydream!

Suppressing his overflowing rage, Wu Chen took in a deep breath to calm himself down before saying, “Zhang shi, I know that you are a man of great talent, but spatial laws are

the most difficult set of laws to grasp among the various laws of the world. This is even more so for the Spatial Quintessence of sealing space. Countless geniuses have devoted their lives to exploring this field of study, only to make no progress... I'm afraid that it might be too late for you to start cultivating right now!"

If it was that easy to grasp spatial laws, the Luo Clan would not enjoy such prestige on the Master Teacher Continent!

To only be thinking of studying after you are trapped... Do you think that Spatial Quintessences are like cabbages by the road, ready to be picked whenever you need one?

Just as Wu Chen was about to continue speaking, he suddenly heard Luo Ruoxin's slightly displeased voice sounding by the side.

"Since Zhang Xuan has said so, he must have his considerations in mind. Pass him the books."

"Yes, Milady!"

Since Luo Ruoxin had already spoken, Wu Chen did not dare complain anymore. Thus, with a flick of his wrist, he took out the massive collection of books that he had gathered over the years. Piled on top of one another, they resembled a mini mountain.

As he took out those books, he could not help but grumble in his heart, I really wonder what kind of spell that fellow has cast over Milady for her to trust him so much!

Oblivious to Wu Chen's internal thoughts, Zhang Xuan swiftly scanned through the books and collected them into the Library of Heaven's Path. As he compiled them together with the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel in his head, he casually picked up one of the books from the pile and began flipping through it as a cover.

Unfortunately, the book that he had picked up on a whim only drove Wu Chen's mind into greater turmoil, and he nearly spurted blood.

That was because written on the cover of the book were the words 'Spatial Laws for Dummies'.

To be reading the bare basics of spatial laws right now... I will have already died of old age by the time you comprehend Spatial Quintessence!

But as stifled as Wu Chen was, with Luo Ruoxin backing Zhang Xuan, he had no choice but to suppress his fury.

On the other hand, as he flipped through the Spatial Laws of Dummies, his consciousness was actually already within the Library of Heaven's Path.

Previously, when he compiled the various manuals that Wu Chen had given him with the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, he had already managed to remove quite a number of its flaws. With the hulking number of books that he had right now, he successfully perfected the 4-dan Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, bringing it to the level of Heaven's Path!

“The level of Creation is centered around the concept of creating stable folded space. If one is able to create space, it goes without saying that one will be able to stabilize existing spaces as well...”

Allowing the content of the book to flow through his head, Zhang Xuan slowly closed his eyes.

The five levels of the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel were namely Compress, Traverse, Control, Creation, and Destruction.

His initial thought upon seeing them was that Ancient Sage Qiu Wu had gotten the levels wrong. Typically speaking, one should comprehend the notion of Destruction before comprehending Creation, right?

However, as he began to understand the crux of Creation in the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, he realized that there was not any mistake at all.

The level of Creation did entail the idea of creating new space, but it was limited to creating small folded spaces rather than naturally stable spaces like the Master Teacher Continent. On the other hand, Destruction was at a different level. It was about tearing through space to achieve true freedom.

To put it in simpler terms, a cultivator who had comprehended Destruction would not only be able to traverse freely with their soul, even their body would be able to tread through space freely!

Only upon reaching that realm would one be considered to have reached the pinnacle of space, achieving true freedom and strength.

However, it would be incredibly difficult to reach such a realm. Even Ancient Sage Qiu Wu only had a partial understanding as to what Destruction consisted of when he left the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel behind, having yet to reach the level of Major Accomplishment.

Fortunately, Zhang Xuan did not need to cultivate up to the fifth level. Just the fourth level would suffice to get them out of the current quandary that they were in.

Taking in a deep breath, Zhang Xuan went through the 4-dan Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel once more before starting his cultivation.

Geji! Geji!

The energy in his body began circulating in a unique pathway, and in an instant, his meridians and zhenqi seemed to have disappeared within a sealed space, making it impossible for one to sense them anymore.

“I see!”

Sensing the changes in his body, Zhang Xuan immediately widened his eyes in enlightenment.

While Zhang Xuan had stopped after cultivating the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel up to 3-dan, his understanding of space had still gradually grown deeper and deeper as he raised his cultivation. Of course, the deepening understanding of spatial laws as a result of the advancement of his cultivation was different from what he learned in the Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, but the two branches of knowledge did complement one another.

The epiphany that had struck him induced greater clarity in his consciousness, allowing him to perceive the very foundations

of space.

“Complete spaces are like parts of a honeycomb fitted together, fixed in structure. Even if an object falls on it, there won’t be much of a change to its structure. It’s such a property that allows one to move through space. On the other hand, Dimensional Sand is similar to quicksand in nature. As soon as it encounters any external force, it will swiftly pull the foreign object in, preventing it from advancing any further...”

This deepening in comprehension of the nature of space also allowed Zhang Xuan to see through Dimensional Sand for what it really was.

The reason a space could be stable was because it was built up by countless smaller blocks placed over one another, similar to wooden sheets stacked over one another like a sandwich panel.

Dimensional Sand was essentially bits of space scattered loosely around the place, and traveling across it was like attempting to walk across water—there was simply no solid ground for one to step on.

One had to first stabilize the Dimensional Sand in place first before traversing across it.

While Zhang Xuan was comprehending the 3-dan Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel, Wu Chen was shaking his head grimly. “Milady, it isn’t a solution to wait on like this. Those men have already gotten into the main hall. If they obtain the Master Amulet, there won’t be anything more we can do...”

“Do you have any other idea in mind other than waiting?” Luo Ruoxin glanced at Wu Chen leisurely, showing no anxiety at all.

“If it really comes down to it, why don’t I...” Wu Chen gritted his teeth and suggested.

“No, that will alarm more people and complicate the situation.” Luo Ruoxin shook her head. “Don’t worry and put your trust in Zhang Xuan. Since he says that he has an idea in mind, he’ll surely find a way through.”

“Put my trust in him...” Wu Chen was rendered speechless by Luo Ruoxin’s blind trust. “He has only begun to learn spatial

arts, and the book that he picked up was the most elementary one. Who knows how many years it will take him to comprehend the Spatial Quintessence? By then, it will already be too late...”

Hu!

Before Wu Chen could finish his words, a slight breeze blew across his face.

“A breeze? How could there be a breeze coming from the Dimensional Sand?” Wu Chen widened his eyes in astonishment.

Under normal circumstances, even if one fanned as hard as one could, it would not raise the slightest draft amid the Dimensional Sand... So, how could there suddenly be an air current coming from the Dimensional Sand?

Hong long long!

Before Wu Chen could make sense out of what was happening, he suddenly felt the space around him trembling intensely. Spiritual energy converged furiously toward the young man before him.

The next instant, the young man opened his eyes, and a light smile crept onto his lips.

“Freeze!”

With a resounding bellow, the scattered Dimensional Sand suddenly froze in place.

# 1591 The Excited Deputy Clan Head of the Luo Clan

“T-this...” Wu Chen nearly burst into tears.

It was just a moment ago that he had thought that he would have already withered away like an aged flower by the time the young man comprehended Spatial Quintessence, but before he knew it, the young man was already freezing the Dimensional Sand in place.

Did the young man really have to be so fast?

In this moment, Wu Chen felt a stinging pain on his face. If there was a hole in the ground, he would have dived right in out of embarrassment.

He was an expert! An expert! An expert!

But in less than half a day after coming to know Zhang Shi, he had already been slapped three times in the face, and each time, it left him dizzy with disbelief. He had thought that since the young man was proficient in one field, he was bound to be weaker in another... Yet, as the facts had shown time and time again, the young man was strong in every respect!

It was as if the concept of weakness did not apply to him at all!

Each time he doubted the young man, the situation would turn on him and leave him too embarrassed to meet anyone.

Just that... how did the young man do it?

Did he really just comprehend Spatial Quintessence by reading an elementary book on spatial arts?

Could it be that the key to spatial arts actually lay in the bare foundations? So, all of the secrets were actually contained within that elementary manual?

It seemed like he would really have to study it carefully in the future. Perhaps, he might just be able to comprehend



something from it and improve!

Unaware of the adolescent boy's inner thoughts, Zhang Xuan casually tossed the book in his hand back into the pile before calmly announcing, "I have dealt with the Dimensional Sand. We can move on now."

"Un." Luo Ruoxin nodded with a smile before heading for the palace.

Wu Chen picked up the book that Zhang Xuan had been reading previously and stared at it meaningfully. In the past, he would not even have spared a second glance at a book of this caliber, but in that moment, he could not even bear to grab the book too tightly, fearing that he would make the slightest dent on this unparalleled secret manual and hinder the progression of his fighting prowess.

...

In the Luo Clan, two ordinary disciples were currently walking toward the ancestral hall, where the tablets of Founder Luo Yuntian and countless other predecessors were placed.

These two disciples were on duty, and they had to clean the ancestral hall, offer incense sticks, and conduct the routine rituals to honor the predecessors.

"We have really embarrassed ourselves today! It'll be hard for the Luo Clan to make a comeback after this..." the green-robed disciple walking on the left grumbled with a shake of his head.

"When has our Luo Clan suffered such humiliation since its founding?" the gray-robed disciple on the right replied.

"What's even more infuriating is that our clan head doesn't pay any heed to the matter despite being rejected publicly!" The green-robed disciple sighed in frustration. "If she's unwilling to make a stand, what can the rest of us do?"

The gray-robed disciple harrumphed. "She isn't our clan head yet! The inauguration ceremony hasn't been conducted, remember?"

“It was only put off due to the engagement. If not for the engagement, given her bloodline and control over the Dimension Silencer, she would have already become the clan head ages ago!” the green-robed disciple said.

“But after seeing how she dealt with the humiliation we suffered earlier, I really can’t bear to think what will become of the Luo Clan under her leadership...” The gray-robed disciple sighed.

“Even if the Luo Clan declines under her leadership, there’s nothing we can do about it!” The green-robed disciple sighed. “It’s not as if you are unaware of our clan rules! Only those whose bloodline has reached a certain level of purity can become the clan head, but there’s no one other than her who has reached the mark!

“Unless someone who has comprehended our ancestor’s Spatial Quintessence appears... but in the past tens of thousands of years, no one has been able to achieve that! So, it’s only a matter of time before she becomes the clan head! We can’t possibly go against the teachings of our predecessors over this one single matter!”

“I know that, too, but I really can’t stand... What’s happening?”

Halfway through his words, the gray-robed disciple was suddenly disrupted by intense tremors beneath his feet.

“It’s coming from the ancestral hall. Quick, let’s head over to take a look!”

Sensing that the tremors had originated from the ancestral hall right ahead of them, the face of the green-robed disciple warped in horror as he quickly dashed toward it. The gray-robed disciple swiftly followed suit.

As soon as they entered the room, they were left in a daze by what they were seeing.

The sculptures of their founder, Luo Yuntian, had turned toward the doorway, where they were standing, gazing deeply into the distance. With a slight smile on his lips, he clasped his fist and conducted a ceremonial greeting toward a fellow peer.

At the same time, the many ancestral tablets behind him also seemed to bow down deferentially, as if standing in the face of a superior, not daring to look up at all.

At the same time, the two characters that Founder Luo Yuntian had left behind, 静 (Silence) and 空 (Space), were shaking non-stop, as if they would break out of the wall at any moment.

The tremors that they had experienced outside had originated from those two characters.

“Could it be that... our founder has come back to life?” the green-robed disciple muttered in a daze.

“Founder Luo Yuntian passed on countless years ago, so how could he possibly have come back to life?” The gray-robed disciple was much calmer in the face of this unexpected turn of events, but even so, he was unable to make sense of the situation. “I’m not too sure what’s going on here, but something huge must have happened. We have to inform the deputy clan head, First Elder, and the others right away. They might be able to figure out what has happened!”

“Alright!”

Not daring to waste any time, the green-robed disciple quickly whipped out his Communication Jade Token and relayed the happenings in the ancestral hall to the elders. Soon, a sharp gust of wind sounded from above. The deputy clan head, First Elder Luo Qingchen, Luo Xuanqing, and the others were heading in their direction with anxious looks on their faces.

After the Zhang Clan left the premises, the members of the Luo Clan had loitered around the main hall, unable to come to terms with what had happened. It was just moments ago that they had finished clearing up the mess, but before they could return to their accommodation and rest, they received news that something had happened to the ancestral hall.

Given the importance of the ancestral hall to the Luo Clan, they did not waste a single moment in rushing over here.

“What happened?”

Before the crowd could land on the ground, the deputy clan head, Luo Ganzhen, had already bellowed out to the two below.

“This...” Not knowing how to explain the situation, the gray-robed disciple clasped his fist and said, “Deputy clan head, I think it would be best for you to see for yourself!”

“Un.”

Landing on the ground, Luo Ganzhen quickly walked into the ancestral hall. When he saw the sight within, he was visibly stunned for a moment before his hands began trembling in agitation. A crimson shade dyed his cheeks as he stuttered in excitement, “T-this...”

“Father, what’s going on?” Taking Luo Ganzhen’s expression into sight, Luo Xuanqing frowned in incomprehension.

The other elders were taken aback by the deputy clan head’s bewildering response as well.

Their deputy clan head had always been a calm person. Even during the fallout with the Zhang Clan earlier, he had not lost his cool. Just what in the world could have happened for him to act in such a manner?

“Haha! Hahahaha! The heavens are truly helping our Luo Clan! Our Luo Clan will rise to greatness once more!” Luo Ganzhen roared in laughter before turning to face the crowd with glowing eyes. “Are you all curious what this phenomenon means? This is the Submission of the Predecessors! Without a doubt, someone has managed to comprehend the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing!”

“Someone has comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing? Could it be...” Luo Qingchen widened his eyes in astonishment.

“Indeed! The Spatial Quintessence of Sealing is the very core of our Luo Clan’s cultivation technique. If anyone can grasp it, they will be able to perfectly execute all of the secret arts of our Luo Clan! In the tens of thousands of years since the founding of the Luo Clan, only Founder Luo Yuntian has managed to reach such a realm. The fact that someone else has

managed to do it means that our Luo Clan will rise to greatness once more!” Luo Ganzhen exclaimed in agitation.

He hurriedly issued instructions to the surrounding crowd. “Quick, investigate the matter and find out which elder or offspring has managed to comprehend the Spatial Quintessence. After we find them, we’ll immediately conduct the inauguration ceremony and crown them as our next clan head!”

# 1592 Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy

“Yes!” Upon hearing the commands, the elders quickly nodded before scattering.

Comprehending the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing would mean reaching the very peak of spatial arts. With such an expert among them, there was no one who would be able to stop the Luo Clan's rise to power!

They would also be able to get back at the Zhang Clan for the humiliation that they had suffered as a result of the rejection earlier!

With this, they would let the world know how foolish it was for Zhang Xuan to have rejected the Luo Clan!

“Zhang Xuan, you probably couldn't have imagined that someone in our Luo Clan would make a breakthrough so swiftly after your rejection!” Luo Ganzhen uttered as his eyes turned cold. “Wait till we find this person and establish him as the clan head... I'll surely return this humiliation to you twofold!”

A person who had comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing would have already grasped the very crux of the Luo Clan's heritage. As long as that person's cultivation got up to par, the young prodigy of the Zhang Clan would not mean anything at all!

“Indeed! I won't be able to quench my hatred if I don't slice that b\*stard in two!” Luo Xuanqing spat furiously.

He had thought of the young man as his good friend, but the young man had actually trampled on his younger sister as if she was nothing at all!

Huhu!

It did not take long for the elders who had scattered to return once more.

“Reporting to the deputy clan head, we have checked all of the experts at the Macrocosm Ascendancy realm within the clan, but none of them have comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing!”

“Reporting to the deputy clan head, none of the members at the Dimension Sundering realm have comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing!”

...

The elders swiftly revealed the results of their findings, and disappointed looks surfaced all around the room.

The fact that even the founder had paid his respects was more than enough to show that someone had comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing—there could not possibly be any mistake there. However, they had asked all of the cultivators in the clan, and none of them had noticed any peculiar phenomenon that could have suggested a breakthrough.

This was truly baffling.

“There was nothing? How could there be nothing? Spatial laws have always been incredibly difficult to comprehend, and this is especially so when it comes to sealing space! Without the Luo Clan’s bloodline and heritage, it would be difficult for one to even grasp the bare basics...” Luo Ganzhen could hardly believe the outcome of the investigation.

Even Founder Luo Tianyun had only succeeded in comprehending it due to him acquiring the Dimension Silencer and stumbling upon Ancient Sage Qiu Wu’s heritage by a stroke of luck. If the person who had comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing was not a person from their clan, who else could it be?

“We have even checked on the cultivators who have gone into seclusion... Could that person really not be from the Luo Clan?” Luo Qingchen asked with a deep frown.

If the person was from the Luo Clan, they would surely understand what it meant to comprehend the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing. Even without them looking around

for the person, they would surely appear before the elders of their own accord. However, no one was stepping forth at all.

All of the evidence seemed to suggest that the person was not from the Luo Clan.

“Look into it right now, we have to find that person! Regardless of the means, we have to get them into the Luo Clan, even if it means locking them down by...” Luo Ganzhen’s eyes narrowed. “... marriage!”

“Marriage?” Luo Xuanqing was taken aback.

“That’s right! The fact that that person has comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing means that all of the Luo Clan’s secret arts no longer hold any secret to them. If that person becomes our enemy, the Luo Clan would be doomed! Thus, no matter what condition we have to offer them, we have to get them into our clan. Even if they want to marry your younger sister, we can only allow it!” Luo Ganzhen waved his hand decisively.

“No, but that...” Hearing those words, Luo Xuanqing’s eyes widened in horror.

“This matter is not open for discussion. There’s already no hope between Zhang Xuan and your younger sister, and since that’s the case, we might as well find someone who has comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing. This way, we will be able to get vengeance on the Zhang Clan... We’ll tell the world that our Luo Clan will be able to stand at the very pinnacle without relying on anyone!” Luo Ganzhen spat coldly.

Hearing those words, Luo Xuanqing stared at his father with a complicated look in his eyes.

He did want to get vengeance on Zhang Xuan and the Zhang Clan as well, and he would be able to do so if they could get that person who had comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing on their side. At the same time, the Luo Clan would be able to recover its dignity.

But after what had happened during the wedding... he could not bear to watch his younger sister being sacrificed again.



Once was enough.

“Alright, this matter is settled. Hurry up and dispatch our men to search for that person! Once that person has been found, report to me immediately. I’ll personally pay that person a visit!” Luo Ganzhen flung his sleeves imposingly.

“Yes!”

The elders hurriedly scattered into the area.

...

Without the Dimensional Sand to block their path, the trio was able to advance ahead swiftly.

Soon, they stopped at the entrance of the palace.

Zhang Xuan raised his head and looked beyond the towering stairs in front of him.

On both sides of the entrance gate were two rock sculptures shaped in the fashion of adolescent boys. They were dressed in rather ancient-looking clothes and sported long hair. They were bent into a bow, seemingly paying respects to the visitors of the palace.

There was a plaque above the entrance with three massive words written on it. It carried a sharp aura that felt reminiscent of a spear piercing in one’s direction, threatening to tear intruders into shreds.

It was a rather bizarre pairing—the respectfulness of the bowing adolescent boys and the menacing words on the plaque.

“Ran Zi Hall!” Wu Chen read out loud.

“It seems to have been personally written by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu,” Zhang Xuan remarked with a nod.

Looking at it from the perspective of a painter, those three words could not be considered to be too skillful. Nevertheless, it had a high and lofty conception that even someone of Zhang Xuan’s eye of discernment was not able to see through. It was hard to imagine that it had come from a hand other than that of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu.

Shaking his head, Zhang Xuan bowed deeply to both of the adolescent boys and the plaque at the center.

Attainment, Solidarity, Propriety, Erudition, and Integrity. The fact that Propriety was placed before Erudition and Integrity showed how much Kong shi valued this trait. Since they were in the ancient domain of one of his direct disciples, it was best for them not to forget their etiquette.

Hu!

Right after paying his respects, there was a slight tremor. The adolescent boy sculpture on the left slowly opened his eyes before looking upon them with a smile.

“Guests of the Ran Zi Hall, I applaud you for having come this far. Unfortunately, I have to inform you that you have yet to earn the right to enter the Ran Zi Hall yet. If you wish to enter it, you will have to clear the trial!” the adolescent boy sculpture said.

“May I know what trial it is?” Zhang Xuan asked as he clasped his fist.

“Ancient Sage Ran Qiu has never liked excessive formalities, so the trial that he has set is very simple as well. You’ll have to challenge one of our warriors of strength equaling yours, and if you are able to achieve victory, you will be granted passageway. Otherwise, I’ll have to ask of you to turn around and leave!” the adolescent boy sculpture said as he raised his palm.

Huala!

The three massive words on the plaque abruptly fell onto the ground, and with a slight waver, they warped into three identical-looking golden-armored soldiers.

“This...” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

With his eye of discernment, he could tell that those three soldiers were not any kind of special artifact but true embodiments of the words on the plaque. They carried the same strikingly sharp aura as the words on the plaque, sending shivers down one’s spine.

Noting the look of bewilderment on Zhang Xuan's face, Luo Ruoxin explained, "These are Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy!"

"Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy?" Zhang Xuan asked in confusion.

He had heard of Impartation of Heaven's Will and Heart of Teacher, but he had never heard of Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy before.

"Legend has it that powerful master teachers are able to retain their own spirit and psyche in the form of words. Under specific conditions, these words will transform into Golden Warriors to battle with others," Luo Ruoxin explained. "As these Golden Warriors are the manifestation of the master teacher's spirit and psyche, they possess the master teacher's fighting instinct and moves, thus making them formidable foes."

"Possess the master teacher's fighting instincts and moves... Since these words were left behind by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, doesn't that mean that these Golden Warriors possess his fighting prowess?" Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in shock.

# 1593 Wu Chen's Terrifying Strength

Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was reputed to be Kong shi's strongest direct disciple, so naturally, his strength was not to be underestimated.

If these Golden Warriors really possessed his fighting instincts and moves, it would be nigh impossible for those of the same realm to defeat them!

“Actually, it isn't as exaggerated as that. While the Golden Warriors do possess the battle instincts of the master teacher behind the calligraphy, the circumstances in battle are ever changing. The slightest lapse in response can create the largest difference in the results of the battle. It would be amazing if the Golden Warriors could wield even half of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's true strength,” Luo Ruoxin remarked with a light chuckle.

In the end, even if the calligraphy was infused with Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's will and psyche, it was ultimately just a couple of characters. It was not really as fearsome as it sounded.

“You're right!” Zhang Xuan nodded. “Who should go first?”

“Allow me!” Wu Chen stepped forward and volunteered himself. “Allow me to pave the way forward for Milady and Zhang shi!”

“Un!” Zhang Xuan nodded.

While Wu Chen might have appeared to only be a thirteen to fourteen-year-old adolescent boy on the surface, the strength he had displayed so far was completely unlike what Zhang Xuan had seen before, so he did not think that there was anything to worry about.

Instead, this would be a good chance to see what those Golden Warriors of Mentor's Calligraphy were capable of!

“Let's begin!”

Seeing that someone had stepped out, the adolescent boy sculpture nodded, and the ‘Ran’-word Golden Warrior walked over with widened strides. Its body shuddered a little before its aura began surging right to the level of the Great Sage realm, equivalent to that of Wu Chen.

“Formidable!” Zhang Xuan nodded in awe.

For calligraphy to be able to raise its cultivation and fight like a human... he never would have believed such a thing to be possible if he had not seen it with his own eyes.

It was no wonder the clans would go fight desperately just to obtain a small scroll of Kong shi’s personal writing. It seemed like every single word of an Ancient Sage wielded extraordinary capabilities.

Hula!

After raising its strength to Wu Chen’s level, it whipped out a spear and thrust it toward Wu Chen without any hesitation.

Even while the spear was bolting for Wu Chen’s heart, it tore a rift through space in its path, exhibiting the frightening might infused into this thrust.

“What impressive spearmanship...” Zhang Xuan clenched his fists excitedly.

The skills of a true expert would show even in a simple thrust.

As the one who had imparted his spearmanship to Zheng Yang, it went without saying that Zhang Xuan’s mastery of the spear had reached a truly profound level. Admittedly, the spearmanship of the Golden Warrior was not as simple and effective as his, but it had still managed to capture the crux of spearmanship. Its sharpness was keenly directed to seal its opponent’s movements and will, thus making it extremely difficult to withstand or escape from.

Naturally, Wu Chen also noticed the dangers behind the spear thrust, and he chuckled softly. “Good move!”

That being said, instead of dodging the spear thrust, he raised his finger and directed it right toward the spear tip, seemingly intending to face the Golden Warrior’s attack straight on.

Under normal circumstances, facing a spear with one's finger was a foolproof method to win a date with death, but Wu Chen had channeled a revolving sphere of energy at his finger tip. If the spear tip really came into contact with this sphere, it would swiftly plunge the attack into the midst of a spatial turbulence, thus creating an opportunity for Wu Chen to turn the tables on the Golden Warrior.

Perhaps the Golden Warrior had instinctively sensed danger from Wu Chen's revolving sphere of energy, but without the slightest emotion on its face, it raised its spear abruptly.

This transformation in moves did not have the slightest hint of hesitation or delay in it, as if the earlier thrust was only a feint, and this was the real killer move.

To be able to switch from one move to another so swiftly was definitely not an easy task. Even for Zhang Xuan, it would take quite some effort.

"Truly impressive. Just this transformation grants the attack a third of my strength!" Zhang Xuan could not help but compliment.

With the Library of Heaven's Path and Eye of Insight, he was able to easily see through the flaws of the opponent's moves. As such, if he proclaimed himself the number two in executing offensive transformations, no one would dare declare themselves number one! The fact that the Golden Warriors, who were solely made out of words, could wield a third of his true strength was already quite a terrifying feat.

"Heh!" Taken aback by the transformation in the Golden Warrior's spear art, Wu Chen harrumphed coldly as he bent his finger downward and flicked it.

Weng!

A burst of sword qi surged forth from the tip of his finger and struck the Golden Warrior's spear, inducing a metallic clang. The spear was immediately sent flying from the Golden Warrior's hand.

Deng deng deng deng!

At the same time, the Golden Warrior was forced to retreat four steps before its body abruptly dissolved like flowing water, transforming back into the ‘Ran’-word before flying back into the plaque.

“Incredible!” Zhang Xuan looked at Wu Chen with narrowed eyes.

In terms of individual fighting prowess, this Golden Warrior would be stronger than even Zheng Yang, yet Wu Chen had achieved victory with just two moves, and from the looks of it, the other party had not even gone all out... It seemed like there was more to Wu Chen than he had thought.

Flaws! Zhang Xuan willed.

Previously, he had attempted to use the Library of Heaven’s Path to check Luo Ruoxin, only to end up fainting. After that incident, he did not dare peek at her anymore... However, surely peeking at the information of the adolescent boy who followed her around should be fine.

Once he knew the identity of the adolescent boy, it would not be too difficult for him to figure out Luo Ruoxin’s identity.

Hu!

The Library of Heaven’s Path jolted, but no book was compiled.

What’s going on? Zhang Xuan was astonished.

After battling with the Golden Warrior, Wu Chen was still driving the zhenqi in his body, and such an action could be considered as executing a battle technique. Under normal circumstances, the Library of Heaven’s Path should have compiled a book on him, revealing his history and flaws. Why was nothing happening at all?

This should not be!

Does this mean to say that the adolescent boy possesses the Discarnate Constitution of Divination as well? Zhang Xuan frowned.

There should only be one possibility if the Library of Heaven’s Path was unable to look into a person... and that was if the

other party was an existence unseen by the heavens, a host of the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, just like himself!

There were many experts and geniuses on the Master Teacher Continent, but to this very day, there were only three people known to possess such a constitution. The first one was him, the second one was Luo Qiqi, and while the last one still remained a mystery... the chances were that the mysterious lady that Elder Feng had mentioned back then was Luo Ruoxin.

The fact that seers were unable to peer into this girlfriend of his and the Library of Heaven's Path was unable to read her proved this fact.

It was one thing for Luo Ruoxin to have the Discarnate Constitution of Divination, but to think that it would be the same for the adolescent boy... This was too fearsome!

When did such a constitution become so cheap and commonplace?

It's really about time for me to raise the level of the Library of Heaven's Path... Maybe I should find some time to pay a visit to the Shrine of Seers... Zhang Xuan stroked his lower jaw and pondered.

He had been raising his cultivation, but he had not really upgraded his Library of Heaven's Path over time.

While the Library of Heaven's Path was still plenty formidable without being upgraded, it was a little unnerving that there were some things that he could not see through. Perhaps this problem could be resolved after it was upgraded.

To date, he still had not fully figured out how upgrading the Library of Heaven's Path worked. The first time that it happened, he had been with Luo Ruoxin and passed out for three days straight. The second time, it had been right after he punished the Shrine of Seers.

He could not hope to emulate what had happened with Luo Ruoxin that day since he had no idea how that had happened either, but as for punishing the Shrine of Seers... that was a



walk in the park! He could easily find the major Shrines of Seers over the continent and pay them a visit!

Of course, that was something to be thought about afterward. For the time being, he had to resolve the current situation first.

Raising his head, he saw Luo Ruoxin staring at him with a complicated look in her eyes. Words seemed to be at the tip of her tongue, but she chose not to speak in the end. Turning around, she looked at the two remaining Golden Warriors and said, "I'll deal with the second one."

# 1594 Challenging Two Words

“Let me do it instead!” Zhang Xuan replied awkwardly.

He had been so focused on observing Wu Chen that he had forgotten about this matter. How could he allow his girlfriend to fight while he watched on from the side?

He was not intending to return to singlehood just yet!

“It doesn’t matter who goes first,” the adolescent boy sculpture replied nonchalantly as he waved his hand.

The ‘Zi’-word morphed into a Golden Warrior too and stepped forward.

“It does matter. You have three words over there to deal with the three of us... but if I am able to defeat the rest of your Golden Warriors single handedly, does that mean that she won’t have to make a move? Zhang Xuan asked calmly.

“You wish to face two words single handedly?” the adolescent boy sculpture was stunned. “Are you certain?”

“Of course!” Zhang Xuan replied with an affirmative nod.

He had been paying close attention to the battle between Wu Chen and the first Golden Warrior, and the latter’s prowess was only so-so, far from reaching a level that would worry him. It would not be too difficult for him to achieve victory.

Since that was the case, there was no need to trouble Luo Ruoxin.

Hearing Zhang Xuan’s words, Luo Ruoxin frowned. “Zhang Xuan, the Golden Warriors of the Mentor’s Calligraphy grow stronger with each passing word...”

“It’s fine. It’s just two words. I’ll be able to deal with them!” Zhang Xuan replied.

“... Very well then. Be careful.” Seeing how confident Zhang Xuan was, Luo Ruoxin sighed deeply and nodded.

“Let’s begin!”

Zhang Xuan chuckled as he walked up to the two Golden Warriors. He raised his palm, and a formidable aura surged into the clouds, creating an imposing sight.

I guess he does have some valiance to him after all... Wu Chen thought.

All along, he could not figure out why someone as formidable as Luo Ruoxin would actually fancy this ordinary young man. However, watching as the young man bucked up his courage and challenged two words simultaneously for the woman that he loved, he felt like he could understand Luo Ruoxin's feelings a little.

Despite the young man's boastfulness and showy character, it seemed like he was still rather reliable at crucial moments!

Hula!

At the same time, the two Golden Warriors also swiftly raised their cultivation up to the level of Saint 9-dan pinnacle, and without any hesitation, they charged forward and flanked Zhang Xuan from both sides. The moves that they executed differed from one another, but the timing and coordination of their moves were impeccable, almost as if they were a single entity. Their attacks were sharply directed to strike at Zhang Xuan's flaws and blind spots, making it difficult for him to dodge.

“Not bad!”

Through their outstanding coordination, the prowess that they exerted was many times more fearsome than that of the ‘Ran’-word character. Despite that, Zhang Xuan did not show the slightest hint of panic. With a faint smile, he tapped his finger forward.

“Seal!”

Hula!

The light breeze that had been blowing their way abruptly vanished without a trace. The surrounding space had been entirely sealed. As if fish frozen in ice, the two Golden Warriors found themselves unable to advance even a single step further.

If there had been anything falling at that moment, it would have frozen in midair as well.

After comprehending the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing, while Zhang Xuan might still have difficulties sealing the movements of Great Sage realm experts, he definitely did not have a problem with subduing those in the same cultivation realm as him.

It could be said that with this ability, no one in the same cultivation realm as him would stand a chance at defeating him! He was invincible in his power class!

Of course, that was unless the other party had comprehend the same Spatial Quintessence as well or something on par with it, such as the Zhang Clan's Time Quintessence...

“Scatter!”

After freezing the two Golden Warriors in place, Zhang Xuan raised his finger with the intention to dissipate the two of them when the adolescent boy sculpture suddenly exclaimed at this point in time, “Ancient Sage Qiu Wu's Spatial Quintessence of Sealing? You are the successor of Qiu Wu Zi? Please have mercy on the Golden Warriors!”

“Oh?” Not expecting the sculpture to be able to see through the root of his technique, Zhang Xuan turned his gaze over curiously.

Huala!

In the moment that Zhang Xuan's mind laxed, the sealed space around the two Golden Warriors loosened, and the light breeze continued whistling once more. At the same time, the frozen attacks of the two Golden Warriors continued bolting forth toward him.

“Heh!”

In the face of the two attacks, Zhang Xuan simply smirked triumphantly. Without making a move at all, the attacks from the two Golden Warriors abruptly curved in unnatural angles, causing them to slide past him.

“This is... Spatial Interference?” Wu Chen widened his eyes in shock.

This was the move that he had used to deal with the Demon Subduing Sphere of the Luo Clan elders—Spatial Interference!

To put it simply, Zhang Xuan had distorted the space around him to tilt in an upward trajectory instead, such that an attack that was headed straight for him would be deflected away.

At the Great Sage realm, it was extremely easy for Wu Chen to pull off this move, but for a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator... such a feat could only be described as impossible!

Yet, the fellow before him did it easily, and it was at a level far beyond him...

In his long life, he had seen his fair share of experts executing Spatial Interference, and he had also read plenty of books depicting how it should be executed and the anticipated outcome. However, compared to the Spatial Interference executed by the young man before him, all of that was no different from toddlers waddling around before a running adult!

They were not even close to being at the same level!

To be able to pull off such strength within ten minutes after comprehending a Spatial Quintessence, surpassing even those experts who had devoted their lives to studying the art... just what was going on?

It seemed like Wu Chen's doubts were shared by the adolescent boy sculpture as well. With a deep frown on his forehead, he asked in incomprehension, “Qiu Wu Zi's Spatial Quintessence is formidable, but not even the person in question would be able to pull off Spatial Interference as smoothly as you did!”

Ancient Sage Qiu Wu was reputed to be one of the few grandmasters of spatial arts, but even he had not reached this level of expertise!

“Oh. I found some flaws in Ancient Sage Qiu Wu's spatial heritage, so I altered it a little!” Zhang Xuan replied leisurely.

The Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel could probably be considered the pinnacle of the Master Teacher Continent's spatial arts, but when reflected under the Library of Heaven's Path, there was still a hulking number of flaws with it. What Zhang Xuan had cultivated was the perfected manual, a Heaven's Path technique, so it went without saying that the prowess would be on a completely different level!

Ancient Sage Qiu Wu's version might still have required the cultivator to gather energy, thus resulting in some time delay, but the one that Zhang Xuan had perfected through the Library of Heaven's Path had no such need!

“A-a-altered?”

Before the adolescent boy sculpture could say a word, Wu Chen had already shrieked in disbelief as he nearly keeled over.

He had witnessed the young man comprehending the Spatial Quintessence through browsing his books, and he had thought that it was already a formidable feat that the young man was able to grasp the spatial laws within it so quickly. Yet, who could have thought that within this short period of time, the young man had leisurely been picking bones with the current system of spatial arts and correcting its flaws...

And more importantly, his corrections were all spot-on, thus bringing the prowess of the spatial art to a whole new level.

How in the world could the heavens give birth to such a monster? This was unfair and inhumane!

Or... could that elementary spatial art manual really be that formidable, granting someone the ability to alter even Ancient Sage Qiu Wu's ultimate technique right after browsing through it?

If that was the case, he would really have to study it carefully once he got back so that he would one day possess the same mastery over spatial arts as Zhang Xuan!

“You corrected it?”

The adolescent boy sculpture also found it hard to believe Zhang Xuan's words, but he decided to attribute Zhang Xuan's

success to the support of his seniors and chose not to ask any more about it. Thus, he got back to the topic at hand and said, “Since you have attained Qiu Wu Zi’s heritage and cleared the test, you are more than qualified to enter the Ran Zi Hall. Please!”

As adolescent boy sculpture spoke, he bowed deeply before walking toward the Ran Zi Hall to lead the way in.

Jiyaya!

The tightly-shut doors to the Ran Zi Hall slowly creaked open, and the scent of ancient history burst forth from within. For those who are curious, Zi is an honorary suffix used to address distinguished or virtuous men. Qiu Wu (Zi) and Ran (Zi) are such examples. The same applies for Kong shi as well, who is commonly addressed as Kong (Zi).

# 1595 The Stone Doors

“Let’s go!” Seeing that the sculpture had entered, Zhang Xuan and the others quickly made their way into the Ran Zi Hall as well.

The passageway had many brilliant Night Illumination Pearls embedded in the ceiling, lighting up the entire place. As such, despite the closed space that they were in, the surroundings were as bright as day.

There were ancient inscriptions carved along the passageway that detailed desirable values that a person should cultivate and the etiquette one should preferably adhere to.

“Didn’t you say that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu is not one to care too much about formalities? Why would...” Zhang Xuan could not help but ask the adolescent boy sculpture.

Earlier, the adolescent boy sculpture had said that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was a person who paid little attention to formalities, so it seemed highly contradictory to see inscriptions of values and etiquette in the passageway of the Ran Zi Hall.

“It’s precisely because he paid little attention to it that he was criticized by Kong shi over it. Thus, he carved these inscriptions to remind himself to adhere by these values and etiquette at all time!” the adolescent boy sculpture replied.

Kong shi had once said that one should seek to reflect and learn from one’s actions, and as one of Kong shi’s direct disciples, Ancient Sage Ran Qiu was bound to adhere by his teachings.

Zhang Xuan hesitated for a moment before asking with a hushed voice, “Did the four people who came prior to us cleared the trial as well?”

So far, they had not seen any traces of the four Otherworldly Demons who had come ahead of him. Could they possibly have failed the test?



Of course, it was not to say that the four Otherworldly Demons who had come before them were weak, but surely the ancient domain left behind by the number one student of Kong shi should at least have the capability to discern between Otherworldly Demons and humans?

Otherwise, what a huge disgrace it would be!

“They have cleared the trial and entered the compounds,” the adolescent boy sculpture replied politely.

After learning that Zhang Xuan had inherited Ancient Sage Qiu Wu’s heritage, the attitude of the adolescent boy had become much more courteous.

“They cleared the trial, too? Then, did you notice... any anomaly with them?” Zhang Xuan frowned.

“Anomaly?” The adolescent boy sculpture shook his head in response. “There’s nothing of that sort. They have defeated the Golden Warriors of Mentor’s Calligraphy and cleared the trial fair and square. However, one of them did have one of Ancient Sage Yan Yan’s treasures with him.”

“Ancient Sage Yan Yan’s treasure?” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in astonishment.

Ancient Sage Yan Yan was one of the Ten Apostles under Kong shi’s lineage, too. Viewed to be of equal standing with Ancient Sage Bo Shang, Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, and the others, he had specialized in the field of music. He had played a huge part in passing down the heritage of the Demonic Tunist Guild, and for that reason, most demonic tunists viewed him as their founder.

But to think that those four Otherworldly Demons would actually have one of his possessions.

To be able to arrive on the Master Teacher Continent while avoiding the detection of the master teachers, find ancient domains that even the Master Teacher Pavilion is unaware of, and even be in possession of one of Ancient Sage Yan Yan’s treasures... it seems like the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe has really prepared! Zhang Xuan thought grimly.

The war between the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe and mankind had caused immense damage to both parties over the years. Mankind had lost a lot of its treasures to the Otherworldly Demonic Tribe, so it was not unthinkable for them to be in possession of one of Ancient Sage Yan Yan's treasures.

However, Zhang Xuan was a little surprised by how well-prepared they were. It was definitely no easy feat for one to fool the eyes of the adolescent boy sculpture.

The reason Zhang Xuan had asked that question was to warn the adolescent boy sculpture. If those four fellows had shown the slightest lapse in their disguise, the adolescent boy sculpture would surely have raised his guard against them.

However, from the looks of it, there was no point bringing up the matter anymore since he had no evidence against those four fellows. It would be one thing if he failed to convince the adolescent boy sculpture of the matter, but it would be a catastrophe if he accidentally turned the adolescent boy sculpture against him in the midst of doing so.

Without a doubt, they must have prepared for this matter for a very long time. It was no wonder they had been able to capture Zhao Ya and the others so easily. Indeed, it would not be easy to deal with those four after all.

“We have arrived.”

In the midst of his thoughts, Zhang Xuan suddenly heard a voice from the side. Raising his head, he found that they had already arrived in an atrium.

The atrium was round in shape, and there were doors all around. With just a quick glance, he could already spot nearly a hundred of them.

“There are ninety-nine doors here, and each of them represents a different trial. Each of you can only enter one of the doors, and no two persons can select the same door to enter. If you successfully clear the trial and reach the very end, you will be able to find what you seek.” The adolescent boy sculpture turned around and addressed them. “If you fail to clear the

trial, you will have to spend the rest of your life here with me till your time is finally up!”

“This...” Zhang Xuan looked at the doors around him as he confirmed once more. “So, we can choose any door that we like here?”

“That’s right, feel free to enter any door you want. You only have an incense’s time, so make your decision quick!”

After saying those words, the adolescent boy sculpture took two steps back and stood quietly.

Knowing that it would be futile to ask the adolescent boy sculpture for any hints, Zhang Xuan, Luo Ruoxin, and Wu Chen exchanged glances as they began examining each of the doors carefully.

All of the doors were made of granite and were identical in appearance. There was nothing that allowed them to set any of the doors apart from one another. If not for the doorway that they had entered the atrium from, had they closed their eyes and spun around, it would have been impossible to tell which doors they had set their eyes upon previously.

“This is no different from a labyrinth...” Looking at the doors around left Zhang Xuan feeling a little light-headed. Unable to make sense of the situation, he willed in his heart, Eye of Insight!

Hula!

Lines of insight surfaced in Zhang Xuan’s eyes, and he quickly scanned his surroundings carefully.

Since the four Otherworldly Demons had entered the palace before them, they would have come to this atrium and made a decision as well.

The fact that they had come well-prepared for this ancient domain, bringing with them the Netherworld’s Boat and even a treasure of Ancient Sage Yan Yan, would suggest that they had prior knowledge of this place. So, it should be much safer to follow their footsteps.

With a swift scan of the surroundings, a deep frown formed in between Zhang Xuan's brows. Hmm? Why aren't there any marks around?

He had thought that he would be able to find some clues, just as he had done outside. However, who could have thought that those four fellows did not leave any clues behind, such that even the Eye of Insight was unable to catch the slightest trace of them?

Seeing through Zhang Xuan's thoughts, Luo Ruoxin sent a telepathic message over. "Don't bother. Since this is a trial, there's no way it would allow you to see through anything. Furthermore, the stone sculpture has also said that no two people can enter the same door, which means that even if you find the doors that they've entered, we won't be able to enter them."

"This..." Zhang Xuan was rendered speechless.

Indeed.

Since this was a test, there was no way that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu would have left such an obvious loophole. After all, after someone had entered one of the doors and triggered all of its traps and formations, there would no longer be any danger in it.

"What do we do now?" Zhang Xuan asked.

"Let's leave it to fate and pick a random one," Luo Ruoxin said as she randomly picked a door and pulled it open without any hesitation.

"You... Be careful!" Seeing that Luo Ruoxin was going to enter the door just like that, Zhang Xuan could not help but feel a little apprehensive on the inside.

"Rest assured!" Luo Ruoxin replied with a faint but confident smile. "Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's trial is unlikely to be easy, but to keep me here is not an easy feat either!"

After saying those words, she decisively entered the door.

"That's true..."

Zhang Xuan had never seen Luo Ruoxin making a move before, but considering how powerful Wu Chen was, it stood to reason that Luo Ruoxin was a formidable expert as well.

The trial left behind by Ancient Sage Ran Qiu might still pose a great challenge to ordinary geniuses, but to her, it was unlikely to pose any threat at all.

“I’ll be entering as well!” Seeing that Luo Ruoxin had already entered one of the doors, Wu Chen also randomly picked a room and strode in.

“You’re the only one who is left...” the adolescent boy sculpture remarked calmly by the side.

“Un.” Zhang Xuan nodded. He was just about to select a random room too when his heart suddenly skipped a beat. The Eye of Insight might be unable to see through what lies beyond the door, but what about the Library of Heaven’s Path? In order to make contextual sense, I had to take the literal meaning of the word, which is music. However, the more accurate interpretation would be ‘the impartation of ritual propriety through music’. Basically, you can think of it as spreading culture, values, and thoughts in the form of poems, folksongs, and so on. This happens to be what Yan Yan, a real historical figure, is credited for as well.

# 1596 My Hands Itch to Draw

With different encounters behind each of the ninety-nine doors, the danger levels were bound to be different too. Without a doubt, there would be a huge difference between selecting a right door and selecting a wrong door.

Otherwise, the adolescent boy sculpture would not have given them a whole incense's time to make their choice.

Considering that this was a trial left behind by an Ancient Sage, due to the limitation of his cultivation, it was understandable why the Eye of Insight did not work. However, what about the Library of Heaven's Path?

It boasted the ability to see through everything beneath the heavens.

Since that was the case, what better tool could there be than to have it make a choice in his stead? It should be easy for it to discern which ones were the right ones and which ones were the wrong ones!

Having made up his mind, Zhang Xuan immediately got to action.

He flicked his wrist, took out a white sheet of paper and a brush, and began drawing.

As an 8-star painter, the speed and quality of his drawing had already reached a superb level. In less than three minutes, he had already replicated a lifelike view of the entire atrium.

After that was done, he swiftly wrote the words 'Correct' on each and every door.

Given how many doors there were here, there was bound to be one that was more correct than the others. The Library of Heaven's Path was able to analyze the flaws and mistakes of objects, so by looking at the flaws, he would be able to determine which door he ought to enter.

While Zhang Xuan was busy doing all of this, the adolescent boy sculpture looked on with a completely bewildered expression.

He had thought that the young man would simply select a door and enter, but who could have thought that he would suddenly take out a brush and paper and begin drawing and writing?

All you have to do is choose one of the doors! Surely you don't have to go through so much trouble just to choose one, right?

Do you have difficulties making choices or something?

"Time's almost up. If you don't enter soon, your qualification to challenge the trial will be revoked," the adolescent boy sculpture warned.

"Noted. I'll make my choice soon..." Zhang Xuan replied as he finished scribbling 'Correct' on the final door.

Once that was done, he placed his finger on the painting.

Hu!

An identical painting appeared in his mind.

Soon, upon finding the correct door to enter, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Opening his eyes, Zhang Xuan said with a smile, "Alright, I have made my choice..."

Seeing the confused look on the adolescent boy sculpture's face, he explained with a light chuckle, "Actually, I'm also an avid painter. Whenever I see interesting scenes, I have an urge to draw them... This bad habit of mine kicked up earlier when I saw this splendid atrium, so I ask for your understanding!"

"Interesting scenes? Splendid atrium?" The adolescent boy sculpture was rendered speechless.

All that's in this atrium are granite doors... If even such a sight is interesting to you, your right hand must be really busy!

"Well, I don't blame you for not understanding. You are just a stone sculpture, so it's understandable that you don't share the aesthetics of us humans!" Zhang Xuan laughed heartily a little

as he patted the shoulder of the adolescent boy sculpture sympathetically before heading toward one of the doors.

“You...” Realizing that he had just been mocked, the adolescent boy sculpture bared his teeth furiously.

Ancient Sage Qiu Wu had been an upright and austere person, so how in the world did he end up taking in such an infuriating little brat as his student?

A person as troublesome as you is doomed to be single for life! To think that you can be so indecisive about choosing a door... Huh? Wait a moment!

Looking at the direction that the young man was heading in, the adolescent boy sculpture suddenly widened his eyes in astonishment.

Jiya!

He stared with his mouth agape as the young man opened the door and disappeared into it.

He actually chose that door? But that is... How did he know? The adolescent boy sculpture blinked in disbelief.

Of the ninety-nine doors, the chances of that young man choosing that door randomly was simply too slim, so he did not think that the young man would be able to select that one. Who would have thought that he would be so lucky as to choose that door out of so many choices?

It was almost as if lady luck was shining on him!

Soon, the adolescent boy sculpture recovered from his shock and harrumphed coldly. Even if his luck is good, he'll need some strength to match his luck. That fellow in the door is far more violent and merciless than I am! Even if he has chosen the correct door, he could very well lose his life in there!

...

Jiya!

As the granite door closed, Zhang Xuan found himself standing within a passageway. He took a few more steps forward, intending to scan his surroundings so as to see what



was around, but before he could do anything, an overwhelming pressure suddenly pressed down on him, causing his body to stagger a little.

This pressure seemed to seep right into his soul, carrying a force that threatened to crush him into bits the moment that he let his guard down.

It's a soul attack... Zhang Xuan's face darkened.

He had undergone plenty of soul attacks in the past, but this was the first time that he had encountered one as forceful as this. It seemed to pierce right through his physical body, leaving him feeling as if he was standing in the midst of a turbulent ocean, powerless against the overwhelming force before him.

Heaven's Path Soul Art!

Knowing that it would be bad if he allowed such an attack to continue getting to him, Zhang Xuan took a deep breath and began driving his soul energy furiously to fend off the attack.

While his soul was only at Saint 9-dan pinnacle, it had undergone the tempering of lightning, making it far larger and more resilient than other souls. As such, even though the soul attack was formidable, he was still able to just about withstand it.

Heaving a sigh of relief, he quickly advanced forward.

He wanted to see just what kind of existence could execute such a powerful soul attack.

Geji! Geji!

However, the further he advanced, the stronger the pressure on his soul became.

After taking roughly a dozen steps, he was forced to come to a halt.

In the end, it seemed like his cultivation was still too low for this trial. At this point, his body and soul were already at their breaking point.

It seems like I have already reached my limit... Should I activate Kong Shi's blood droplet then? Zhang Xuan pondered grimly.

With the enhanced power from Kong Shi's blood droplet, there was no doubt that he would be able to fend off the soul attack with ease. However, the problem was that there were only three droplets in total, and he had already consumed one. He would definitely need one when he encountered the Otherworldly Demons who had kidnapped Zhao Ya and the others, so he was a little hesitant about using one right now.

After all, it was his strongest trump card. He could not afford to squander it away so easily!

The first time that I encountered the lightning tribulation, I was also helpless before it. I thought that I would be electrocuted to death... but afterward, I found that I was able to absorb its energy! While this pressure is hard to bear, I could use it as a medium to temper my soul and make it even purer. Perhaps, this might just become the impetus for me to master Soul Traverse!

The last time that Zhang Xuan met Lu Chong, the latter had already imparted the secret art of Soul Traverse to him. He had attempted to learn it, but due to several flaws in the secret art, he had ended up losing his motivation. Furthermore, his soul had also been a little lacking then... However, with such heavy pressure pressing down on him, it was a good opportunity for him to try tempering his soul!

Perhaps, he might just find unexpected rewards.

Alright, let's begin... Zhang Xuan thought as he went through the secret manual of Soul Traverse in his mind.

As Zhang Xuan went through the secret manual of Soul Traverse, a thought arose in his mind.

Soul Traverse is achieved by slipping one's soul in between the building blocks of space, thus allowing one to transcend the limitations of space... Previously, it was due to my lack of understanding of what the 'building blocks of space' truly meant that I felt that it was plagued with flaws. However, now

that my Heavenly Art of Dimension Unravel has reached 4-dan, will I be able to perfect Soul Traverse by compiling the two together?

As much as Soul Traverse was a soul secret art, it could also be said to be an ingenious manipulation of the properties of space.

Considering the books relating to space that he had recently collected, if he compiled them together with Soul Traverse, would he just be able to complement the flaws in them?

Compile!

Getting right into action, Zhang Xuan combined the Soul Traverse manual with the other spatial secret art manuals, and before long, a new book materialized into existence.

# 1597 The Power of the Zhang Clan Bloodline

Zhang Xuan hurriedly grabbed the compiled book and flipped it open.

The content swiftly flowed into his head and imprinted into his mind.

It has indeed reached the level of Heaven's Path! Hahahaha! Zhang Xuan nearly leaped up from joy.

He had wanted to practice Soul Traverse for a very long time now, and he had been searching for books relating to souls in order to perfect the technique. However, who would have thought that what he was lacking was not soul-related manuals but space-related manuals!

I'll temper my soul first before cultivating Soul Traverse! Zhang Xuan decided.

Thus, he crossed his leg and sat down. With a thought, he drew his soul out from his glabella.

Tzzzzzzzzzz!

Without the protection of the physical body, the pressure that pressed down on Zhang Xuan's soul immediately intensified. In an instant, he felt as if he was standing amid a raging hurricane that was trying to tear him apart.

Heavy like a boulder, firm like a mountain!

Knowing that if he would lose his life if he could not withstand this ordeal, Zhang Xuan focused on the imagery of a massive mountain, the White Creek Mountain.

There was a type of soul training that was known as conceptualization training. Through focusing one's thoughts on a single conceptualization, it would help to refine one's soul energy in the form of the conceptualization. For example, if one thought of flames, one's soul energy could become

scorching like the raging inferno, and if one thought of ice, one's soul energy would become chilling like the heartless winter.

Zhang Xuan had done conceptualization training back when he had just started cultivating, but with the Heaven's Path Soul Art to raise his soul cultivation, he had found that there was not much need for him to do it, so he had not paid much attention to it. However, in this very moment, he knew that he had to do it or risk having his soul torn into shreds.

Weng!

Focusing on the conceptualization of a mountain, Zhang Xuan's wavering soul swiftly stabilized in place. As if an imposing mountain towering in the midst of a storm, no matter how the gale huffed and puffed, it remained completely unfazed, unable to be blown down.

After stabilizing his figure, Zhang Xuan took a deep breath and drew the crushing pressure into his soul, tempering the weaker parts of his soul.

Geji! Geji!

Under the tempering of the crushing pressure, his massive soul grew more and more concentrated and powerful.

The pressure isn't as unbearable anymore. Advance!

A few minutes later, when Zhang Xuan had finally adapted to the pressure, he took a few steps forward before sitting down to continue the tempering process.

...

In the atrium, the motionless adolescent boy sculpture opened his eyes once more.

“Let's see how that fellow is faring! Even if that fellow inside doesn't make a move, just the pressure that it exerts should be able to stop that young man in his tracks or even crush his soul entirely!”

Muttering beneath his breath, the adolescent boy sculpture raised his finger and tapped the space before him.

A screen of light appeared in the air, and a display of Zhang Xuan's plight within the door came into appearance.

"Heh, the young man should have... Ah? W-what's going on?"

The adolescent boy sculpture was still uttering smug words when he noticed that something was amiss with the displayed scene before him. His eyes swiftly widened to the brim, seemingly ready to pop out from their sockets.

In the screen of light, the young man had his hands on his hips, and he howled indignantly with an infuriated look on his face. "Where the hell is the pressure? You coward, I dare you to come out and face me straight on! I haven't absorbed enough of it yet! If that's all you've got, how dare you call yourself a trial? If you don't come out now, don't blame me if I tear this entire place down!"

"He's actually provoking the it?" The adolescent boy sculpture nearly blacked out.

He had thought that with that person making a move, just the aura that the fellow emanated would be enough to crush the young man. Who would have thought that not only would the young man be perfectly fine, he was even mocking it for being too weak!

Just where did this monster come from?

This was too ridiculous!

"Forget it. Since there isn't any pressure anymore, I'll just head in..." After hurling provocations one after another without the pressure returning, Zhang Xuan could only shake his head in resignation.

To be honest, it was not that he wanted to brag but the pressure had simply disappeared too abruptly.

He had just barely gotten into the mood of training, and the results had just started showing on his soul when the pressure suddenly vanished without a trace. Anyone would have been infuriated in such a situation!

After all, if he could just cultivate a little more, there was a good chance that he would reach the prerequisites to carrying out Soul Traverse, thus raising his fighting prowess by a notch!

Let's see where the source of the pressure comes from first. I might just be able to do something about it... Zhang Xuan thought as he advanced forward.

Hula!

Barely after taking a few steps, as he was turning a corner, he suddenly felt a chilling sensation consuming his body. Following which, he sensed a powerful might rushing in his direction.

He quickly pressed himself tightly against the wall by the side.

Pu!

A small hole appeared in the wall of the passageway.

“What the...” Zhang Xuan's eyebrows shot up in alarm.

What had just shot over was not a hidden weapon, sword qi, or anything of the sort. It was an ordinary droplet of water!

Just a droplet of water had succeeded in breaching his defenses and piercing the wall of the passageway. Without a doubt, the person who had made a move on him had to be at the Great Sage realm at the very minimum!

I'll wait and see who the person is before deciding whether I should use Kong shi's blood droplet or not.

Placing his finger right above the droplet mark in his hand, ready to come into contact with it and activate the power at any moment, Zhang Xuan hesitated for a moment before taking another step forward warily.

He only had two more uses of Kong shi's blood droplets, so he could not afford to waste it.

Huala!

Barely after walking around the bend, he saw dozens of water droplets of varying sizes flying over rapidly, sealing all his paths of escape.

These water droplets were not really infused with tremendously powerful zhenqi, but the speed of their movements was simply frightening. Given his current cultivation, if they got a clean strike on him, he would definitely sustain severe wounds or even lose his life!

“Bloodline activate!” Knowing that there was no time for him to escape, Zhang Xuan immediately activated the Zhang Clan bloodline, which Sword Saint Xing had given him previously.

Hu!

In an instant, time seemed to have slowed down. The water droplets that had been surging in his direction furiously a moment ago seemed to have become mired in a swamp, such that he could perceive them clearly even with his plain eyes.

He raised his finger and tapped the closest water droplet to him lightly.

Po!

The water droplet immediately scattered apart, moistening his finger.

He moved on to tap the remaining dozens of water droplets, and they scattered into the surroundings, too.

Knowing that he was finally out of danger, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief as he nodded in awe.

As expected of the Zhang Clan bloodline! Its prowess was even more fearsome than the Luo Clan bloodline, displaying astounding might upon activation.

If he had not utilized this ability, there was no doubt that he would have sustained severe injuries from the barrage of water droplets. However, through the acceleration of his time, the water droplets were slowed to the speed of a snail’s crawl, thus posing no threat toward him anymore.

Unfortunately, the rate of depletion of the blood essence is simply too great...

As excited as Zhang Xuan was, he could not help but shake his head helplessly after seeing the amount of power that he had left from the droplet of Zhang Clan blood essence.



Just to pop a couple of water droplets, he had actually expended more than half of a droplet of Zhang Clan blood essence... In other words, he could only repeat what he had done six more times before completely depleting the Zhang Clan blood essence that he had.

This was simply too wasteful!

Hu!

With another thought, he returned from his state of time acceleration, and the scenery before him reverted to its original state.

It was then that he realized that he was standing in the midst of a vast hall.

At the very center of the hall was a lake of a radius of several hundred meters. The water in the lake were bubbling furiously, as if it was being boiled.

Just as Zhang Xuan was perplexed as to how the lake could conjure such swift bullets of water, he heard an intense rumbling from beneath the water. Following which, a bizarre entity spurted forth from the lake of water, surging upward.

Huala!

More water droplets whizzed into the surroundings.

# 1598 Dragonbone Divine Spear

Wuu wuu wuu!

Carrying the might to pierce through the air, the water droplets tore through everything that stood in their path.

Even the water droplets that it flicked out so casually wield such formidable might! Zhang Xuan narrowed his eyes in astonishment.

He was still wondering how the water droplets had come about, and the answer had surpassed his wildest imagination!

If even the water droplets flung out by a casual flick from the fellow in the lake harnessed such might, just how powerful would that fellow be? Would Yang shi even be a match for it?

“Bloodline activation!”

Knowing that it was no time for him to be dozing off, he quickly burned the remaining half a droplet of Zhang Clan blood essence, and the time around him slowed once again.

I have to get rid of the problem from its roots, or else it'll just be a matter of time before I lose my life! Zhang Xuan thought as he swiftly traversed past the water droplets toward the edge of the lake.

Huala!

Right after doing so, the half a droplet of blood essence also burned dry, and the water droplets ended up striking the wall all around.

Pah pah!

Zhang Xuan raised his head to take a look at what was ahead of him.

The fellow that had risen from the lake was a massive skeleton. From its head to its tail, it was dozens of meters tall.

Every single one of its translucent bone glistened with jadeite, and even though it was impossible to tell just how tough it was, just the fact that a casual flick of its body was able to fling out water droplets that wielded the strength to kill Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivators was more than enough to instill fear.

Upon catching the true appearance of the skeleton, Zhang Xuan jolted in shock.

This is... the skeletal frame of a dragon?

Having tamed the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast, he had some understanding of the physical structure of such lifeforms. He could tell that the skeletal frame before him had a much more natural and harmonious structure compared to the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast, making it highly likely that it was the skeletal frame of a dragon.

Even if it was not a Pureblooded Dragon, it was bound to possess a far purer Dragon Bloodline than the Netherworld Azure Dragon Beast.

Seeing that the young man had successfully dodged its water droplets, the skeletal dragon glanced down at the young man as its deafening voice boomed in the air. "You wield the ability to control time? No, your power seems to be dependent on a bloodline... Who are you? Which Sage's descendant are you?"

"I am Zhang Xuan!"

Noting that the skeletal dragon had no intention of attacking him for the time being, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief as he clasped his fist and bowed toward the massive fellow before him while discreetly examining it.

The skeletal dragon had a dark exterior, and the voice seemed to have originated from the dragon's head. Its eyes were basically two holes imbued with faint green light. If not for the fact that it had spoken, it would be difficult for one to imagine that the skeletal dragon was a living being with independent consciousness.

"Zhang? You aren't a disciple of Kong shi?" the skeletal dragon asked.

"I'm not!" Zhang Xuan shook his head.

It was only after the Hundred Schools of Philosophers left the Master Teacher Continent that the Zhang Clan rose to power. As such, the founder of the Zhang Clan was indeed not a successor of Kong shi's heritage.

"To be able to comprehend the laws of time, which only Kong shi is able to utilize, despite not being one of Kong shi's disciples, it seems like the later generations are filled with plenty of talents!" The skeletal dragon nodded slightly.

"I'll give you some credit for being able to withstand my pressure and dodge my water droplets, but that is far from sufficient. If you wish to win my acknowledgement, you'll have to defeat me!"

"Win your acknowledgement?" Zhang Xuan asked in confusion.

"Indeed. This passageway contains the greatest treasure of the ninety-nine doors, but it's also the most dangerous of them. The one who wins my acknowledgement will be able to take me away, and those who fail my trial shall have their lives reaped by me!" the skeletal dragon said impassively.

"You said that... the one who wins your acknowledgement will be able to take you away?" Zhang Xuan's eyes lit up in excitement at that notion.

Even the droplets casually flung out the skeletal dragon wielded the strength to slaughter Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivators with ease! That prowess was definitely nowhere beneath Yang shi's. If he could take this skeletal dragon away with him, his overall prowess would surely rise by leaps and bounds!

"Indeed. However, if you wish to earn my acknowledgement, you'll have to first display prowess surpassing mine! Back then, Ancient Sage Ran Qiu also used his strength to convince me to serve him for life. I have already slept here for tens of thousands of years, awaiting another worthy individual to serve!" the skeletal dragon replied.

"Ancient Sage Ran Qiu... You are Ancient Sage Ran Qiu's weapon? Could you be... the Dragonbone Divine Spear?"

Zhang Xuan suddenly thought of something, and his body shuddered in astonishment.

He had read some books concerning Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, so he knew bits and pieces of his history. The Dragonbone Divine Spear was the weapon that Ancient Sage Ran Qiu had wielded as he slew hordes of Otherworldly Demons as if a mortal manifestation of the God of War. Even Kong shi had once praised the formidability of the Dragonbone Divine Spear...

Could this skeletal dragon really be that legendary weapon?

If that was the case, he really had made the right choice choosing this passageway!

“Indeed!” the skeletal dragon replied nonchalantly. “Ancient Sage Ran Qiu has sealed my powers, such that my fighting prowess is only at the level of Great Sage at the moment. Nevertheless, as long as you are able to defeat me, I’ll willingly leave with you. Otherwise... no matter who you are and what background you come from, I’ll pierce a gaping hole through you for your arrogance of daring to challenge me!”

“Of course, of course! It’s only right that you should do so, just that...” Zhang Xuan raised his head to look at the skeletal dragon earnestly. “As you can see, I’m only a Saint 9-dan pinnacle cultivator myself. Even if you can only tap into the strength of a Great Sage at the moment, I’m still no match for you... Won’t you consider suppressing your cultivation to my level before fighting it out?”

“You want me to suppress my cultivation to match your level?” the skeletal dragon asked with a hint of displeasure in its voice.

“Having been sealed here for a long time, I believe that you are craving to dive into the world and clash with some worthy opponents. Right now, I’m the only one who has chosen this passageway, and if no one else comes by after me, doesn’t that mean that you’ll never be able to get out? That would be the greatest tragedy for a top-notch weapon like you, wouldn’t it!” Zhang Xuan exclaimed passionately.

“Since it’s a duel, it will only be meaningful if the both of us are on equal standing, right? Otherwise, what fun will it be if you win in a single move?”

The skeletal dragon hesitated upon hearing those words.

“It’s settled then! You are the trump card of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, so your fighting prowess is bound to be at the very top! There’s no way a weak cultivator like me will be able to pose a threat to you even if you do suppress your cultivation down to my level!” Zhang Xuan remarked admiringly. “But if you aren’t feeling too confident... I guess it can’t be helped then!”

“Humph! There’s no way I would lose to you with my cultivation suppressed!” Provoked by Zhang Xuan’s words, the skeletal dragon harrumphed coldly. “Fine, I’ll suppress my cultivation down to Saint 9-dan pinnacle!”

In truth, the skeletal dragon knew that Zhang Xuan was intentionally provoking it, but its pride still got in its way. More importantly, it did not think that it could possibly lose to Zhang Xuan.

Boom!

The next moment, the Dragonbone Divine Spear’s powerful aura gradually reduced to a level equivalent to Zhang Xuan’s, Saint 9-dan pinnacle.

“Humph, let’s begin then...”

After sealing its cultivation, the skeletal dragon was just about to make its move when the vision before it abruptly blurred. Unknowingly, the young man who had been standing right there a moment ago was already standing before it, sending a punch right toward its dragon head.

“You...”

Caught off guard by the other party’s swift movement and abrupt assault, the skeletal dragon felt a little stifled inside. It swiftly whipped its tail to strike down the young man, but the next instant, it found that the space around it had been completely sealed. As if a frozen river, it was unable to move at all.

“Ancient Sage Qiu Wu’s Spatial Sealing Art?” the skeletal dragon exclaimed in shock.

The next instant, a splitting pain ripped through its skull—the young man’s fist had already landed squarely on its head.

Peng peng peng peng!

Punches and kicks rained down on the skeletal dragon, sending stabbing pain reverberating through its body. It was almost like being battered by the ceaseless rapids of a river, completely messing up its momentum, not giving it the opportunity to recover at all.

Under the relentless attack, not only were the skeletal dragon’s bones slowly accumulating damage, its soul was also severely jolted.

The skeletal dragon was frenzied. How is he so powerful?

# 1599 Acknowledge Your New Master

Even though the skeletal dragon had lowered its cultivation, there was no doubt that it was the absolute pinnacle among Saint 9-dan pinnacle entities.

Putting aside the fact that its body had already been tempered to a level exceeding Great Sage realm cultivators, just its battle instincts alone had been refined over the many years of battle with Ancient Sage Ran Qiu. It had encountered all kinds of cultivators and many different ultimate techniques, but this... what the heck was this?

Seemingly devoid of skills, the young man simply rushed in to rain down a barrage of attacks on it as if some street hoodlum.

And what was even more stifling was that it was actually unable to dodge at all!

This had to be the greatest humiliation that it had ever faced since its birth!

“Roar!”

As the fists and kicks continued raining down on its head, the skeletal dragon finally reached the limits of its patience. With a furious roar, it compressed its body tightly together.

Hula!

The entire body of massive bones swiftly converged together to form a black spear.

“Break!”

With a powerful pierce, as if a block of ice struck by a hammer, the sealed space shattered instantaneously with a resounding reverberation.

Deng deng deng deng!



Due to the feedback, Zhang Xuan was forced to retreat several steps as his chest ached a little under the impact of the previous encounter.

The ability to seal space was indeed powerful, but in the face of a true expert, its effectiveness was discounted.

While the force that the Dragonbone Divine Spear exerted was still within the range of Saint 9-dan pinnacle, it was able to gather all of its might in a single point to conduct a burst attack that exceeded the limits of the sealed space.

Of course, this also had something to do with the fact that he had just comprehended the Spatial Quintessence of Sealing. If he spent more time comprehending it so as to advance his level of mastery of spatial arts, he would be able to use it more smoothly, and it would not have been so easy for the Dragonbone Divine Spear to break it.

“How dare you humiliate me? I’ll make you pay the price for your actions!”

After breaking the sealed space and achieving freedom once more, the skeletal dragon howled furiously. From its spear form, it reverted back to the appearance of a skeletal dragon as it dashed forth with its mouth wide open.

Sou!

Barely after arriving before the young man, another blur flashed across its eyes, and the young man vanished from sight. It hurriedly searched the surroundings for the young man, only to see a leg flying toward its face.

Peng peng peng peng!

Four consecutive kicks threw the skeletal dragon into a state of disorientation, and its skull was nearly lopped off its neck.

“Screw you...” the skeletal dragon bellowed hysterically.

Since it’s a duel, surely we can have a fair fight, right? Why do you have to keep aiming for my face? Are you sure that you are a master teacher?

Don’t you know that the face is out of bounds?

Huala!

Seething with fury, the skeletal dragon whipped its thick tail toward the young man in the air, wanting to crush him to bits. However, barely after raising its tail, it suddenly felt a tension stopping the movement of its tail.

Unknowingly, the young man was already beneath him, grabbing its tail bone.

Bam bam bam bam!

With overwhelming might, the young man slammed it from left to right as if a whip, causing its head to crash relentlessly with the ground, creating huge pits here and there.

...

“The skeletal dragon... is being pummeled?”

The adolescent boy sculpture watching the happenings through a screen of light shuddered in horror at that sight. It was simply too shocking that his head even fell to the ground and rolled to the side.

He swiftly picked it up and secured it on his neck before turning his gaze back to the screen. The more he watched it, the more horrified he seemed to become.

Even though the skeletal dragon had suppressed its cultivation down to Saint 9-dan, it should still have been the absolute pinnacle existence among Saint 9-dan entities! Yet, the young man was actually able to render it completely helpless, almost as if an adult toying with a child.

Do you really have to be this savage?

If not for the skeletal dragon tempering its bones to the level of near invulnerability, this vicious pummeling would have already reduced it to powdery remains.

The adolescent boy sculpture had considered most possibilities, including one where the young man was completely destroyed by the skeletal dragon, but not even in his wildest imagination did he fathom such an outcome.

How could he have?

That was the personal weapon of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, the Dragonbone Divine Spear!

...

“Damn it! Damn it! Damn it! I’ll kill you!”

Slammed to the point where its head was spinning endlessly, the skeletal dragon could not stand it any longer and released the seal on its cultivation. Its powers immediately pierced the heavens, and in the blink of an eye, its cultivation had risen from Saint 9-dan to Great Sage 1-dan Introspective Convalescence realm!

With the huge boost in its prowess, the skeletal dragon successfully struggled free from Zhang Xuan’s grip, and it twisted its body forcefully and tore its claw down upon Zhang Xuan!

Hu!

But with a burst of wind, the young man vanished from the skeletal dragon’s vision once more. The next instant, he appeared right above the skeletal dragon’s head as he sent a powerful kick toward its temple.

“...” The skeletal dragon’s frenzy had already transcended words.

It was one thing for it not to be a match for the young man in the same realm, but it had already raised its cultivation by one realm, and the young man was still able to dodge its attack with ease! Just how powerful was the young man?

Not even the powerful Ancient Sage Ran Qiu possessed such fighting prowess! In a battle in the same cultivation realm, it was likely that even Ancient Sage Ran Qiu would not be a match for the young man!

The skeletal dragon hurriedly cowered back to dodge the attack.

While its agility and reaction speed had been enhanced significantly after raising its cultivation up to the Introspective Convalescence realm, it was still nowhere near enough to compete with the young man’s speed.

If the young man executed that time bloodline ability once more, it could still have accepted its loss. After all, there were no moves that could possibly outdo time.

But... the young man was only relying on some unique movement arts and his understanding of spatial laws to render him powerless.

Honestly, the skeletal dragon was still trying to figure out how this had happened!

It was as if the other party knew where it would attack in advance, easily finding the blind spots and flaws in its attacks!

The more the skeletal dragon fought, the more stifled it felt.

Peng peng peng peng!

After suffering yet another four-kick chain combo, its rage finally exploded, and its cultivation surged forth once more.

Despite wielding such strength, the young man had actually duped it into lowering its cultivation! Without a doubt, it was a vicious scheme, and against schemers, there was no need for it to uphold its principles!

Thus, it decided not to suppress its cultivation anymore, and in the blink of an eye, its cultivation broke through the bottleneck of Introspective Convalescence... Aureate Body, Intuitive Impulse, Sempiternal...

In less than a single breath, it had returned to the overwhelming expert from before.

“Lad, didn’t you have a lot of fun pummeling me? Very well, let me see how you’ll cope with this!” the skeletal dragon roared furiously.

But even so, the young man still vanished from its sights once more. Hurriedly raising its head, it saw that the young man was already sitting on a stone bench not too far away from the lake, holding a cup of tea in his hand like a refined gentleman.

“Hmm?” Hearing the skeletal dragon’s roar, Zhang Xuan put down his teacup calmly and replied, “Don’t you think it’s really barbarous to be talking about pummeling and killing? Since you are Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s personal weapon, you

should understand the propriety of respect and magnanimity. Since you have already lost, you should obediently acknowledge me as your master!”

“You want me to acknowledge me as your master? An insolent brat like you actually dares to...”

If its emotions could be materialized, the skeletal dragon would have burst into flames there and then!

You were the one who was viciously pummeling earlier, but now that I have restored my cultivation, you suddenly said that you don’t want to fight anymore... How can there be something so convenient in the world?

Dream on!

If I don’t leave several holes in you and reduce you to a pile of meat, I shan’t be known as the Dragonbone Divine Spear anymore!

“Are you sure you don’t want to acknowledge me as your master?” the young man asked calmly.

“Hah! If you want me to acknowledge you as my master, why don’t you try defeating me right here and...” the skeletal dragon sneered furiously.

But before it could finish its words, a loud rumble echoed in its head.

“Moo! Mou!”

Padah!

All of a sudden, the skeletal dragon felt its body stiffening in place. It felt as if a superior being was exerting dominance over it, suppressing it very down to the core. Unable to move at all, it plummeted from the sky.

“It’s out of respect for you that I allowed you to clash with me, but you seem to be climbing over my head!”

Harrumphing coldly, Zhang Xuan composedly rose to his feet and placed his hands behind his back. “Acknowledge me as your master right now or face the consequences of your insolence!”

# 1600 Golden Origin Spirit Stone

Regardless of whether the huge fellow carried the Dragon Bloodline or was a pile of dragon bones, since there was a 'Dragon' in its name and it had not reached the level of a Pureblooded Dragon, it would be suppressed by the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon.

Even before the battle, Zhang Xuan had known this, but being the low profile person that he was, he had intended to use his raw strength to win the Dragonbone Divine Spear over. However, who would have thought that the other party would be so shameless as to raise its strength after seeing that it was on the losing end?

I could still turn a blind eye to you raising your cultivation by a realm, but raising it by several at once, that would really be going too far.

Even someone as magnanimous like me can't turn a blind eye of it!

Thus, he had mercilessly used the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon... and of course, as expected, the Dragonbone Divine Spear was immediately suppressed.

Lying on the ground, the skeletal dragon asked through chattering molars, "Y-you... are a Pureblooded Dragon?"

Suppressed by the power of the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon, it felt as if its consciousness was on the verge of slipping away from it.

It was not the primary consciousness of the dragon bone but a weapon spirit that had grown after the dragon bone had been forged into a spear. As such, it had retained the traits of the Dragon Tribe, and the instinctive deference and fear toward Pureblooded Dragons was ground in its bones.

Pureblooded Dragons were existences that represented the pinnacle of the Dragon Tribe's authority, and no lower dragons could ever buck up the courage to oppose them!

“Must I be a Pureblooded Dragon in order to use the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon?” Zhang Xuan sneered coldly.

“This...”

The skeletal dragon was rendered speechless.

Having fought alongside Ancient Sage Ran Qiu, it had met the strongest being of the Master Teacher Continent, Kong shi, before, but not even Kong shi had the ability to vocalize the Eight Notes of Heavenly Dragon... Yet, the young man before it was actually able to do so.

Just who in the world was the young man before it?

The skeletal dragon hesitated for a moment before eventually lowering its head. “I-I’m willing to acknowledge you as my master!”

The hierarchy within the Dragon Tribe was based on their bloodline. It was natural for those of a lesser bloodline to serve those of a higher bloodline. On top of that, it was a fact that the young man had defeated it, so there was no shame in its actions.

“Good!” Zhang Xuan nodded. Just as it was about to ask how the acknowledgement ceremony would go, the skeletal dragon suddenly began contracting rapidly, and just like before, it turned into a massive spear.

Weng!

It circled in the air for a bit as it shrank to the length of roughly a zhang before falling into Zhang Xuan's hand.

Lowering his head to take a closer look, Zhang Xuan assessed his winnings. The spear in his hand was black in color, and a cold glint reflected off its tip. Just the sight of the spear left one with the sensation that the spear would pierce a hole through one the next moment, sending shivers down the spines of the weaker-minded.

“Excellent spear!” Zhang Xuan exclaimed in agitation.

Just by stroking the spear lightly, he could hear the roar of a dragon echoing around him. When he attempted to infuse his zhenqi into the spear, he delightedly realized that there were no obstructions at all, as if the spear was just an extension of his meridians. It was actually capable of harnessing his power with full efficiency!

Padah!

A droplet of his blood fell on the spear tip, and it was swiftly absorbed in. In the blink of an eye, a brilliant surge of light burst forth from the spear, and slight cracks appeared in the space all around.

“With this powerful weapon, my fighting prowess would be heightened by at least twofold!” Zhang Xuan trembled in agitation.

There was no doubt that this Dragonbone Divine Spear was the most powerful artifact that he had acquired ever since he arrived on the Master Teacher Continent. While Ancient Sage Ran Qiu might have sealed its power, the might that it wielded was still beyond formidable!

Of course, due to the limitations of his current cultivation, it was inevitable that he would still be unable to bring out the true prowess of the spear. Nevertheless, once he triggered Kong shi’s blood droplet, with this spear in hand, there would be absolutely no one beneath Ancient Sage who would be a match for him!

In fact, even Half-Ancient Sages would be well within his means to deal with!

It’s no wonder the Library of Heaven’s Path guided me to this passageway! With this alone, the long journey here won’t have been in vain!

Laughing heartily, Zhang Xuan flicked his wrist, and the spear warped back into a skeletal dragon.

With a thought, the skeletal dragon turned into a belt that wrapped around his waist.

After taming the spear, he found that the skeletal dragon had the ability to freely change its form. As a spear, it could pierce



through anything that stood in its way. As a whip, it could leave deep gashes on the world.

After that was done, Zhang Xuan heaved a sigh of relief as he scanned his surroundings once more.

At this point, the lake had already quietened down, returning back to its initial tranquility. In the empty-looking hall, there were no visible exits.

“Have I... cleared the trial yet?” Zhang Xuan asked the skeletal dragon in confusion.

“Of course, you have already cleared the trial! I’d send you out right now, but... there are some of my possessions over here that I hope to take away with me!” the skeletal dragon said.

“I see... Alright then!” Zhang Xuan said. “Go and take them then!”

The skeletal dragon swiftly flew out from Zhang Xuan’s waist and rose into the air, reverting back to the massive several-dozen-meter-long dragon. It descended to the top of the water and swiped its claws into the lake.

Hula!

The lake immediately billowed furiously under the overwhelming might, and a circular platform slowly rose into the air. It was roughly three meters in diameter, but it emanated a shockingly concentrated spiritual energy that felt nourishing like the warm breeze of spring.

“This is... the ultimate treasure of smithing, the Golden Origin Spirit Stone?” Zhang Xuan widened his eyes in disbelief.

Despite being a failure of a blacksmith who could only forge bricks, his comprehension of smithing and ores was at least up to standard. Or to be more exact, even 9-star blacksmiths might not be able to compete with him in terms of sheer knowledge!

Even with a glance from afar, he could tell that the circular platform was the ultimate treasure that the top blacksmiths

dreamt of even with their eyes wide open—the Golden Origin Spirit Stone!

In the forging of an average Saint high-tier artifact, just adding a single gram of the Golden Origin Spirit Stone into the forging process would be enough to enhance the artifact into a Saint pinnacle artifact... and there was actually a huge circular platform of it right in front of him!

Just how many tons would that weigh?

Even someone as calm as Zhang Xuan could not help but feel his face flushing red in agitation, and uncontrollable desire sprouted in the depths of his heart.

It could be said that just this circular platform, in terms of value, would not pale in comparison to a pinnacle Great Sage artifact!

“Indeed, this is the Golden Origin Spirit Stone! Back then, when Ancient Sage Ran Qiu sealed me here, he instructed me to wait for the next destined person to appear and win my acknowledgement... However, I have waited here for so long that I have already lost track of time! Ultimately, as a weapon spirit, my lifespan is still limited. Knowing this, Ancient Sage Ran Qiu placed this artifact into the lake. As long as I rest above it, my strength wouldn’t dissipate, and my lifespan can be significantly lengthened!” the skeletal dragon explained.

“I see!” Zhang Xuan nodded in realization.

This was also a question that he had been wondering about. Even if the Dragonbone Divine Spear had been one of the strongest weapons tens of thousands of years ago, after the passing of so many years, its weapon spirit should have already aged to the point where battling would be impossible for it. Fortunately, it seemed like Ancient Sage Ran Qiu had already predicted this problem and made preparations in advance!

With the Golden Origin Spirit Stone to sustain the Dragonbone Divine Spear, the vitality of its weapon spirit could be sustained. Even after hibernating for tens of thousands of

years, it was still able to exert its greatest fighting prowess without any problem!

“However, since I have already awakened, this Golden Origin Spirit Stone is of no use to me. Thus, I’m willing to offer it to you, Master!” With a wave of its claw, the Golden Origin Spirit Stone flew toward Zhang Xuan.

Zhang Xuan hurriedly caught it and stowed it into his storage ring. “Hahaha, I won’t turn down your gift then!”

Seeing the possessions and magnanimity of Sword Saint Xing had made him acutely aware of how shallow his view of ‘valuable’ was compared to others. While this Golden Origin Spirit Stone might be an invaluable treasure to him, it likely meant nothing to an expert of Ancient Sage Ran Qiu’s caliber.

Since the skeletal dragon was willing to offer it to him, he had no reason to turn it down.

Furthermore, it just so happened that the Golden Origin Spirit Stone was an ideal resource to reforge the Golden Origin Cauldron. With this, he would be able to upgrade the Golden Origin Cauldron once more, and it would be able to aid him in his future battles!

“Master, we can leave right now!”

After handing the Golden Origin Spirit Stone over, the skeletal dragon warped back into a belt and wrapped itself around Zhang Xuan. Raising his head, Zhang Xuan found that there was an identical stone door to the one that he had entered through not too far away.

He quickly walked over to it and pushed it open.

Jiya!

When the stone door opened, he found that he had returned to the atrium, where two groups of people were standing against one another. Their zhenqi crackled in the air, hinting at an impending battle. 1 zhang  $\approx$  33.3cm